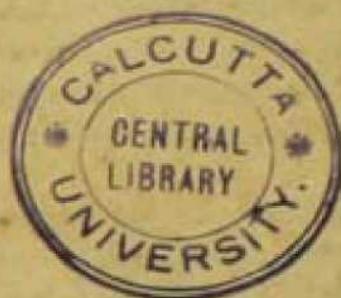




# A SINO-ENGLISH READER

080C.0  
274/12



BY

NAGENDRANARAYAN CHAUDHURI, M.A., Ph.D.



UNIVERSITY OF CALCUTTA  
1958

Rs. 20.00



BCU 1702

205172

C

PRINTED IN INDIA

PRINTED BY N. A. ELLIS, BAPTIST MISSION PRESS, 41A, LOWER  
CIRCULAR ROAD, CALCUTTA AND PUBLISHED BY SIBENDRANATH  
KANJILAL, SUPERINTENDENT, CALCUTTA  
UNIVERSITY PRESS, 48 HAZRA ROAD,  
BALLYGUNGE, CALCUTTA.



## PREFACE

This book in its present form is the outcome of an earlier attempt made by the author during his stay at Santiniketan where he was entrusted with the additional work of teaching Chinese to the students of Vidyabhavan, Visvabharati, by Gurudeva, Rabindranath Tagore, in the absence of Prof. Tan Yun Shan who taught the author Chinese. It was suggested by the poet himself that the most commonly used words and expressions with their equivalents in modern Chinese should be taught to the beginners and according to his most kind and valuable suggestions the first attempt was made by the author. Owing to some unforeseen circumstances it did not see the light and remained peacefully for a pretty long period of time on the author's book-shelf.

For some reasons the author had to leave Santiniketan and had to come down to Calcutta. It was in the year 1947 that the author was offered a Chinese Cultural Scholarship by the then Chinese Government through the University of Calcutta for continuing his research work in Chinese under the able guidance of Prof. Tan Yun Shan, Director, Cheenabhavan, Santiniketan, Visvabharati. At that time Dr. Pramathanath Banerjee, M.A., B.L., LL.D., D.Litt., Vidyavachaspati, Barrister-at-Law, the then Vice-Chancellor of the Calcutta University, took a very keen interest in the author's research work. Very often he enquired about the progress of the work and encouraged the author whenever he met the Vice-Chancellor. His encouragement gave an impetus to the work and once the author had an occasion to show the MS. of this Chinese Reader to the Vice-Chancellor. He was very much pleased and took the responsibility of publishing the work on behalf of the University of Calcutta. With his kind support and encouragement the author was able to hand over the MS. to the Baptist Mission Press, Calcutta, as directed by the University. It was given to the press in 1948 and was published in 1956. The author owes an explanation for this long delay. It was partly due to circumstances beyond his control and partly due to the natural difficulties of printing Chinese characters in Calcutta.

One important feature which the present work has, but which the earlier MS. lacks, is the inclusion of the mode of writing Chinese radicals. It is hoped that the inclusion of the method of writing them will give further help to students in the practice of reading and writing Chinese.

For a clear knowledge of the tone of each character, the tones of characters, though used in succession in a word, are kept intact as if used in isolation up to the thirty-third lesson. But in the index of the words they are properly toned. Advanced students are advised to consult the index for the proper knowledge of the change of tones of the characters which occur in succession in a word.



Attention is specially drawn to the list of Additions and Corrections at the close of the book. It is regrettable that in spite of our best efforts mistakes have crept in. A book of this kind should be free from such typographical errors and every effort has been made to find them out. The whole book has been carefully read in order to eliminate these errors which have been noted in an appended list. Students are very earnestly advised to go through the book and make necessary corrections for themselves.

Let me take this opportunity to acknowledge my indebtedness to my teacher, Prof. Tan Yun Shan, Director, Cheenabhaban, Visvabharati, Santiniketan, who has kindly gone through the whole MS. and proofs as well. I also express my gratitude to all those who have given me advice and assistance in the undertaking, particularly to my Chinese friends, Mr. Tung Chi Tong, teacher of Mei-Kuang Chinese High School, Calcutta, who has gone through the proofs in spite of his failing health, and to Mr. Kinley Chén for his most valuable suggestions and for his reading the proofs.

If this reader, containing exercises with hints at the end of each lesson, serves to kindle a greater interest in the learning of Chinese and to make it easier and to meet the most commonly used vocabulary needs of students, I shall deem my efforts amply repaid.

Calcutta University, Calcutta,  
*January 1, 1956.*

NAGENDRANARAYAN CHAUDHURI

## A GUIDE TO THE PRONUNCIATION OF ROMANIZED CHINESE

### I. VOWELS:

	Approximate sound in English	Approximate sound in Sanskrit
a	as 'a' in 'father' .. ..	ଆ
é	as 'a' in 'cat' .. ..	to be pronounced like Beng. এ (Low Front Vowel) in এক
i	as 'i' in 'machine', and when it is followed by 'h', it is pronounced as 'i' in 'shiver' followed by 'h', ই	ই and when it is
o	as 'o' in 'note' .. ..	ओ
u	as 'u' in 'rule', and when it is preceded by sz, tz, and tz', it has the same pronunciation as 'u' in 'rule', but without any slight rounding of the lips	উ
ü	as 'ü' in German 'Müller' or 'u' in French 'menu'—the lips are to be pursed and the tip of the tongue placed close to the front teeth	় = ঘউ (as if ঘউ)

### II. DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS:

	Approximate sound in English	Approximate sound in Sanskrit
ai	as 'i' in 'kite' .. ..	ଆই
ao	as 'ow' in 'how' .. ..	ଆଓ
éi	as 'ei' in 'deign' .. ..	এই
ia	as 'ya' in 'yam' .. ..	ইଆ
ieh	as the final and initial e's in 'the end'	ইএ
iu	as 'ew' in 'few' .. ..	ইউ
ou	as 'ou' in 'soul' .. ..	ଓউ
ua	as 'o' and 'a' in 'to argue'	উଆ
ui	as 'o' and 'ea' in 'to ease'	উই
uo	as 'o' and 'a' in 'to awe'	উଓ
iao	as 'e' and 'ow' in 'the owl'	ইଆଓ
uei	as 'o' and 'ai' in 'to aid'	উএই

III. CONSONANTS: [The sign of aspiration (') has been used after certain consonants and consonant combinations.]

Approximate sound in English					Approximate sound in Sanskrit
ch	.. as 'ch' in 'chain'	..	..	..	চ
ch'	.. wanting	..	..	..	ছ
f	.. wanting	..	..	..	ফ (to be pronounced as labial spirant; cf. φ)
h	.. as 'h' in 'hand'	..	..	..	হ
hs	.. as English 's' in 'see' followed immediately by 'h' in 'he', or something between 'she' and 'see'				বেটা
j	.. as 'j' in 'joy'	..	..	..	জ
k	.. as 'k' in 'king'	..	..	..	ক
k'	.. wanting	..	..	..	ক্ষ
l	.. as 'l' in 'land'	..	..	..	ল
m	.. as 'm' in 'man'	..	..	..	ম
n	.. as 'n' in 'name'	..	..	..	ন
p	.. as 'p' in 'put'	..	..	..	প
p'	.. 'ph' in 'loop-hole'	..	..	..	ফ (labial stop)
s	.. as 's' in 'see'	..	..	..	স
sz (ss)	.. as 'zz' in 'buzz' preceded immediately by s				almost like Beng. স্ব—doubling or lengthening of স
sh	.. as 'sh' in 'sharp'	..	..	..	শ
t	.. as 't' in 'step'	..	..	..	ত
t'	.. as 'th' in 'thin'	..	..	..	থ
ts	.. as 'ts' in 'seats'	..	..	..	almost like Beng. চ্য—doubling or lengthening of চ
ts'	.. wanting	..	..	..	almost like Beng. চ্য—doubling or lengthening of চ
tz	.. as 'zz' in 'buzz' preceded immediately by t				almost like Beng. জ্য—doubling or lengthening of জ
tz'	.. as 'zz' in 'buzz' preceded immediately by t and followed immediately by h				almost like Beng. ঝ্য—doubling or lengthening of ঝ
w	.. as 'wo' in 'woful'	..	..	..	ব্র (as if বৰো)
y	.. as 'y' in 'yard'	..	..	..	য্র (as if ইয়া)

## INTRODUCTION

### A. CHINESE CHARACTERS

Chinese characters in general consist of two elements. One, the radical, which gives a rough idea of the meaning; the other, the phonetic, which gives a rough idea of the sound. The word 'radical' is rather a misnomer, because it has the meaning of the root. However, its function is clear. There are altogether 214 radicals. A character written with the radical 'Heart' indicates something emotional, the radical 'Water' refers to something liquid, the radical 'Hand' evokes the idea of an action done with the help of the hand, etc., etc. Thus, 忠 chung<sup>1</sup>, loyal, consisting of the phonetic 中 chung<sup>1</sup>, the middle and the radical 'Heart' indicating emotion; 油 yu<sup>2</sup>, oil, consisting of 由 yu<sup>2</sup>, cause, as phonetic and the 'Water' radical indicating liquid; 把 pa<sup>3</sup>, to take, consisting of the phonetic 巴 pa<sup>1</sup>, the open hand and the radical 'Hand' indicating the action done with the hand. There are also characters which are made of radicals only of which one does the function of the phonetic and the other of the radical as it is. Thus 功 kung<sup>1</sup>, merit, is made of two radicals, 工 kung<sup>1</sup>, labour, and 力 li<sup>4</sup>, strength, here the former is taken as a phonetic; 俚 li<sup>3</sup>, rustic, of two radicals, 人 jēn<sup>2</sup>, man, and 里 li<sup>3</sup>, a lane, here the latter is a phonetic; 沐 mu<sup>4</sup>, to wash, consisting of two radicals, 水 shui<sup>3</sup>, water, and 木 mu<sup>4</sup>, a tree, wood, here also the latter is a phonetic.

It seems probable that at one time the position of the radical was fixed; but now it has been changed and the position is not determined by any fixed rule. In some characters the radical is placed at the top, in some others below, in some characters at the right side, and in some others at the left side. Thus 杏 hsing<sup>4</sup> (often read hēng<sup>3</sup>), the apricot, here the radical 木 mu<sup>4</sup>, a tree, is on the top; 而 tai<sup>1</sup>, foolish, the radical mu<sup>4</sup> down below; 蔡 kan<sup>4</sup>, the trunk of a tree, the radical mu<sup>4</sup> at the right side; 柑 kan<sup>1</sup>, an orange, the radical mu<sup>4</sup> at the left side; compare also 刀 kua<sup>3</sup>, to cut the flesh from the bones, 召 chao<sup>4</sup>, to call, 呴 t'ao<sup>1</sup>, to desire—in these characters 口 k'ou<sup>3</sup>, a mouth, is the radical which has been placed at the top, below and at the left side respectively and in the case of 加 chia<sup>1</sup>, to add, the radical is 力 li<sup>4</sup>, strength, placed at the left side.

Besides giving the clue to the meaning, the radical has another most important utility. With the help of it any character can be found out in a dictionary of the Chinese language. Let us take an example 仆 fu<sup>4</sup> (sometimes read p'u<sup>1</sup>), to fall prostrate, the radical of which is 亼 jēn<sup>2</sup>, man, and 丨 pu<sup>3</sup>, to foretell, though a radical, is used here as a phonetic and is composed of two strokes 丨 kun<sup>3</sup>, a perpendicular stroke, and 丶 chu<sup>3</sup>, a point. Now in the list of radicals given either at the beginning or at the end of the dictionary and under the radicals of two strokes therein, 亼 jēn<sup>2</sup> is to be found out first and then under this radical the phonetic consisting of two strokes is to be traced. But there are characters consisting of two or more radicals, there is nothing to do but try them all one by one until the proper one is found out; thus,

字 tzü<sup>4</sup>, a letter, a written character, composed of two radicals 子 tzü<sup>3</sup>, a son, a child, and 宀 mien<sup>2</sup>, a roof, and it is arranged under the former radical.

架 chia<sup>4</sup>, a frame, a stand, to support, formed by a combination of three radicals 力 li<sup>4</sup>, strength, 口 k'ou<sup>3</sup>, a mouth, and 木 mu<sup>4</sup>, wood, and it is arranged under the last radical.

## B. CHINESE TONES

The Chinese language actually has four tones or musical accents. They are as follows: first tone which is high in pitch, unvarying in character and can be prolonged without changing the pitch at all; second tone in which a pitch rises from a low to a high level and it is like a pitch used in simple query; third tone in which a pitch slightly falls from a relative low level before it rises to a relatively higher one, but not to the same high level as is in the case of the second tone and it is like a pitch used in an incredulous query, with a rise at the end; and fourth tone in which a pitch falls from a high to a low level and it is like a pitch used in quick and dictatorial answer. Thus, 詩 shih, poetry, 十 shih, ten, 史 shih, history, and 是 shih, to be. How is one to know which is which? They, having the same pronunciation, are to be distinguished by intonation. The first shih is to be pronounced in a monotone, the voice is neither rising nor falling and it is indicated by shih<sup>1</sup>. The second, which is shih<sup>2</sup>, is pronounced in a rising tone, something like an interrogative, shih<sup>2</sup>? The third, shih<sup>3</sup>, is uttered in a falling tone, something like a tone of an incredulous interrogative with a rise at the end, shih<sup>3</sup>? And the fourth, shih<sup>4</sup>, in a quick and somewhat dictatorial manner.

The qualities of the four tones, described above, are true only when the characters are spoken in isolation. But when they are spoken in succession, their tones are often so changed that they can no longer be identified with their original characteristics. Fortunately, these changes only affect the characters in the third tone and the rules are as follows:

(i) When a third tone is followed by any other tone except the third, or by a neutral tone, it loses its slowly rising quality and becomes low without any rise at the end ; thus :—

好 吃 *hao<sup>3</sup> ch'ih<sup>1</sup>*, palatable.

” 名 *hao<sup>3</sup> ming<sup>2</sup>*, a good name.

” 事 *hao<sup>3</sup> shih<sup>4</sup>*, a good deed.

母 親 *mu<sup>3</sup> ch'in<sup>0</sup>*, mother.

(ii) When a third tone is followed by another third tone, the former changes into a second tone ; thus, 種 子 *chung<sup>2</sup> (<chung<sup>3</sup>) tzü<sup>3</sup>*, seed.

— *i<sup>1</sup>*, 'one', is the first tone when used alone or before the second tone, the second tone before the fourth tone and the fourth tone before the first or the third tone ; thus :—

一 回 *i<sup>1</sup> hui<sup>2</sup>*, once.

” 次 *i<sup>2</sup> tz'u<sup>4</sup>*, once.

” 千 *i<sup>4</sup> ch'ien<sup>1</sup>*, one thousand.

” 口 *i<sup>4</sup> k'ou<sup>3</sup>*, a mouthful.

But when it is inserted between the verbs repeated, it becomes neutral in tone ; as, 看 一 看 *k'an<sup>4</sup> i<sup>0</sup> k'an<sup>0</sup>*, to look a look, to take a look.

不 *pu<sup>4</sup>*, 'no, not', is the fourth tone when used alone or before the first, second or the third tone, and the second tone before the fourth one. Thus :—

不 方 便 *pu<sup>4</sup> fang<sup>1</sup> pien<sup>4</sup>*, inconvenient.

” 合 作 *pu<sup>4</sup> ho<sup>2</sup> tso<sup>4</sup>*, non-co-operation.

” 好 *pu<sup>4</sup> hao<sup>3</sup>*, bad.

” 是 *pu<sup>2</sup> shih<sup>4</sup>*, no.

Every character of the Chinese language, when pronounced alone, has one of the four tones. But in compounds and in sentences, a character is sometimes unstressed and loses its original tone and its pitch is determined chiefly by the tone of the preceding character and not by its original tone. The tone of such an unstressed character is known as the neutral tone and is marked by a dot or a circle on the top of the romanized pronunciation of the character. It is very difficult to set out any hard and fast rule regarding the occurrence of neutral-tone characters in a sentence. Generally speaking particles, interjections, personal pronouns used as objects of transitive verbs and the characters which have no important concrete meanings in themselves,

are to be regarded as neutral in tone; e.g. particles—我的 wo<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, my; 來了 lai<sup>2</sup> lia<sup>0</sup>, came; interjection—恨不能 han<sup>0</sup> pu<sup>4</sup> nêng<sup>2</sup>, alas! I was unable; personal pronoun used as an object—沒有人看見我 mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>0</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup> k'an<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>0</sup> wo<sup>0</sup>, nobody sees me; characters without any concrete meanings—知道 chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>0</sup>, to know; where the former means 'to know' and the latter 'the way'; 裏頭 li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, inside; where the former means 'in' and the latter 'top'. The plural suffix 們 mén<sup>2</sup> is always neutral in tone; e.g. 他們 t'a<sup>1</sup>-mén<sup>0</sup>. The noun-indicating suffixes 兒 érh<sup>2</sup> and 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> are always neutral in tone; e.g. 兒子 érh<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, son; 女 nü<sup>3</sup> érh<sup>0</sup> (= nü<sup>3</sup> 'rh<sup>0</sup>), daughter. The interrogative sign 麼 ma<sup>3</sup> is always in the neutral tone; e.g. 甚麼 shén<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>, what? When a word is reduplicated in a compound, the second one generally loses its tone and becomes neutral; as, 姐姐 chieh<sup>3</sup> chieh<sup>0</sup>, elder sister; 妹妹 mei<sup>4</sup> mei<sup>0</sup>, younger sister; 哥哥 ko<sup>1</sup> ko<sup>0</sup>, elder brother; 弟弟 ti<sup>4</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, younger brother, etc. But when the compound is used in the distributive sense, the tone of the second member remains as it is; as, 人人 jén<sup>2</sup> jén<sup>2</sup>, everybody; 天天 t'ien<sup>1</sup> t'ien<sup>1</sup>, everyday; 處處 ch'u<sup>4</sup> ch'u<sup>4</sup>, everywhere. The second member of the adverbial compound word, which is formed with the reduplication of the adjective, does not lose its pitch though in some cases the tone is changed; e.g. k'uai<sup>4</sup> k'uai<sup>1</sup>, quickly; 慢慢 man<sup>4</sup> man<sup>1</sup>, slowly; 常常 ch'ang<sup>2</sup> ch'ang<sup>2</sup>, constantly; 早早 tsao<sup>2</sup> tsao<sup>3</sup>, early; 往往 wang<sup>2</sup> wang<sup>3</sup>, frequently; 明明 ming<sup>2</sup> ming<sup>2</sup>, plainly; 僅僅 chin<sup>2</sup> chin<sup>3</sup>, barely. When a verb is reduplicated, the second one becomes neutral in tone; as, 謝謝 hsieh<sup>4</sup> hsieh<sup>0</sup>, thank you! 看看 k'an<sup>4</sup> k'an<sup>0</sup>, to take a look. When the verbs are used after 進 chin<sup>4</sup>, in, 出 ch'u<sup>1</sup>, out, 到 tao<sup>4</sup>, to (as, tao<sup>4</sup> . . . lai<sup>0</sup>, to come to), 回 hui<sup>2</sup>, back, 上 shang<sup>4</sup>, up, and 下 hsia<sup>4</sup>, down, they become neutral in tone; as chin<sup>4</sup> lai<sup>0</sup>, to come in; ch'u<sup>1</sup> ch'ü<sup>0</sup>, to go out; hui<sup>2</sup> lai<sup>0</sup>, to come back; shang<sup>4</sup> lai<sup>0</sup>, to come up, and hsia<sup>4</sup> lai<sup>0</sup>, to come down. But when shang<sup>4</sup> and hsia<sup>4</sup> are used after verbs, they become neutral in tone; e.g. ch'uan<sup>1</sup> shang<sup>0</sup>, to put on (clothes); ko<sup>1</sup> hsia<sup>0</sup>, to put down. The second member of a compound word, having the same sense with the first one, is generally neutral in tone; e.g. 朋 <yu<sup>3</sup>> p'êng-yu<sup>0</sup>, a friend, both mean 'a friend'; 看見 k'an<sup>4</sup>-ch'ien<sup>0</sup>, to see, both mean 'to see'; 蛤中莫 ha<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>, a frog, both mean 'a frog'. 年 nien<sup>2</sup>, year, and 天

t'ien<sup>1</sup>, day, when used as second members of compounds, generally become neutral in tone; as, 今 年 chin<sup>1</sup> nién<sup>0</sup>, this year; 明 年 ming<sup>2</sup> nién<sup>0</sup>, next year; 今 天 chin<sup>1</sup> t'ien<sup>0</sup>, today; 明 天 ming<sup>2</sup> t'ien<sup>0</sup>, tomorrow. 罷 pa<sup>4</sup>, as a sign of the imperative or a final particle of emphasis, loses its tone; e.g. ch'ü<sup>4</sup> pa<sup>0</sup>, go away.  kuo<sup>2</sup>, country, when used after the name of a country, loses its tone; e.g. chung<sup>1</sup> kuo<sup>0</sup>, China; ying<sup>1</sup> kuo<sup>0</sup>, England, etc.

The pitch of the neutral tone is as follows:

1. When it is preceded by a syllable in either the first or second tone, it is medium in pitch and almost like that of the fourth tone; e.g. 玻 璃 po<sup>1</sup>.li<sup>0</sup>, glass, where both mean 'glass'; 名 聲 ming<sup>2</sup>.shēng<sup>0</sup>, fame, where both mean 'fame'.

2. When it is preceded by a syllable in the third tone, its pitch becomes high and almost like that of the first tone; as, 可 是 k'o<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>, however.

3. When it is preceded by a syllable in the fourth tone, its pitch becomes low; e.g. 目 錄 mu<sup>4</sup>.lu<sup>0</sup>, catalogue.

4. When a neutral tone is preceded by another neutral tone, its pitch is regulated by that of the preceding one which in turn depends on that of the preceding tonal syllable.

a. If the pitch of the first neutral tone is medium quality by virtue of the quality of the first or second tone preceding it, it is considered as a syllable in the fourth tone in determining the pitch of the second neutral tone and consequently the pitch of the second neutral tone becomes low; as,

中國 的 chung<sup>1</sup> kuo<sup>0</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, Chinese.

德 .. .. tē<sup>2</sup> kuo<sup>0</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, German.

b. If the pitch of the first neutral tone is high due to the influence of the quality of the third tone preceding it, it is regarded as a syllable in the first tone in determining the pitch of the second neutral tone and consequently the pitch of the second neutral tone becomes medium; e.g.

美 國 的 mei<sup>3</sup> kuo<sup>0</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, American.

c. If the pitch of the first neutral tone is low, due to the influence of the quality of the fourth tone preceding it, the pitch of the second neutral tone rises up; as,

印 度 <ti<sup>4</sup>> yin<sup>4</sup> tu<sup>0</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, Indian.

With the change of intonation, the meaning is also changed and sometimes the pronunciation too; e.g.

三 san<sup>1</sup>, three; but san<sup>4</sup>, thrice; cf. 三思面行 san<sup>4</sup> szü<sup>1</sup> (ssü<sup>1</sup>) mine<sup>4</sup> hsing<sup>2</sup>, think thrice before you act; here san<sup>4</sup>, thrice, instead of 三回 or 次 san<sup>1</sup> hui<sup>2</sup> or tz'ü<sup>4</sup>, thrice; 少 shao<sup>3</sup>, few, a little; but shao<sup>4</sup>, young; 當 tang<sup>1</sup>, should, to be equal to, to act as; but tang<sup>4</sup>, to treat as, to pawn; 要 yao<sup>1</sup>, to demand; but yao<sup>4</sup>, must, necessary, want, wish, a sign of the future; 得 tê<sup>2</sup>, to get; but tei<sup>3</sup>, must.

## C. WRITING

### I. The Strokes

There is a Chinese tradition that the character 永 yung<sup>3</sup>, meaning 'perpetual, eternal', consists of all strokes used in writing Chinese characters. In writing them the following rule should always be remembered:

First to begin from the left-hand side, at the top, to draw strokes from left to right, horizontal strokes before perpendicular ones, central strokes before those on each side and those on the left before those on the right; a single stroke often takes one and sometimes two curves, as on the left side of the above character consisting of six strokes or of eight strokes in the following orders:—

Six strokes.—The dot at the top, the small horizontal stroke at the top of the upright central stroke, the upright central stroke with the hook at its foot, a hooked angle stroke open to the left at the left side and the two strokes at the right side.

Eight strokes.—The dot at the top, the small horizontal stroke at the top of the upright central stroke, the upright central stroke without the hook, the hook at the foot of the upright central stroke, the two strokes at the left side and the two strokes at the right side.

There are few exceptions to the rule mentioned above; but they do not affect the general principle.

It is, however, better to set out the strokes in a different way.

There are six main strokes of which the first five have been included in the List of Radicals. They are:—

(1) Horizontal stroke	= Radical 1	—
(2) Vertical stroke	= Radical 2	
(3) A dot	= Radical 3	•
(4) Downstroke to the left	= Radical 4	J
(5) A hook facing to the left	= Radical 6	J
(6) Downstroke to the right		L

The following variants of numbers (1), (3) and (5) should also be noted :—

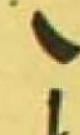
(1a) Horizontal stroke with a hook at the right



(3a) Downward dot



(3b) Upward dot



(5a) A hook facing to the right



To these the following angles must be added :—

(1) angle open to the right



(2) hooked angle open to the right



(3) pointed angle open to the right



(4) hooked angle open to the left



(5) double angle open to the left



## II. *Rules for the Order of Strokes*

### (i) Top before bottom.

Cf. Radicals—7, 8, 15, 27, 48, 53, 59, 71, 89, 95, 110, 112, etc.

#### Exceptions—

(a) Top stroke, which is connected with right-hand stroke, is preceded by left-hand stroke.

Cf. Radicals—13, 14, 16, 30, 31, 72, 73, 74, 80, 101, 108, 109, 122, 154, 157, 163, 166, 203, 205, 206.

(b) Top dot is often written last.

Cf. Radicals—56, 62, 94.

### (ii) Left before right.

Cf. Radicals—9, 10, 11, 12, 17, 20, 25, 28, 29, 34, 35, 36, 47, 61, etc.

#### Exceptions—

(a) Right-hand dot or angle is sometimes written first.

Cf. Radicals—18, 19, 21, 26, 44, 63, 70, 81, 138, 163, 178.

(b) Middle stroke or part is sometimes written first.

Cf. Radicals—42, 46, 77, 85, 175, 179, 206.

(c) In Radicals 54 and 162 left stroke is always written last.

### (iii) Horizontal stroke is written before crossing vertical or other down-strokes.

Cf. Radicals—24, 37, 41, 43, 51, 55, 56, 64, 65, 71, 75, 82, 93, etc.

### Exception—

Bottom horizontal stroke is always written last.

Cf. Radicals—32, 33, 48, 77, 96, 133, 166, 172.

(iv) Rectangle is written before crossing vertical or other downstrokes.

Cf. Radicals—142, 159, 166, 177.

Though there are exceptions, the first two rules (i.e. Top before Bottom and Left before Right) are strictly observed.

## RADICALS AND HOW TO WRITE THEM

### ONE STROKE

1. — i<sup>1</sup>, one.
2. | kun<sup>1</sup>, a perpendicular stroke.
3. ▶ chu<sup>3</sup>, a point, as of a flame.
4. ⌂ p'ieh<sup>3</sup>, a dash, a downstroke to the left.
5. ⌂ i<sup>4</sup>, one.
6. ⌂ ku<sup>1</sup> (chüeh<sup>2</sup>), a barb, a vertical stroke ending in a hook.

### TWO STROKES

7. 二 ērh<sup>2</sup>, two ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.
8. 一 t'ou<sup>2</sup>, above ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke below.
9. 人 jēn<sup>2</sup>, man ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a downstroke to the right.
10. 亼 jēn<sup>2</sup>, man ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a long vertical stroke on the right side touching the point below the top of the former stroke. Cf. 仁.
11. 亼 ju<sup>4</sup>, to enter ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a downstroke with a horizontal stroke at the top to the right, touching the former stroke at its top.
12. 八 pa<sup>1</sup>, eight ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a downstroke with a horizontal stroke at the top to the right without touching the top of the former stroke.
13. 匚 chiung<sup>3</sup>, a desert ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left.

14.  mi<sup>4</sup>, a cover, to cover; national phonetic letter for m ;—(1) a dot, (2) a horizontal stroke with a hook to the right.

15.  ping<sup>1</sup>, ice ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) an upward stroke at the bottom. Cf. 冬 and 况.

16.  chi<sup>1</sup>, a bench, a small table ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the right with a horizontal stroke at the top.

17.  k'an<sup>3</sup>, a receptacle ;—(1) an angle open to the right, (2) a vertical stroke on the right side.

18.  tao<sup>1</sup>, a knife, a sword, a razor; national phonetic letter for t ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left, (2) a downstroke to the left, touching the former one on the left side.

a —(1) a small vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hook facing to the left on the right side without touching the former one. Cf. .

19.  li<sup>4</sup>, strength ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left, (2) a downstroke to the left crossing the horizontal arm of the hooked angle.

20.  pao<sup>1</sup>, a parcel, to wrap; national phonetic letter for p ;—(1) a dot to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left touching the dot on the right side.

21.  pi<sup>3</sup>, a spoon or ladle ;—(1) a downstroke, (2) a hooked angle open to the right crossing the former one.

22.  fang<sup>1</sup>, a box, a basket; national phonetic letter for f ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a hooked angle open to the right on the left side touching the left end of the former stroke.

23.  hsi<sup>3</sup>, a box, to conceal ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a hooked angle open to the right, meeting the former stroke at a point not far from the left end.

*Note.*—In writing characters both the radicals, i.e. Nos. 22 and 23, are the same.

24.  shih<sup>2</sup>, ten ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a vertical stroke crossing the former one.

25.  pu<sup>3</sup>, to divine, to foretell ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a dot to the right.

26.  chieh<sup>2</sup> or tsieh<sup>2</sup>, a joint; national phonetic letter for ts ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (2) a vertical stroke to the left.

a. —(1) a hooked angle open to the left at the top, (2) a hooked angle open to the right at the foot touching the former one. Cf.  . This variant is used when it is the lower portion of a character.

27.  han<sup>4</sup>, a cliff ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left touching the left extremity of the former stroke.

28.  ssü<sup>1</sup>, selfish, private; national phonetic letter for s ;—(1) a pointed angle open to the right, (2) a dot.

29.  yu<sup>4</sup>, and, also ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left, (2) a downstroke to the right crossing through the lower arm of the former stroke.

### THREE STROKES

30.  k'ou<sup>3</sup>, a mouth, an opening ;—(1) a vertical stroke on the left side, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke below.

31.  wei<sup>2</sup>, an enclosure ;—a vertical stroke on the left side, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke below.

*Note.*—In writing characters Nos. 30 and 31 are the same. But the latter encloses the other half of the character.

32.  t'u<sup>3</sup>, earth ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a vertical stroke crossing the former one, (3) a longer horizontal stroke at the foot.

a. —(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a vertical stroke crossing the former one, (3) an upward oblique stroke at the foot. Cf.  .

33.  shih<sup>4</sup>, a scholar ;—(1) a horizontal line, (2) a vertical line crossing the former one, (3) a small horizontal line at the foot.

34.  chih<sup>3</sup>, to follow ;—(1) a dot to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a downstroke to the right.

35.  sui<sup>1</sup>, to walk slowly ;—(1) a dot, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a downstroke to the right, crossing both strokes.

36.  hsi<sup>2</sup>, evening, dusk ;—(1) a dot, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a dot in the middle.

37.  ta<sup>4</sup>, great, big ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a downstroke to the left crossing across the horizontal stroke, (3) a downstroke to the right.

38.  nü<sup>3</sup>, a woman ;—(1) an angle open to the right on the left side, (2) a downstroke to the left crossing the lower arm of the angle

on the right side, (3) a horizontal stroke crossing the upper arm of the angle and touching the top of the downstroke.

a. —(1) an angle open to the right on the left side, (2) a downstroke to the left on the right side crossing the lower arm of the angle, (3) an upward stroke touching the top of the downstroke. Cf. **妃**.

39. **子** tzü<sup>3</sup>, a son ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke with a hook to the right at the top, (2) a hook facing to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke crossing the hook.

a. —(1) a small horizontal stroke with a hook to the right at the top, (2) a hook facing to the left, (3) an upward dot crossing the upper portion of the hook. Cf. **孔**.

40. **宀** mien<sup>2</sup>, a roof ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a dot to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke with a hook to the right.

41. **寸** ts'un<sup>4</sup>, an inch ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a hook facing to the left crossing the horizontal stroke at a point not far from the right extremity, (3) a dot below the horizontal stroke and on the left side of the hook.

42. **小** hsiao<sup>3</sup>, small ;—(1) a hook facing to the left, (2) a dot to the left, (3) a dot on the right side.

43. **尢** wang<sup>1</sup>, lame ; national phonetic final for -ang ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a downstroke to the left crossing the horizontal stroke, (3) a hooked angle open to the right below the horizontal stroke and on the right side of the downstroke.

a. —(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a downstroke touching the horizontal stroke below at a point not far from the left extremity, (3) a hooked angle open to the right touching the horizontal stroke below at a point not far from the right extremity. Cf. **尙**.

44. **尸** shih<sup>1</sup>, a corpse ; national phonetic letter for sh ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke with a hook, (2) another small horizontal stroke, (3) a downstroke to the left.

45. **中** ch'ê<sup>4</sup>, plants sprouting ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the right, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a downstroke to the left in the middle.

46. **山** shan<sup>1</sup>, a hill, a mountain ;—(1) a central vertical stroke, (2) a hooked angle open to the right, (3) a vertical stroke on the right side.

47. **𠂔** ch'uān<sup>1</sup>, stream, to flow ;—(1) an angle open on the right at the left side, (2) a central angle open to the right, (3) an angle open to the right on the right side.

a **川** —(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a central vertical stroke, (3) a vertical stroke to the right.

48. **工** kung<sup>1</sup>, labour, labourer, to work ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

49. **己** chi<sup>3</sup>, self, personal ;—(1) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (2) a small horizontal stroke, (3) a hooked angle open to the right.

50. **巾** chin<sup>1</sup>, a napkin or towel ;—(1) a small vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a long central vertical stroke.

51. **干** kan<sup>1</sup>, to oppose, a shield ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a vertical stroke.

52. **ㄩ** yao<sup>1</sup>, small, tender; national phonetic letter for ao ;—(1) an angle open to the right at the top, (2) an angle open to the right at the foot, (3) a dot.

53. **厂** yen<sup>3</sup>, a roof, a shelter ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a downstroke to the left.

54. **爻** yin<sup>3</sup>, to move on ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left at the top, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a downstroke to the right.

55. **扌** kung<sup>3</sup>, the hands folded ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a downstroke to the left on the left side, (3) a vertical stroke on the right side.

56. **弋** ih<sup>4</sup>, a dart ;—(1) an oblique stroke, (2) a hook facing to the right, (3) a dot.

57. **弓** kung<sup>1</sup>, a bow ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) an angle open to the right with a vertical stroke at the top.

58. **彑** chi<sup>4</sup>, a pig's head ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left, (2) a central horizontal stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

a —(1) a hooked angle open to the right, (2) a hooked angle open to the left touching the middle of the upper arm of the hooked angle by its upper arm and touching the right extremity of the lower arm of the hooked angle by its lower arm, (3) a horizontal stroke at the foot of the prolonged lower arm of the second hooked angle open to the left.

b —(1) a hooked angle open to the left, (2) a central horizontal stroke crossing the lower arm of the hooked angle, (3) a horizontal stroke at the foot. Cf. **𦥑**.

59. 三 shan<sup>1</sup>, feathers ;—(1) a downstroke to the left at the top, (2) a central downstroke to the left, (3) a downstroke to the left at the foot.

60. 衤 ch'ih, a step with the left foot, to walk ; national phonetic letter for ch' ;—(1) a downstroke to the left at the top, (2) a central downstroke to the left, (3) a vertical stroke.

#### FOUR STROKES

61. 忄 hsin<sup>1</sup>, the heart ;—(1) a dot to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the right, (3) a central dot, (4) a dot on the right side.

a —(1) a vertical stroke, (2) a dot to the left of the vertical stroke, (3) a dot to the right of the vertical stroke. Cf. 心.

b —(1) a hook facing to the left, (2) a dot to the left, (3) a dot to the right, (4) a dot to the right further. Cf. 忄.

62. 戈 ko<sup>1</sup>, a spear, a lance ;—(1) an oblique stroke, (2) a hook facing to the right, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a dot.

63. 戸 hu<sup>4</sup>, a door ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a downstroke to the left.

64. 手 shou<sup>3</sup>, the hand ;—(1) an oblique stroke at the top, (2) a small central horizontal stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke below, (4) a hook facing to the left touching the middle of the oblique stroke and crossing the two horizontal strokes.

a —(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a hook facing to the left crossing the middle of the horizontal stroke, (3) an upward stroke crossing the hook below the horizontal stroke. Cf. 扌.

*Note.*—In writing characters the first one is used at the foot and the second one, i.e. the variant, on the left side.

65. 支 chih<sup>1</sup>, a branch, descendants ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right.

66. 支 p'u<sup>3</sup>, to rap, to tap ; national phonetic letter for p' ;—(1) a vertical stroke at the top, (2) a small horizontal stroke on the right side of the vertical stroke, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right crossing the middle of the lower arm of the hooked angle.

a —(1) a dot on the left side of the top, (2) a horizontal stroke touching the dot to the right, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right crossing the former downstroke. Cf. 支.

67. 文 wén<sup>2</sup>, literature ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right crossing the former downstroke.

68. 斗 tou<sup>2</sup>, a dry measure ;—(1) a dot, (2) a dot just below the first dot, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a vertical stroke crossing the horizontal stroke.

69. 斤 chin<sup>1</sup>, sixteen ounces ; a catty, fixed at 1½ lb. avoirdupois for tariff purposes ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a vertical stroke.

70. 方 fang<sup>1</sup>, a place, a region, square ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a downstroke to the left.

71. 无 wu<sup>2</sup>, without, not ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke just below the first small horizontal stroke, (3) a downstroke to the left crossing across the second horizontal stroke, (4) a hooked angle open to the right.

a. 无—(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) an angle open to the right below without touching the horizontal stroke, (3) a downstroke to the left touching the middle of the horizontal stroke and crossing across the base of the angle open to the right, (4) a hooked angle open to the right.

72. 日 jih<sup>4</sup>, the sun, day ; national phonetic letter for j ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a central horizontal stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

a. —(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left ; (3) a central horizontal stroke, (4) an upward stroke at the foot of the vertical stroke touching the lower arm of the hooked angle at a point far from the lower extremity but below the right extremity of the central horizontal stroke.

73. 曰 yüeh<sup>4</sup>, to speak ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a small central horizontal stroke, which does not touch the side of the hooked angle, (4) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

74. 月 yüeh<sup>4</sup>, the moon, month ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a central horizontal stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke.

75. 木 mu<sup>4</sup>, wood ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a hook facing to the left, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right.

76. 欠 ch'ien<sup>4</sup>, to owe money ;—(1) a dot at the top of the left side, (2) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right. It is always used on the right side.

77. 止 chih<sup>3</sup>, to stop, to desist ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the right, (2) a small horizontal stroke, (3) a small vertical stroke to the left, (4) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

78. 反 tai<sup>3</sup>, bad, vicious ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a dot within. Cf. 犬.

79. 爪 shu<sup>1</sup>, a spear, to kill ;—(1) a small downstroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the right with a small horizontal stroke at the top of the hooked angle, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right.

*Note.*—In writing characters it is used on the right side.

80. 勿 wu<sup>2</sup>, no, not ;—(1) an angle open to the right on the left side, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a vertical stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke. Cf. 毒 and also 𢂔.

81. 比 pi<sup>3</sup>, to compare ;—(1) a dot to the left of the pointed angle open to the right, (2) a pointed angle open to the right, (3) a dot to the right of the hooked angle open to the right, (4) a hooked angle open to the right.

82. 毛 mao<sup>2</sup>, the hair of an animal, fur ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a small central horizontal stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a hooked angle open to the right.

83. 氐 shih<sup>4</sup>, a family, a clan ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a pointed angle open to the right on the left side, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) an angle open to the right.

84. 气 ch'i<sup>4</sup>, breath, vapour ;—(1) a dot, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke, (4) an angle open to the right with a horizontal stroke at the top.

85. 水 shui<sup>3</sup>, water ;—(1) a hook facing to the left in the middle, (2) a hooked angle to the left, (3) a stroke to the right above, (4) a downstroke to the right below.

a —(1) a dot at the top, (2) below another dot, (3) a small oblique stroke from the foot upward on the right side. Cf. 𠂔.

*Note.*—The variant is only used on the left side of the character.

86. 火 huo<sup>3</sup>, fire ;—(1) a dot to the left, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a stroke at the top of the right side, (4) a downstroke to the right below.

a —(1) a dot to the left, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a dot at the top of the right side, (4) a dot below on the right side without touching the former dot. Cf. 灶.

b —Consecutive four dots without touching one another. Cf. 包

*Note.*—a is used on the left side of the character and b at the foot. In some of the characters both are used; the former to the left and the latter at the bottom, e.g. 燃.

87.  chao<sup>3</sup>, the claws of birds or animals, to scratch ;—(1) a stroke at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left on the left side, (3) a central vertical stroke, (4) a downstroke to the right on the right side.

a —(1) an oblique stroke at the top, (2) a dot to the left below the stroke, (3) a central dot below the stroke, (4) a dot to the right below the stroke. Cf. 爭.

*Note.*—With the exception of one character, i.e.  pa, to scratch, where the radical is used to the left, in all other cases the variant is used and it is used at the top.

88.  fu<sup>4</sup>, father ;—(1) a dot on the left side of the top, (2) a dot on the right side of the top, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right crossing across.

89.  hsiao<sup>2</sup>, to intertwine, crosswise ;—(1) a stroke on the left side of top, (2) a stroke at the top crossing across, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a downstroke to the right crossing across.

*Note.*—In writing characters double cross is used. Cf. 祖.

90.  ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, a bed, a couch ;—(1) an angle open to the right, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke to the left, (4) a downstroke to the left.

91.  p'ien<sup>4</sup>, a splinter, a slice ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a small vertical stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke, (4) a hooked angle open to the left.

92.  ya<sup>2</sup>, the molars, a tooth ;—(1) a stroke at the top, (2) an angle open to the right, (3) a hook facing to the left, (4) a downstroke to the left.

93.  niu<sup>2</sup>, an ox, a cow ;—(1) a dot to the left, (2) a small horizontal stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a vertical stroke crossing across.

a —(1) a dot to the left, (2) a small horizontal stroke, (3) a hook facing to the left crossing across, (4) an upward oblique stroke crossing the hook. Cf. 牝.

*Note.*—The radical is used at the foot and the variant on the left side of the character.

94. 大 ch'üan<sup>3</sup>, the dog ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a downstroke to the left crossing across, (3) a downstroke to the right, (4) a dot.

a. —(1) an oblique stroke at the top, (2) a curve with a hook facing to the left, crossing the middle of the former stroke, (3) an upward oblique stroke touching the curve. Cf. 犯.

*Note.*—The radical is used at the top, foot or on the right side of the character ; while the variant is always used on the left side.

#### FIVE STROKES

95. 玄 hsüan<sup>2</sup>, dark, black ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) an angle open to the right, (4) an angle open to the right at the foot, (5) a dot on the right side of the base of the angle at the foot.

96. 玉 yü<sup>4</sup>, a gem ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a central small horizontal stroke, (3) a vertical stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke at the foot, (5) a dot.

a. —(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a central small horizontal stroke, (3) a vertical stroke, (4) an oblique stroke at the bottom of the vertical stroke. Cf. 王.

*Note.*—The radical is always used at the foot of the character and the variant on the left side.

97. 瓜 kua<sup>1</sup>, melons, gourds ;—(1) a stroke at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) an angle open to the right, (4) a dot on the right side of the base of the angle, (5) a downstroke to the right.

98. 瓦 wa<sup>3</sup>, a tile, pottery ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the right with a small horizontal stroke at its top, (4) a dot, (5) an upward stroke at the bottom.

*Note.*—This radical is used either at the foot or on the right side of the character.

99. 甘 kan<sup>1</sup>, sweet ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a vertical stroke to the left across the horizontal stroke, (3) a vertical stroke to the right across the horizontal stroke, (4) a small central horizontal stroke, (5) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

100. 生 shêng<sup>1</sup>, to produce, to beget, to be born ;—(1) a dot to the left, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a small central horizontal stroke, (4) a vertical stroke across the two horizontal strokes, (5) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

101. 用 yung<sup>4</sup>, to use ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a central horizontal stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke, (5) a vertical stroke across the two horizontal strokes.

102. 田 t'ien<sup>2</sup>, field, land ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (3) a central horizontal stroke, (4) a vertical stroke across the central horizontal stroke, (5) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

103. 足 p'i<sup>3</sup>, the foot, a roll of cloth ;—(1) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke to the right, (4) a downstroke to the left, (5) a downstroke to the right at the bottom.

—(1) a horizontal stroke with a hook at the top, (2) a vertical stroke, touching the extreme point of the hook, (3) a horizontal stroke to the right, (4) a smaller vertical stroke to the left of the former vertical stroke apart, almost half in length and slightly exceeding the base of the former vertical stroke, (5) an upward oblique stroke at the bottom of the two vertical strokes.

*Note.*—The variant is used on the left side of the character.

104. 疾 ni<sup>4</sup>, disease ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a dot on the left side above, (5) a dot on the left side below.

105. 夂 po<sup>4</sup>, back to back ;—(1) a downstroke to the left with the hook at the top, (2) a dot on the left side of the downstroke to the left, (3) a dot on the right side above, (4) a dot on the right side below, (5) a downstroke to the right.

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the top of the character.

106. 白 pai<sup>2</sup>, white ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a central horizontal stroke, (5) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

107. 皮 p'i<sup>2</sup>, skin, leather ;—(1) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a vertical stroke across the horizontal stroke, (4) a hooked angle open to the left, (5) a downstroke to the right.

*Note.*—With the exception of one character, this radical is always used on the right side.

108. 皿 ming<sup>3</sup>, a vessel, a utensil ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a vertical stroke to the left within, (4) a vertical stroke to the right within, (5) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the top of the character.

109. **目** mu<sup>4</sup>, the eyes ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke above within, (4) a horizontal stroke below within, (5) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

a —(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, the vertical arm of which is longer than the vertical stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke above within, (4) a horizontal stroke below within, (5) an upward oblique stroke at the foot of the vertical stroke touching the vertical arm at a point nearer to the horizontal stroke below within.

b —a small vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left having horizontal arm long and vertical arm small and equal to the small vertical stroke to the left, (3) a vertical stroke to the left within, (4) a vertical stroke to the right within, (5) a long horizontal stroke at the foot. Cf. **眾**.

*Note.*—The second variant is always used at the top of the character. When the radical is used at the top, it becomes double. Cf. **眾**.

110. **矛** mao<sup>2</sup>, a lance, a spear ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke with a hook at the top, (2) just below a dot, (3) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (4) a hook facing to the left, (5) a stroke on the left side of the hook.

111. **矢** shih<sup>4</sup>, a dart, an arrow ;—(1) a stroke on the left side above, (2) a small horizontal stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a downstroke to the left across the second horizontal stroke, (5) a downstroke to the right.

112. **石** shih<sup>2</sup>, stone, rock ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a vertical stroke, (4) a hooked angle open to the left, (5) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

*Note.*—This radical is always used either on the left side or at the foot.

113. **示** shih<sup>4</sup>, an omen, to manifest ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) just below another horizontal stroke, (3) a hook facing to the left, (4) a dot to the left of the hook, (5) a dot to the right of the hook.

a —(1) a dot at the top, (2) an acute angle open to the left just below the dot, (3) a vertical stroke touching the middle of the lower arm, (4) a dot touching the top of the vertical stroke on the right side.

*Note.*—The radical is always used at the bottom and the variant on the left side.

114. **匚** jou<sup>3</sup>, a footprint ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) an oblique stroke across the arm of

the hooked angle, (4) a small stroke at the foot of the oblique stroke, (5) a dot on the right end of the small stroke.

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the bottom.

115.  ho<sup>2</sup>, crops, growing grain ;—(1) a stroke at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a hook facing to the left, (4) a downstroke to the left, (5) a downstroke to the right.

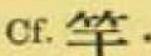
116.  hsüeh<sup>4</sup>, a cave, a hole ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a dot to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (4) a downstroke to the left, (5) a downstroke to the right.

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the top.

117.  li<sup>4</sup>, to stand up ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) just below a stroke to the left, (4) a stroke to the right, (5) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

#### SIX STROKES

118.  chu<sup>4</sup>, the bamboo ;—(1) a small downstroke at the top of the left side, (2) a small horizontal stroke, (3) a vertical stroke, (4) a small downstroke at the top, (5) a small horizontal stroke, (6) a hook facing to the left.

a —(1) a small downstroke to the left, (2) a small stroke, touching the former stroke in the middle, (3) a dot below the small stroke, touching the former stroke at a point in the middle of the downstroke, (4) a small downstroke to the left, (5) a small stroke, touching the former stroke in the middle, (6) a dot below the small stroke, touching the former stroke at a point in the middle of the downstroke.  
Cf. .

b —(1) a small downstroke to the left, (2) a small stroke, touching the former stroke in the middle, (3) a small stroke parallel to the former stroke, touching the downstroke just below the former stroke, (4) a small downstroke to the left, (5) a small stroke touching the former stroke in the middle, (6) a small stroke parallel to the former horizontal stroke, touching the downstroke just below the former stroke.

*Note.*—In writing character the radical is never used ; but the variant is used and always at the top.

119.  mi<sup>3</sup>, hulled rice, uncooked rice ;—(1) a dot at the top of the left, (2) a dot at the top of the right, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a hook facing to the left across, (5) a downstroke to the left, (6) a downstroke to the right.

120.  ssü<sup>1</sup>, floss silk ;—(1) a pointed angle open to the right at the top, (2) a pointed angle open to the right across, (3) a dot on the right side of the base of the second pointed angle, (4) a hook facing to the left, (5) a dot on the left side of the hook, (6) a dot on the right side of the hook.

a —(1) a pointed angle open to the right at the top, (2) a pointed angle open to the right across, (3) a dot to the right extremity of the base of the second pointed angle, (4) three consecutive dots below the base of the second pointed angle beginning from the left side.

*Note.*—In writing the variant is used and is never used at the top.

121.  fou<sup>2</sup>, pottery, earthenware ;—(1) a dot on the left side of the top, (2) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a vertical stroke across the second horizontal stroke, (5) an angle open to the right, (6) a small vertical stroke on the right side.

*Note.*—This radical is used either on the left side or at the bottom.

122.  wang<sup>3</sup>, a net ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a small downstroke to the left on the left side, (4) a stroke across the small downstroke, (5) a small downstroke to the left on the right side, (6) a stroke across the small downstroke.

a —(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) an oblique stroke to the right within on the left side, (4) an oblique stroke to the left within on the right side, (5) a horizontal stroke at the foot of all the strokes.  
Cf. .

b —(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) an oblique stroke to the right within on the left, (4) an oblique stroke to the left within on the right side, (5) a horizontal stroke touching only the last two strokes within at the foot. Cf. .

c —(1) a dot to the left of the top, (2) a horizontal stroke with a hook to the right touching the dot, (3) a downstroke to the left on the left side below, (4) a hooked angle open to the right on the right side below. Cf. .

d —(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a small oblique stroke to the left within to the left, (4) a small oblique stroke to the right within to the right. Cf. .

*Note.*—The variant a is used at the top of almost all the characters made of this radical.

123. **羊** yang<sup>2</sup>, a sheep, a goat:—(1) a dot to the left of the top, (2) a dot to the right of the top, (3) just below a horizontal stroke, (4) a central horizontal stroke, (5) a horizontal stroke below, (6) a vertical stroke across.

a —(1) a dot to the left of the top, (2) a dot on the right side of the top, (3) just below a horizontal stroke, (4) a central horizontal stroke, (5) a vertical stroke across, (6) a horizontal stroke at the foot. Cf. 羊.

124. **羽** yü<sup>3</sup>, feathers:—(1) a hooked angle open to the left on the left side, (2) a downward stroke within at the top, (3) an upward stroke below within, (4) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (5) a downward stroke within at the top, (6) an upward stroke below within.

125. **老** lao<sup>3</sup>, old, aged:—(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke across, (3) a horizontal stroke below, (4) a downstroke to the left, crossing the right side of the horizontal stroke, (5) a hooked angle open to the right, (6) a stroke within the hooked angle.

a —(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke across, (3) a horizontal stroke below, (4) a downstroke to the left crossing the right side of the horizontal stroke. Cf. 老.

126. **而** erh<sup>2</sup>, and, also:—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a dot just below, (3) a vertical stroke on the left side of the bottom, (4) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side of the bottom, (5) a stroke to the left inside, (6) a stroke to the right inside.

127. **耒** lui<sup>3</sup> or lei<sup>3</sup>, a plough:—(1) an oblique stroke at the top, (2) below a horizontal stroke, (3) below another horizontal stroke, (4) a hook facing to the left across, (5) a downstroke to the left on the left side of the hook, (6) a downstroke to the right on the right side of the hook.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side of the character.

128. **耳** erh<sup>3</sup>, the ear:—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a small vertical stroke to the left, (3) a vertical stroke to the right, (4) a horizontal stroke at the top inside, (5) a central horizontal stroke inside, (6) a stroke below. Cf. also 耳.

129. **聿** yü<sup>4</sup>, a pencil: (1) a horizontal stroke with a hook at the top, (2) below a comparatively long horizontal stroke, (3) below a horizontal stroke, (4) below a horizontal stroke, (5) below a horizontal stroke, (6) a vertical stroke across.

130. 肉 ju<sup>4</sup>, meat, flesh ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a stroke across the top, (4) a dot on the right side of the previous stroke, (5) below a stroke to the left, (6) a dot on the right side of the previous stroke.  
 a. —(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left with its vertical arm longer than the downstroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke at the top within, (4) below an upward stroke. Cf. 肘.

131. 臣 ch'ēn<sup>2</sup>, a statesman, a subject ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) below a vertical stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (4) below a horizontal stroke, (5) below a vertical stroke, (6) an angle open to the right at the bottom.

132. 自 tzü<sup>4</sup>, self, personal ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a vertical stroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a horizontal stroke at the top within, (5) a central horizontal stroke within, (6) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

*Note.*—It is used at the top of the character.

133. 至 chih<sup>4</sup>, to reach ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) below a pointed angle open to the right, (3) a dot on the right side, (4) below a horizontal stroke, (5) a vertical stroke across, (6) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

134.臼 chiu<sup>4</sup>, a mortar, a bowl ;—(1) a dot at the top of the left, (2) a vertical stroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a dot on the right side of the vertical stroke, (5) a dot on the left side of the hooked angle, (6) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

135. 舌 shé<sup>2</sup>, the tongue ;—(1) an upward stroke at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a vertical stroke across, (4) below a vertical stroke to the left, (5) a hooked angle open to the left, (6) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

136. 犁 ch'uān<sup>3</sup>, to oppose, contrary to ;—(1) a stroke at the top of the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a dot within, (4) a horizontal stroke to the right, (5) just below a hooked angle open to the right, (6) a vertical stroke across.

137. 舟 chou<sup>1</sup>, a boat, a vessel ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a horizontal stroke in the middle, (5) a dot above the horizontal stroke, (6) a dot below the horizontal stroke.

*Note.*—It is always used on the left side of the character.

138. 艮 kēn<sup>4</sup>, a limit, hard ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke below, (3) another horizontal

stroke, (4) a pointed angle open to the right, (5) a dot, (6) a downstroke to the right on the left side of the dot.

139.  sê<sup>4</sup>, colour ;—(1) a dot at the top of the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left at the top of the right, (3) below a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a vertical stroke in the middle, (5) horizontal stroke below, (6) a hooked angle open to the right at the bottom.

140.  ts'ao<sup>3</sup>, grass, straw ;—(1) an angle open to the right on the left side, (2) a downstroke to the left across, (3) a vertical stroke to the right of the downstroke to the left, (4) an angle open to the right, (5) a downstroke to the left across, (6) a vertical stroke on the right side of the downstroke to the left.

a —(1) an oblique downstroke to the left, (2) a small horizontal stroke crossing the middle of the former stroke, (3) an oblique downstroke to the right—the space between the two oblique strokes at the top is more extended than the space between the two at the foot, (4) a small horizontal stroke crossing the middle of the second oblique downstroke without touching other two strokes. Cf. .

*Note.*—In writing characters the variant is always used at the top with the exception of two characters where the radical is used.

141.  hu<sup>1</sup>, the tiger ;—(1) a vertical stroke at the top, (2) a small horizontal stroke on the right side of the vertical stroke, (3) below another horizontal stroke with a hook, (4) a downstroke to the left, (5) an oblique stroke on the right side of the downstroke to the left, (6) a hooked angle open to the right.

142.  ch'ung<sup>2</sup>, worms, insects ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a horizontal stroke below, (4) a vertical stroke across, (5) an oblique stroke at the bottom, (6) a dot on the right side of the oblique stroke.

143.  hsieh<sup>3</sup>, blood ;—(1) a dot at the top; vide R. 108.

144.  hsing<sup>2</sup>, to walk, to do ;—(1) vide R. 60; then (2) a dot at the top, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a hook facing to the left.

*Note.*—In writing characters this radical is split up into two and in between the second part of the character is written.

145.  i<sup>1</sup>, clothing ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a horizontal stroke, (3) a small downstroke to the left, (4) a hook facing to the right, (5) a dot, (6) a downstroke to the right on the left side of the dot.

a —(1) a dot at the top, (2) an angle open to the left below, much less than a right angle, (3) a vertical stroke, touching the

upper portion of the arm other than the horizontal one, (4) a small stroke at the top of the right side of the vertical stroke, (5) below it another small stroke. Cf. 衣.

*Note.*—The variant is used on the left side of the character.

146. 丂 hsi<sup>1</sup>, the west;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a vertical stroke to the left from the small horizontal stroke across the upper side of the hooked angle, (5) a vertical stroke to the right from the small horizontal stroke across the upper side of the hooked angle, (6) a horizontal stroke at the foot. Cf. 買.

#### SEVEN STROKES

147. 見 chien<sup>4</sup>, to see;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left, (3) a small horizontal stroke at the top within, (4) a small horizontal stroke below within, (5) an angle open to the left on the left side of the bottom, (6) a hooked angle open to the right on the right side of the bottom.

148. 角 chio<sup>2</sup>, a horn, an angle, a corner;—(1) a dot on the left side of the top, (2) an angle open to the left on the right side of the top, (3) a downstroke to the left, (4) a hooked angle open to the left, (5) a small horizontal stroke at the top within, (6) a vertical stroke across, (7) an upward stroke at the foot within.

149. 言 yen<sup>2</sup>, words, speech, to speak;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) below a horizontal stroke, (3) below a small horizontal stroke, (4) below another small horizontal stroke, (5) vide R. 30.

150. 谷 ku<sup>3</sup>, a valley, a hollow;—(1) a dot on the left side of the top, (2) a dot on the right side of the top, (3) a downstroke to the left on the left, (4) a downstroke to the right on the right side, (5) vide R. 30.

151. 豆 tou<sup>4</sup>, beans, peas;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) vide R. 30, (3) a dot to the left, (4) a dot to the right, (5) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

152. 犀 shih<sup>3</sup>, a pig, a hog;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) below a downstroke to the left, (3) a hook facing to the left, (4) a small downstroke to the left at the top of the left side of the hook, (5) below a small downstroke to the left on the left side of the hook, (6) a dot on the right side of the hook, (7) a downstroke to the right in between the hook and the dot.

153. 爪 ch'ih<sup>4</sup>, reptiles without feet, to discriminate, to loosen;—(1) a downstroke to the left at the top, (2) below a dot to the

left, (3) a dot to the right, (4) below a downstroke to the left, (5) a hook facing to the left, (6) a downstroke to the left at the top of the left side of the hook, (7) below a downstroke to the left on the left side of the hook.

154. **貝** pei<sup>4</sup>, cowries, shells, formerly used as currency;—(1) vide R. 109, (2) a dot on the left side of the bottom, (3) a dot on the right side of the bottom.

Or,

(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (3) a small horizontal stroke at the top within, (4) below a small horizontal stroke, (5) an angle open to the left on the left side of the bottom, (6) a dot on the right side of the bottom.

155. **赤** ch'ih<sup>4</sup>, red, the colour of fire, the south;—(1) vide R. 32, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a hook facing to the left, (4) a dot on the left side, (5) a dot on the right side.

156. **走** tsou<sup>3</sup>, to walk, to go;—(1) vide R. 32, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke on the right side of the vertical stroke, (4) a downstroke to the left on the left side of the vertical stroke, (5) a downstroke to the right at the bottom.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side of the character.

157. **足** tsu<sup>2</sup>, the foot;—(1) vide R. 30, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke on the right side of the vertical stroke, (4) a downstroke to the left on the left side of the vertical stroke, (5) a downstroke to the right at the bottom.

a.—(1) vide R. 30, (2) a vertical stroke to the right, (3) a small horizontal stroke on the right side of the vertical stroke, (4) a small vertical stroke to the left, (5) an upward stroke at the bottom. Cf. **止**.

*Note.*—The radical is used at the bottom and the variant is generally used on the left side of the character.

158. **身** shén<sup>1</sup>, the body;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a vertical stroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (4) a small horizontal stroke at the top within, (5) a central small horizontal stroke within, (6) below an upward stroke, (7) further below a downstroke to the left.

Or,

(1) a dot at the top, (2) a vertical stroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (4) a small horizontal stroke at the top within, (5) a central small horizontal stroke within, (6) an angle open to the left below.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side of the character.

159. 車 ch'ē<sup>1</sup>, a cart, a carriage or chariot, a barrow ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) vide R. 72, (3) a horizontal stroke below, (4) a vertical stroke across.

160. 辛 hsin<sup>1</sup>, bitter ;—(1) vide R. 117, (2) vide R. 24 at the foot.

161. 辰 ch'ēn<sup>2</sup>, division of time, early morning, 7 to 9 a.m. ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a downstroke to the left, (3) a central horizontal stroke on the right side of the downstroke, (4) below another horizontal stroke, (5) a hook facing to the right, (6) a dot on the right side of the downstroke, (7) a downstroke to the right in between the two.

162. 兮 ch'o<sup>4</sup>, walking ;—(1) a small downstroke to the left at the top, (2) a central small downstroke to the left, (3) below a small downstroke to the left, (4) a vertical stroke, (5) a small horizontal stroke on the right side of the vertical stroke, (6) vide R. 9.

a —(1) a dot at the top, (2) a double angle open to the left below, \* (3) a curved line to the right touching with its left side the foot of the double angle.

*Note.*—In writing characters, the variant is always used and is used at the bottom.

163. 邑 i<sup>4</sup>, a district city, a region ;—(1) vide R. 30, (2) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (3) a vertical stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke, (5) a hooked angle open to the right.

a 亾 —(1) a double angle open to the left, (2) a vertical stroke on the right side. Cf. 𠂔.

*Note.*—The variant is written on the right side of characters.

164. 酉 yu<sup>3</sup>, spirits made from newly-ripe millet in the eighth month ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke below on the left side, (3) a hooked angle open to the left, (4) a downstroke to the left from the horizontal stroke passing through the upper side of the hooked angle, (5) another vertical stroke of the same length to the right from the horizontal stroke through the upper side of the hooked angle, (6) a small horizontal stroke at the bottom of the two vertical strokes, (7) below another vertical stroke.

165. 采 pien<sup>4</sup>, to separate, to distinguish ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) below a dot to the left, (3) a dot to the right, (4) vide R. 75.

166. 里 li<sup>3</sup>, a lane, a street, the country, a measure of length reckoned at 360 paces or about 1,890 feet English measure ;—(1) vide R. 73, (2) a small horizontal stroke below, (3) a long vertical stroke from the upper side of the R. 73 and across the small horizontal stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

### EIGHT STROKES

167. 金 chin<sup>1</sup>, gold, precious;—(1) vide R. 11, (2) a small horizontal stroke, (3) another horizontal stroke below, (4) a vertical stroke from the small horizontal stroke through the second horizontal stroke, (5) a dot on the left side of the vertical stroke, (6) a dot on the right side of the vertical stroke, (7) a horizontal stroke at the foot.

168. 長 ch'ang<sup>2</sup>, long, of space or time; chang<sup>3</sup>, to grow, old, senior;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a horizontal stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke below, (5) below another long horizontal stroke, (6) a hook facing to the right, (7) a dot, (8) a downstroke to the right in between the two.

169. 門 mén<sup>2</sup>, a door;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left at the top of the right side of the vertical stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke within the hooked angle, (4) a horizontal stroke at the bottom of the hooked angle, (5) a small vertical stroke to the right, (6) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side of the small vertical stroke, (7) a small horizontal stroke within, (8) below another horizontal stroke.

*Note.*—In writing the second part of the character is always placed between the two portions of this radical.

170. 阜 fu<sup>4</sup>, a mound, abundant, fertile;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a vertical stroke, (3) a hooked angle open to the left at the top of the right side of the vertical stroke, (4) a horizontal stroke below, (5) below another hooked angle open to the left, (6) just below a horizontal stroke, (7) vide R. 24.

a 𠂔—(1) a double angle open to the left on the right side, (2) a vertical stroke on the left side. Cf. 𠂔.

*Note.*—The variant is written on the left side of the character.

171. 隸 tai<sup>4</sup>, to reach;—(1) vide variant b of R. 58, (2) a hook facing to the left across, (3) a dot on the right side of the hook, (4) just below another dot, (5) a dot on the left side of the hook, (6) a downstroke to the right in between the two.

*Note.*—This radical is written on the right side of the character.

172. 隹 chui<sup>1</sup>, short-tailed birds;—(1) vide variant a of R. 9, (2) a dot at the top, (3) below a horizontal stroke, (4) then another horizontal stroke, (5) next another horizontal stroke, (6) a vertical stroke across, (7) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

173. 雨 yü<sup>3</sup>, rain ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke to the left, (3) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (4) a central vertical stroke, (5) a dot on the left side of the central vertical stroke, (6) just below another dot, (7) a dot on the right side of the central vertical stroke, (8) just below another dot.

a. —(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a dot to the left below, (3) a horizontal stroke with a hook to the right touching the middle of the dot, (4) a central vertical stroke, (5) a smaller horizontal stroke on the left side of the central vertical stroke, (6) just below another smaller horizontal stroke, (7) a smaller horizontal stroke on the right side of the central vertical stroke, (8) just below another smaller horizontal stroke. Cf. 雷.

*Note.*—In writing characters only the variant is used at the top.

174. 青 ch'ing<sup>1</sup>, the colour of nature ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) below another small horizontal stroke, (3) a vertical stroke across, (4) a horizontal stroke, (5) a downstroke to the left, (6) a hooked angle open to the left, (7) a small horizontal stroke within, (8) just below another small horizontal stroke.

175. 非 fei<sup>1</sup>, wrong, bad, not, without ;—(1) a downstroke to the left, (2) a dot on the left side of the downstroke, (3) below another dot, (4) below the third dot, (5) a vertical stroke to the right, (6) a dot on the right side of the second vertical stroke, (7) below another dot, (8) below the third dot.

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the bottom.

#### NINE STROKES

176. 面 mien<sup>4</sup>, the surface, the face ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a dot below, (3) a vertical stroke to the left, (4) a hooked angle open to the left, (5) a vertical stroke to the left within, (6) a vertical stroke to the right within, (7) a small horizontal stroke at the top in between the two vertical strokes within, (8) a small horizontal stroke below in between the two vertical strokes within, (9) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

*Note.*—This radical is used either to the left or at the bottom.

177. 革 kē<sup>2</sup>, hides deprived of the hair, human skin ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a vertical stroke across to the left, (3) a vertical stroke across to the right, (4) a small horizontal stroke below, (5) vide R. 30, (6) a horizontal stroke below, (7) a vertical stroke across.

178. 章 wei<sup>2</sup>, leather, dressed hides, a thong ;—(1) a hooked angle open to the left at the top, (2) a vertical stroke across, (3) a horizontal stroke below, (4) vide R. 30, (5) a small horizontal stroke below, (6) a hooked angle open to the right, (7) a vertical stroke across.

179. 蔡 chiu<sup>3</sup>, leeks, onions ;—(1) vide R. 175, (2) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

180. 音 yin<sup>1</sup>, a sound, a tone, a musical note, pronunciation ;—(1) vide R. 117, (2) vide R. 72.

181. 頁 yeh<sup>4</sup>, a leaf, the page of a book, a leaf of a door, a lobe of the lungs or liver, the head ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a dot below, (3) vide R. 154.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the right side of the character.

182. 風 feng<sup>1</sup>, wind, breath ;—(1) a downstroke to the left on the left side, (2) a hooked angle open to the right with a horizontal stroke above on the right side, (3) a dot at the top within, (4) vide R. 142.

183. 飛 fei<sup>1</sup>, to fly, to go quickly, quick ;—(1) a double angle—one open to the left and the other open to the right at the top, (2) a dot at the top within the second angle open to the right, (3) just below another dot, (4) a dot, (5) just below a downstroke to the left, (6) a central vertical stroke, (7) a double angle—one open to the left across the downstroke and the central vertical stroke and the other open to the right, (8) a dot at the top within the second angle open to the right, (9) just below another dot.

184. 食 shih<sup>2</sup>, food, to eat, to drink ;—(1) a downstroke to the left on the left side of the top, (2) a downstroke to the right on the right side of the top, (3) a dot below, (4) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (5) below another horizontal stroke, (6) below that another horizontal stroke, (7) a hook facing to the right, (8) a dot on the right side of the hook facing to the right, (9) in between a downstroke to the right.

a —(1) a downstroke to the left on the left side of the top, (2) a downstroke to the right on the right side of the top, (3) a dot below, (4) a horizontal stroke with a hook, (5) below another horizontal stroke, (6) below that another horizontal stroke, (7) a hook facing to the right, (8) a dot on the right side of the hook facing to the right below the last horizontal stroke without touching it.

*Note.*—The variant is used on the left side of the character.

185. 首 shou<sup>3</sup>, the head, a chief, a leader, first, numeral adjunct of poems, plays, etc. ;—(1) a dot to the left of the top, (2) a

dot to the right of the top, (3) a horizontal stroke below, (4) then a dot, (5) vide R. 109.

186. 香 hsiang<sup>1</sup>, fragrant ;—(1) vide R. 115, (2) vide R. 72.

#### TEN STROKES

187. 馬 ma<sup>3</sup>, a horse ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a central horizontal stroke, (3) below another horizontal stroke, (4) a vertical stroke across, (5) a hooked angle open to the left with a vertical stroke at the top, (6) four dots from left to right within the angle open to the left.

188. 骨 ku<sup>3</sup>, a bone, a framework as of a fan or an umbrella ;—(1) a vertical stroke on the left side of the top, (2) an angle open to the left on the right side of the former stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke to the right within, (4) a small vertical stroke from the left end of the small horizontal stroke within, (5) a dot to the left, (6) a horizontal with a hook, (7) a down-stroke to the left, (8) a hooked angle open to the left, (9) a small horizontal stroke at the top within, (10) just below another small horizontal stroke.

a —(1) a vertical stroke on the left side of the top, (2) an angle open to the left on the right side of the former stroke, (3) a small horizontal stroke to the left within, (4) a small vertical stroke from the right end of the small horizontal stroke within, (5)—(10) same as the original radical. Cf. 骨.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side of the character.

189. 高 kao<sup>1</sup>, high, tall, lofty, exalted, noble, eminent, high in price, loud in tone, good in quality ;—(1) vide R. 8, (2) vide R. 30, (3) a vertical stroke to the left, (4) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (5) vide R. 30 within.

190. 髮 piao<sup>1</sup>, hair, shaggy ;—(1) a vertical stroke, (2) three small horizontal strokes from the top on the right side of the vertical stroke, (3) below a horizontal stroke, (4) vide R. 28 at the bottom, (5) three oblique strokes on the right side from the top.

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the top.

191. [囂] tou<sup>4</sup>, to quarrel, to contest, to fight, to provoke ;—(1) a vertical stroke to the left, (2) three small horizontal strokes from the top on the right side of the vertical stroke, (3) a small vertical stroke across, (4) three small horizontal strokes from the top, (5) a small vertical stroke across, (6) a hook facing to the left on the right side.

*Note.*—The second part of the character is placed in between the two portions of the radical.

192.  ch'ang<sup>4</sup>, sacrificial spirits made fermenting millet and fragrant herbs ;—(1) a small downstroke to the left, (2) a small downstroke to the right across, (3) four dots within the four angles beginning from the angle to the left in a clockwise way ; (4) vide R. 17 below ; (5) then a small downstroke to the left, (6) a hooked angle open to the right at the bottom.

193.  kē<sup>4</sup>, a large earthen pot, a large iron cauldron ;—(1) a small horizontal stroke at the top, (2) vide R. 30 below, (3) a vertical stroke to the left, (4) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (5) a dot on the left side of the top within, (6) a dot on the right side of the top within, (7) a small horizontal stroke below within, (8) just below a small vertical stroke within.

194.  kuei<sup>3</sup>, disembodied spirits, demons, spirits of the dead, ghost, goblin ;—(1) a dot on the left side of the top, (2) vide R. 102 below, (3) a downstroke to the left on the left side, (4) a hooked angle open to the right on the right side, (5) vide R. 28 within the hooked angle.

#### ELEVEN STROKES

195.  yū<sup>2</sup>, fish ;—(1) a downstroke to the left on the left side of the top, (2) an angle open to the left on the right side of the top, (3) vide R. 102 below, (4) four dots beginning from the left at the bottom.

*Note.*—This radical is used either to the left or at the bottom.

196.  niao<sup>3</sup>, birds ;—(1) a dot at the top, (2) a vertical stroke to the left, (3) an angle open to the left on the right side, (4) three small horizontal strokes beginning from the top, (5) a hooked angle open to the left below, (6) four dots beginning from the left within the hooked angle.

197.  lu<sup>3</sup>, natural salt, rock-salt, alkaline soil ;—(1) a small vertical stroke at the top, (2) a small horizontal stroke on the right side of the small vertical stroke, (3) a vertical stroke to the left, (4) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (5) a small downstroke to the left within, (6) a small downstroke to the right across, (7) four dots within four angles beginning from the left in a clockwise way, (8) a horizontal stroke at the bottom.

198.  lu<sup>4</sup>, a deer, a stag ;—(1) vide R. 53, (2) an angle open to the left within, (3) a small vertical stroke to the left, (4) a small vertical stroke to the right, (5) just below a horizontal stroke, (6) a hook facing to the right on the left side, (7) a dot on the right side of the hook, (8) vide R. 21 to the right.

199. 麥 mai<sup>4</sup>, wheat ;—(1) a horizontal stroke, (2) a vertical stroke across, (3) vide R. 9 on the left side of the vertical stroke, (4) vide R. 9 on the right side of the vertical stroke, (5) vide R. 11 at the foot of the vertical stroke, (6) vide R. 36 at the bottom.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side of the character.

200. 麻 ma<sup>2</sup>, hemp ;—(1) vide R. 53, (2) vide R. 75 to the left within, (3) vide R. 75 to the right within.

#### TWELVE STROKES

201. 黃 huang<sup>2</sup>, yellow, it was the Imperial colour ;—(1) a horizontal stroke at the top, (2) a small vertical stroke to the left across, (3) a small vertical stroke to the right across, (4) a smaller horizontal stroke below, (5) then a horizontal stroke, (6) below a vertical stroke to the left, (7) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (8) a small horizontal stroke within, (9) a vertical stroke across, (10) below a horizontal stroke, (11) at the bottom a dot to the left and (12) a dot to the right.

202. 粢 shu<sup>3</sup>, glutinous, a unit of weight ;—(1) vide R. 115, (2) at the foot a downstroke to the left on the left side and (3) a downstroke to the right on the right side, (4) below a hook facing to the left, (5) a dot at the top of the left side of the hook, (6) just below a dot, (7) a dot at the top of the right side of the hook, (8) just below a dot.

203. 黑 hei<sup>1</sup>, black, dark, evil, secret ;—(1) a small vertical stroke to the left, (2) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (3) a dot to the left within, (4) a dot to the right within, (5) below a horizontal stroke, (6) then another horizontal stroke, (7) a vertical stroke across, (8) a horizontal stroke at the foot of the vertical stroke, (9) four dots beginning from the left at the bottom.

204. 蕺 chih<sup>3</sup>, embroidery ;—(1) a small vertical stroke on the left side of the top, (2) a small vertical stroke on the right side of the top, (3) a dot to the left, (4) a dot to the right, (5) a horizontal stroke below, (6) just below a stroke to the left and (7) a stroke to the right, (8) below a vertical stroke to the left and (9) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (10) a vertical stroke across, (11) a dot on the left side of the vertical stroke, (12) a dot on the right side of the vertical stroke.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side of the character.

### THIRTEEN STROKES

205. 龜 min<sup>3</sup>, a toad, a tree-frog ;—(1) a small vertical stroke on the left side of the top, (2) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side of (1), (3) a small horizontal stroke below (1) on its right side, (4) a hooked angle open to the right below (3) on its right side, (5) a small vertical stroke on the left side of the hooked angle, (6) three small horizontal strokes beginning from the top in between (4) and (5), (7) a small horizontal stroke below the right arm of (2), (8) a vertical stroke below (7) on its left side, (9) a small hooked angle open to the left on the right side of (8), (10) two small horizontal strokes beginning from the top in between (8) and (9).

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the bottom of the character.

206. 𠤔 ting<sup>3</sup>, a tripod of bronze with two ears, a caldron, a sacrificial vessel regarded as a type of Imperial power, the empire ;—(1) vide R. 109, (2) a double angle—one open to the right and the other to the left, (3) a small horizontal stroke on the left side of the double angle, (4) just below a small downstroke to the left, (5) a vertical stroke, (6) a small vertical stroke on the right side of the top of the vertical stroke, (7) below a small horizontal stroke, (8) then another small horizontal stroke, (9) just below an angle open to the right.

*Note.*—This radical is always used at the bottom of the character.

207. 鼓 ku<sup>3</sup>, a drum, to drum ;—to begin from the left—(1) vide R. 24, (2) vide R. 151, (3) vide R. 24, (4) vide R. 29.

a —(1) vide R. 24, (2) vide R. 151, (3) vide R. 107 on the right side.

208. 鼠 shu<sup>3</sup> (also read ch'u<sup>3</sup>), a rat, a mouse, moles, squirrels ;—(1) vide R. 134 at the top, (2) below two small strokes, beginning from the top, (3) a hook facing to the right on the left side of the two small strokes, (4) two small strokes beginning from the top, (5) a hook facing to the right on the left side of the small strokes, (6) a pointed angle open to the right on the right side.

*Note.*—This radical is always used to the left side of the character.

### FOURTEEN STROKES

209. 鼻 pi<sup>2</sup>, the nose ;—(1) vide R. 132 at the top, (2) vide R. 102 in the middle, (3) vide R. 55 at the bottom.

*Note.*—This radical is used either to the left or on the right side of characters.

210. 齊 ch'i<sup>2</sup>, even, regular, uniform, all alike, to arrange ;—(1) vide R. 8 at the top, (2) just below two small strokes forming an

angle at the base, (3) below (2) a vertical stroke, (4) vide R. 18 on the left side of (3), (5) a dot on the right side of (3) and (6) in between a hook facing to the right, (7) a downstroke to the right on the right side of (6) and below (5), (8) at the bottom a downstroke to the left on the left side, (9) a vertical stroke to the right, (10) two small horizontal strokes beginning from the top in between them.

#### FIFTEEN STROKES

211.  ch'ih<sup>3</sup>, the upper incisors;—(1) vide R. 77 at the top, (2) below R. 9 to the left, (3) R. 9 to the right, (4) just below a horizontal stroke, (5) R. 9 to the left, (6) R. 9 to the right, (7) below an angle open to the right on the left side, (8) a vertical stroke on the right side.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side with the exception of one character where it is used at the bottom.

#### SIXTEEN STROKES

212.  lung<sup>2</sup>, the dragon, associated with rain, floods and geomancy; an emblem of imperialism;—to begin from the left—(1) vide R. 117 at the top, (2) below R. 74, (3) a double angle—one open to the right and the other to the left, (4) two small horizontal strokes—one touching the vertical side of the upper angle of the double angle and the other touching the foot of the vertical side of the lower angle of the double angle, (5) a hooked angle open to the right at the bottom, (6) three small horizontal strokes beginning from the top within the hooked angle.

213.  kuei<sup>1</sup>, the tortoise, longevity;—(1) a small downstroke to the left on the left side of the top, (2) an angle open to the left on the right side of the top, (3) a double angle open to the right on the left side, (4) an angle open to the left on the right side of (3) and below (1) and (2), (5) an angle open to the left on the left side of the lower part of the double angle, (6) a longer central stroke touching the lower part of the double angle, (7) below it a small horizontal stroke, (8) below another angle open to the left on the left side of the lower part of the double angle, (9) a longer central stroke touching the lower part of the double angle, (10) below it a small horizontal stroke, (11) a small horizontal stroke below the right arm of (4), (12) a vertical stroke below (11) touching it on its left side, (13) an angle open to the left on the right side of (12), (14) a downstroke to the left within the angle, (15) a downstroke to the right across within the angle, (16) a horizontal stroke below.

## SEVENTEEN STROKES

214.  yo<sup>4</sup>, a flute, a tube;—(1) vide R. 11 at the top, (2) below a small horizontal stroke, (3) then R. 30 to the left, (4) R. 30 in the middle, (5) R. 30 to the right, (6) a vertical stroke to the left, (7) a hooked angle open to the left on the right side, (8) in between a small horizontal stroke, (9) a small vertical stroke to the left within across the small horizontal stroke, (10) another small vertical stroke on the right side within across the small horizontal stroke.

*Note.*—This radical is always used on the left side of the character.

---

## FIRST LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### I. PERSONAL PRONOUNS

(Subject or Nominative and Object or Accusative are the same.)

1. 我 wo<sup>3</sup>, I.
2. 你 ni<sup>3</sup>, you.
3. 您 nin<sup>2</sup>, you sir—a polite form of address like Hindi āp and Bengali āpani.
4. 他 t'a<sup>1</sup>, he.
5. 她 t'a<sup>1</sup>, she.
6. 它 t'a<sup>1</sup>, it—very rarely used.

7. 們 mēn<sup>2</sup> is added to the singular of personal pronouns to form the plural: as—**我們** wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn<sup>2</sup>, we.

The singular and plural of nouns are alike.

8. 的 ti<sup>4</sup> is added to form possessive case; as—**他的** t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, his.

9. **自己** tzü<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>3</sup>, self—referring to the person in question: as: **他自己** t'a<sup>1</sup> tzü<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>3</sup>, himself.

1. Cantonese, ngo; Hakka, nga, ngo; Foochow, ngo, ngwai; Amoy, nga; Japanese, ga; Chinese old forms are nga, ga, go, kan, a. Cf. Tib. ཀ ཉ; Mikir, ne; Naga, ni; Burmese, ngā; Tamil, nān, yān; Malayalam, nān (pronounced 'niān'); col. Canarese, nānu; col. Telugu, nēnu. Cf. also Sanskrit, mām (acc. sing.), mā-y-ā (Inst. sing.), mā-hyam (dat. sing.), mād (abl. sing.), mā-ma (gen. sing.), mā-y-i (loc. sing.) and also the following unaccented forms: sing. acc. mā, sing. dat. and gen. me (Gk. μοι), dual acc. dat. and gen. nau (Gk. ναοι), plur. acc. dat. and gen. nas (Lat. nōs); Avestic, no, na (acc. plur.), no (dat. and gen. plur.); Lith. mus. (for nus) and Arabic ان (ānā) nom. sing., نحن (nāhnu) nom. dual, نحن (nāhnu) nom. plur., ن (nā) acc. and gen. dual and plur.

2. Cf. Tamil, nī, nin, nun (you); Telugu, nī, nin; Canarese, nīn, nīnu, nī, nin; Malayalam, nī, nin; Brahui, nī, nā.

4. Old Chinese, tat; Japanese, ta. Cf. Skt. tad; Gk. to, Lat. is-te, is-ta, is-tud; Lith. tas; Russ. tot; Eng. that.

7. Cf. Oriya plur. suffix mān or māne which is not identical with the E. H. plur. manāi 'men' from Skt. mānava 'man' as A. F. Rudolf Hoernle (A Comparative Grammar of the Gaudian Languages, p. 189), nor with māna (measure) as John Beams (A Comparative Grammar of the Modern Aryan Languages of India, II, 199).

8. Cf. Dravidian ti or ti, a possessive case-ending and is used to convert substantives into adjectives through the relation subsisting between possessives. The genitive case-affix is adjectival.

## II. VERBS

10. 是 shih<sup>4</sup>, to be and 11. 有 yü<sup>3</sup>, to have, are conjugated alike in all tenses: as—

我 是 wo<sup>3</sup> shih<sup>4</sup>, I am or I was. 他 有 t'a<sup>1</sup> yü<sup>3</sup>, he has or he had.

## III. ADVERBS OF NEGATION

12. 不 pu<sup>4</sup>, not, is used with 'to be' verb and not with 'to have'.

13. 没 mei<sup>2</sup>, not, is employed with 'to have' as well

as in connection with past action and never with 'to be' verb; as:—**不 我 没 有** pu<sup>4</sup>, wo<sup>3</sup> mei<sup>2</sup> yü<sup>3</sup>, No, I have not.

### Exercise

1. I am. 2. We are. 3. You are. 4. He is. 5. They are. 6. I have.
7. We have. 8. You have. 9. He has. 10. They have. 11. I was. 12. We were. 13. You were. 14. He was. 15. They were. 16. I had. 17. We had. 18. You had. 19. He had. 20. They had. 21. I have not. 22. We have not. 23. You have not. 24. He has not. 25. They have not. 26. Myself. 27. Yourself. 28. Himself. 29. Ourselves. 30. Themselves.

\* 13. Cf. Skt. mā; Gk. μή; Egyptian, m or am; and Arabic لَا mā; compare also Tib. མ mi.

## SECOND LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### NOUNS

1. 父 fu<sup>4</sup>, father.
2. 母 mu<sup>3</sup>, mother.
3. 親 ch'in<sup>1</sup>, parent, relative, self.
4. 父親 fu<sup>4</sup>.ch'in<sup>1</sup>, father.
5. 母親 mu<sup>3</sup>.ch'in<sup>1</sup>, mother.
6. 父母親 fu<sup>4</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>.ch'in<sup>1</sup>, parents.
7. 人 jēn<sup>2</sup>, man.
8. 女 nü<sup>3</sup>, a woman, feminine.
9. 女人 nü<sup>3</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>, a woman.
10. 兒 êrh<sup>2</sup>, a son, a child. It is a noun indicator. In Peking it is used in the formation of nouns and adjectives.
11. 子 tzü<sup>3</sup>, a son. It is also a noun indicator. It is much used in the formation of nouns.
12. 兒子 êrh<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>, a son.
13. 女兒 nü<sup>3</sup>.êrh<sup>2</sup>, a daughter.
14. 小孩子 hsiao<sup>3</sup>.hai<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>, a boy.
15. 小 hsiao<sup>3</sup>, little, small.

16. 孩 hai<sup>2</sup>, a child.
17. 女子 nü<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>, a girl.
18. 兄弟 hsiung<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>, a brother.
19. 姐妹 chie<sup>3</sup>.mo<sup>4</sup>, a sister.
20. „ 姐 chie<sup>3</sup>.chie<sup>3</sup>, an elder sister.
21. 弟弟 ti<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>, a younger brother.
22. 妹妹 mo<sup>4</sup>.mo<sup>4</sup>, a younger sister.
23. 叔叔 shu<sup>2</sup>.shu<sup>2</sup> } an  
„ 父 shu<sup>2</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup> } uncle.
24. „ 母 shu<sup>2</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup> } an  
„ 字 „ ku<sup>1</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup> } aunt.
25. 舅父 chiu<sup>3</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>, 舅 chiu<sup>3</sup>.chiu<sup>3</sup>, a maternal uncle.
26. 舅母 chiu<sup>3</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>, a maternal aunt.
27. 祖父 tsu<sup>3</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>, a grandfather.
28. 祖母 tsu<sup>3</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>, a grandmother.
29. 朋友 p'êng<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>, a friend.

### Exercise

1. My brother.
2. Their sister.
3. Your grand-father.
4. Her maternal uncle.
5. His elder sister.
6. He is my friend.
7. She is my mother.
8. He is my aunt.

## THIRD LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### NUMERALS

#### A. CARDINALS

1. 一 i<sup>1</sup>, one.
2. 二 êrh<sup>4</sup>, two.
3. 三 san<sup>1</sup>, three.
4. 四 ssü<sup>4</sup>, four.
5. 五 wu<sup>3</sup>, five.
6. 六 liu<sup>4</sup>, six.
7. 七 ch'i<sup>1</sup>, seven.
8. 八 pa<sup>1</sup>, eight.
9. 九 chiu<sup>3</sup>, nine.
10. 十 shih<sup>2</sup>, ten.
11. 零 ling<sup>2</sup>, zero (0), cipher, fraction.
12. 百 pai<sup>3</sup>, hundred.
13. 千 ch'ien<sup>1</sup>, thousand.
14. 兩 liang<sup>3</sup>, two. In counting of persons or things, it is more commonly used than êrh<sup>4</sup>.

15. 分 fêñ<sup>1</sup>, to divide, division, a tenth, a part.
16. 半 pan<sup>4</sup>, half, to halve.
17. 加 chia<sup>1</sup>, to add to, to increase, to affix.
18. 減 chien<sup>3</sup>, to diminish, to subtract, to lessen.
19. 如 ju<sup>2</sup>, as, like.
20. 回 hui<sup>2</sup>, to return, to revolve, time.
21. 見 chien<sup>4</sup>, to see, equal to (=).
22. 之 chih<sup>1</sup>, the personal pronoun he, she or it; the demonstrative pronoun this, that, these, etc.; to go, to proceed; the sign of genitive, hereafter indicated by 'of' or 's.
23. 個 ko<sup>4</sup>, piece; a numerative or classifier of many nouns, hereafter indicated by 'piece'.

#### B. ORDINALS

The ordinals are formed by adding 第 ti<sup>4</sup>, 'number' before the cardinals, as:—

第一 ti<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>, first.  
 .. 二 ti<sup>4</sup>-êrh<sup>4</sup>, second.

1. Cantonese, ik; Swatow, ék; Amoy, ek; Foochow, ek, ik. Cf. Skt. éka; Lat. aequ-us, equ-al (same as one); English, equal, equity, equator, equation; cf. also Telugu, éka, oka; the sub-Himalayan languages, ako in Miri, akhet in Naga.  
 2. Cf. Dravidian ir (two) and Brahui, irat.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. Eleven = ten one.
2. Twenty-two = two ten, two.
3. Thirty-three = three ten, three.
4. Two hundred and eighty-one = two hundred, eight ten, one.
5. Three hundred and four = three hundred, cypher, four.
6. Nineteen hundred and forty-nine = one thousand, nine hundred, four ten, nine.
7. Five thousand and three = five thousand, cypher, three.
8. Number seventeen = number ten seven.
9. The seventeenth = number ten seven piece.
10. One-third = three division's (-'s =  $\frac{1}{3}$  chih<sup>1</sup>) one.
11. Three-tenths = ten division's three.
12. Four times four is sixteen = four four ten six.
13. Twice three is six = two three like six.
14. One half = one half.
15. Five added to two is seven = five piece add two piece is seven piece.
16. Nine minus three is six = nine piece subtract three piece is six piece.
17. Once addition = add one time.
18. Once subtraction = subtract one time.
19. Thrice three makes nine = three three see nine.
20. Fifty-five.
21. Seventy-seven.
22. One-fourth = four division's one.
23. Two-third = three division's two.
24. The hundredth = number hundred.
25. The thousandth = number thousand.

## FOURTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 誰 shui<sup>2</sup>, who. *shui*

2. 誰的 shui<sup>2</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, whose.

3. 甚麼 shēn<sup>2</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>, what ?  
Interrogative sentences generally end in 麼 mo<sup>3</sup>.\*

4. 這 chē<sup>4</sup>, this.

5. 那 na<sup>4</sup>, that ; na<sup>3</sup>, which.

6. 裏 li<sup>3</sup>, in.

7. 這裏 chē<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, here.

8. 那裏 na<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, there : na<sup>3</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, where.

9. 些 hsieh<sup>1</sup>, a few, some ; a sign of the comparative degree.

10. 這些 chē<sup>4</sup>-hsieh<sup>1</sup>, these.

11. 那,, nā<sup>4</sup>-hsieh<sup>1</sup>, those.

12. 一,, i<sup>1</sup>-hsieh<sup>1</sup>, some, a few.

13. 樣 yang<sup>4</sup>, a kind, a manner.

14. 這樣 chē<sup>4</sup>-yang<sup>4</sup>, such.

15. 一樣 i<sup>1</sup>-yang<sup>4</sup>, same.

16. 頭 t'ou<sup>2</sup>, top, end, head.

17. 裏頭 li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>2</sup>, inside.

18. 怎麼 tsēn<sup>3</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>, how.

19. 多 to<sup>1</sup>, many, much.

20. 小 hsiao<sup>3</sup>, little, small.

21. 少 shao<sup>3</sup>, few, short of, wanting in.

22. 多少 to<sup>1</sup>-shao<sup>3</sup>, how many ?

23. 爲 wei<sup>4</sup>, because of, for, on account of, by, to.

24. 爲甚麼 wēi<sup>4</sup>-shēn<sup>2</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>, why ?

25. 幾 chi<sup>1</sup>, several, many, how many ? how much ?

26. 時 shih<sup>2</sup>, time, opportunity.

27. 幾時 chi<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>, when.

28. 同同 t'ung<sup>2</sup>-t'ung<sup>2</sup>, ali.

29. 在 tsai<sup>4</sup>, at, on. To 'be' verb is to be translated with it when used with 'adverb of place' i.e. here, there, etc.

\* Cf. Arabic لِمَا, what ?

21. Chinese, shao<sup>4</sup>, young ; Cf. Skt. sāva, the young of any animal (also applied to human beings ; e.g. muni-sāva, a young sage).

### Exercise (with hints)

1. Who is that man ? = that piece man is who.
2. He is my father = he is my father.
3. Who is your friend ? = your friend is who.
4. That man is my friend = that piece man is my friend.
5. Where are you ? = you at where.
6. I am here = I at here.
7. Is this mine ? = this piece is mine.
8. Is that yours ? = that piece is yours.
9. What is that ? = that is what.
10. Who are you ? you are who.
11. She is inside = she is inside.
12. Like father, like son = like (父 shih<sup>4</sup>) father like son.

---

## FIFTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY (MAINLY VERBS)

<p>1. 去 ch'ü<sup>4</sup>, to go.</p> <p>2. 來 lai<sup>2</sup>, to come.</p> <p>3. 看 k'an<sup>4</sup>, to look.</p> <p>4. 見 chien<sup>4</sup>, to see.</p> <p>5. 看 見 k'an<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>4</sup>, to see.</p> <p>6. 做 tso<sup>4</sup>, to do, to make.</p> <p>7. 拿 na<sup>2</sup>, to take.</p> <p>8. 拿 來 na<sup>2</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>, to bring.</p> <p>9. 吃 ch'i<sup>1</sup>, to eat.</p> <p>10. 飲 in<sup>3</sup>, to drink.</p> <p>11. 走 tsou<sup>3</sup>, to walk, to go.</p> <p>12. 等 têng, to wait.</p> <p>13. 玩 wan<sup>2</sup>, to play.</p> <p>14. 想 hsiang<sup>3</sup>, to think, to ponder.</p> <p>15. 試 試 shih<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, to try.</p>	<p>16. 叫 chiao<sup>4</sup>, to call.</p> <p>17. 笑 hsiao<sup>4</sup>, to laugh.</p> <p>18. 聽 t'ing<sup>1</sup>, to listen to.</p> <p>19. 買 mai<sup>3</sup>, to buy.</p> <p>20. 賣 mai<sup>4</sup>, to sell.</p> <p>21. 告 kao<sup>4</sup>, to tell, to inform, to announce.</p> <p>22. 訴 su<sup>4</sup>, to tell, to state, to inform, to accuse, to complain.</p> <p>23. 告 訴 kao<sup>4</sup>-su<sup>4</sup>, to tell.</p> <p>24. 跑 p'ao<sup>2</sup>, to run.</p> <p>25. 知 chih<sup>1</sup>, to know.</p> <p>26. 道 tao<sup>4</sup>, way.</p> <p>27. 知 道 chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>, to know.</p> <p>28. 道 兒 tao<sup>4</sup>-êrh, a road.</p> <p>29. 認 jên<sup>4</sup>, to recognise.</p>
---	---

1. Cf. Bengali, Guzrati, Assamese, Maithili  $\checkmark$  chhuṭ, to go quickly; Hindi,  $\checkmark$  chhūṭ; Marathi,  $\checkmark$  suṭ; Prakrit,  $\checkmark$  chhūḍh.

3. Cf. Dravidian  $\checkmark$  kāṇ to sē, to look.

6. Cf. Skt. chi- in chi-noti, chayati, constructs, prepares; Av. Ķyao-thna, deed, work; Gk. ποι- (by labialisation) in ποιέω, to make, to create, to compose; O. Slav. činu, order; N. Slav. činiti, to make; Bulgarian, činja, to do; Russ. činu, rank, 'tchin'.

25. Old sound, chit; cf. Skt.  $\checkmark$  cit, to perceive.

29. Cf. Skt.  $\checkmark$  jan, jñā in jānāti, he knows, jñāta, known; Av. Zan, in ā-Zainti, knowledge, Zan-ta, known; Armenian, can, in can-eay, I knew; Gk. γνω in γνω-τός, known; Lat. recognoscere, to recognise; Goth. kunnan; ME. pres. t. kann or can, with senses to understand, to be able; Mod. E. know.

30. 識 shih<sup>4</sup>, to recognise.

31. 認 識 jēn<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, to recognise.

32. 問 wēn<sup>4</sup>, to ask.

33. 上 shang<sup>4</sup>, above, upon, to.

34. 下 hsia<sup>4</sup>, below, down.

35. 坐 tso<sup>4</sup>, to sit.

36. 坐下 tso<sup>4</sup>-hsia<sup>4</sup>, to sit down.

37. 紿 kei<sup>3</sup>, to give, to grant, to issue, to provide.

38. 請 ch'ing<sup>3</sup>, please; to invite, to request.

39. 了 liao<sup>3</sup>, to finish, to

complete; past, over; past tense (ed). When it is used as a final particle, it is pronounced 'lo'.

40. 要 yao<sup>4</sup>, to wish, to desire, to want.

There is no conjugation of a verb in the Chinese language. The same form of the verb is used in different voices, moods, numbers and persons. The past and future tenses are generally formed by means of the addition to a sentence of the words 了 liao<sup>3</sup> and 要 yao<sup>4</sup> respectively. The former is used after the verb and the latter before the verb.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. Where are you going? = you go where.
2. We are going there = we go there.
3. They are coming here = they come here.
4. My son has come = my son come ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
5. Has he gone? = he go ed not have; or he go ed mo<sup>3</sup> (mo<sup>3</sup>).
6. Has the friend come? = friend come ed not have.
7. The man does not see = man not (pu<sup>4</sup>) look see.
8. The woman has not seen it = woman not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have look see.
9. The boy is not doing this = this piece boy not (pu<sup>4</sup>) do.
10. The girl has not done that = that piece girl not (mei<sup>2</sup>) do.
11. The man did not wait for me = man not (mei<sup>2</sup>) wait me.
12. He will buy it = he want buy.
13. Call him here = call him come.
14. It is no child's play = not is play child's (érh<sup>2</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>).
15. What did you ask him? = you ask him what.
16. Come up = up come.
17. Please sit down = please sit down.
18. She is not eating = she not eat.
19. My uncle did not do it = my uncle not (mei<sup>2</sup>) do.
20. He saw you, but you did not see him = he look see you lo, you not look see ed him.
21. He saw you, but you did not see him = he look see you lo, you not look see ed him.

22. I had gone before he came = he not come ed I walk ed.
23. Has your younger sister taken it? = your younger sister take ed not have.
24. No, she has not taken it = she not take.
25. What do you want? = you want what.
26. What is your maternal uncle bringing? = your maternal uncle bring what.
27. He is bringing nothing = he not bring what.
28. What does he buy? = he buy what.
29. I do not know what he buys = I not know he buy what.
30. What do you sell? = you sell what.
31. I do not know what you sell = I not know you sell what.
32. I shall ask him to wait for me = I want invite him wait me.
33. My brother does not know where this road leads to = my brother not know this is to (shang<sup>4</sup>) where's road.
34. The girl is calling her mother = girl call her mother.
35. Good-bye = please.

## SIXTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 先 hsien<sup>1</sup>, before, past deceased.
2. 生 shêng<sup>1</sup>, to be born, to beget, to be alive; life.
3. 先生 hsien<sup>1</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>, before born; a title of respect, equivalent to English 'Mr.' or 'Sir'; a teacher.
4. 學 hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, to learn, to study.
5. 學生 hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>, a pupil, a student.
6. 夢 mung<sup>4</sup>, a dream.
7. 家 chia<sup>1</sup>, family, home, people.
8. 人家 jên<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, people.
9. 書 shu<sup>1</sup>, a book.
10. 字 tzü<sup>4</sup>, character, letter.
11. 堂 t'ang<sup>2</sup>, a hall.

12. 學堂 hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-t'ang<sup>2</sup>, a school.
13. 大學堂 tâ<sup>4</sup> hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-t'ang<sup>2</sup>, a university.
14. 大 ta<sup>4</sup>, great, big.
15. 本 pên<sup>3</sup>, the root; numerative of books, documents, etc.
16. 枝 chih<sup>1</sup>, a branch, a prop.; numerative of flowers, pens, arrows, etc.
17. 鉛 ch'ien<sup>1</sup>, lead.
18. 石 shih<sup>2</sup>, stone, rock, mineral.
19. 粉 fên<sup>3</sup>, powder, rice-flour.
20. 筆 pi<sup>3</sup>, a pen.
21. 鉛 „ ch'ien<sup>1</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>, a lead pencil.
22. 石 „ shih<sup>2</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>, a slate pencil.
23. 粉 „ fên<sup>3</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>, chalk for the blackboard.

We have seen above that in Chinese different numeratives or classifiers are used for different nouns, e.g.—

- 個 人 i<sup>1</sup> ko<sup>4</sup> jên<sup>2</sup>, a man.
- 本 書 i<sup>1</sup> pên<sup>3</sup> shu<sup>1</sup>, a book.
- 枝 筆 i<sup>1</sup> chih<sup>1</sup> pi<sup>3</sup>, a pen.

However in all these cases 個 ko<sup>4</sup> may alone serve the purpose.

## VERBS

24. 教 chiao <sup>1</sup> , to teach.	31. 求 ch'in <sup>2</sup> , to beg, to pray, to beseech, to implore.
25. 讀 tu <sup>2</sup> , to read, to study.	32. 作 tso <sup>4</sup> , to make, to do.
26. 寫 hsieh <sup>3</sup> , to write.	33. „ 夢 tso <sup>4</sup> -mung <sup>4</sup> , to dream.
27. 洗 hsi <sup>3</sup> or si <sup>3</sup> , to wash, to bathe, to purify.	34. 唱 ch'ang <sup>4</sup> , to sing.
28. 濡 tsao <sup>3</sup> , to bathe.	35. 說 shuo <sup>1</sup> (sho), to speak.
29. 洗 濡 hsi <sup>3</sup> -tsao <sup>3</sup> , to bathe.	36. 講 chiang <sup>3</sup> , to speak, to say, to explain, to discuss, to preach.
30. 帶 tai <sup>4</sup> , to bring, to carry.	37. 把 pa <sup>3</sup> , to take, to take hold of, to grasp.

Verbs do not change their forms in Chinese with the change in person and number, e.g.—

I write (寫 hsieh<sup>3</sup>).

We write	„
You (sing.) write	„
You (plur.) write	„
He writes	„
They write	„

In Chinese 有 *yu<sup>3</sup>*, 'to have' also represents English 'there is' and 'there are': as.—

有一個人 yu<sup>3i</sup> ko<sup>4</sup> jen<sup>2</sup>, there is a man.

Present Indicative, Present Progressive and an emphatic sentence in English are represented by the same verbal form in Chinese; e.g.—

女人唱 nü³-jēn² ch'ang⁴ (= woman sing). { The woman sings.  
The woman is singing.  
The woman does sing.

Besides 了 liao<sup>3</sup>, the following Chinese words are used in forming the Past Tense in the Active Voice:—

1. 已 經 i³-ching¹, already—both the words mean already.	finish, past, over.
2. 過 kuo⁴ to pass, to	3. 來 着 lai²-cho² where the latter one means 'to place', 'to put on'.

### EXAMPLES :

(a) 已 經 讀 了 書 i<sup>3</sup>-ching<sup>1</sup> tu<sup>2</sup> lia<sup>3</sup> shu<sup>1</sup>.

- (b) .. .. tu<sup>2</sup> lia<sup>3</sup> shu<sup>1</sup>.
- (c) .. 過 .. tu<sup>2</sup> kuo<sup>4</sup> shu<sup>1</sup>.
- (d) .. 書 來 着 tu<sup>2</sup> shu<sup>1</sup> lai<sup>2</sup>-cho<sup>2</sup>.

Each of the above examples has got four renderings into English:—

1. (He) has read the book.
2. (He) read the book.
3. (He) was reading the book.
4. (He) had read the book.

The Future Tense in the Active Voice is formed by adding the following Chinese words:—

1. 要 yao<sup>4</sup>, shall or will; to wish.
2. 就 chiu<sup>4</sup>, shall or will. It should be noted here that this word is a great help to the beginners as it expresses other ideas also, e.g., then, and, but, only.

Examples of the future tense:

1. 他 要 來 t'a<sup>1</sup> yao<sup>4</sup> lai<sup>2</sup>
2. .. 就 .. t'a<sup>1</sup> chiu<sup>4</sup> lai<sup>2</sup>

} He will come.

English 'should' and 'should have' are generally represented by 就 chiu<sup>4</sup> in Chinese; as;—

我 就 讀 書 wo<sup>3</sup> chiu<sup>4</sup> tu<sup>2</sup> shu<sup>1</sup>, I should read or should have read a book.

The Subjunctive Mood in the Active Voice is often expressed by means of the following Chinese words:—

1. 或 huo<sup>4</sup>, if, perhaps.
2. 或 者 huo<sup>4</sup>-che<sup>3</sup>, perhaps; where the latter one is a pronoun representing this, that, it, which, what, he, who, and those who. It is also a particle giving adjectival or adverbial sense to a word to which it is added.
3. 許 hsü<sup>3</sup>, may or might.
4. 也 許 yeh<sup>3</sup>-hsü<sup>3</sup>, also might, where the former one means 'also'.

### EXAMPLES :

1. I may or might ( 許 hsü<sup>3</sup>) read the book.
2. I may have or might have ( 也 許 yeh<sup>3</sup>-hsü<sup>3</sup>) read (tu<sup>2</sup>) the book (shu<sup>1</sup>) (lai<sup>2</sup>-cho<sup>2</sup>).

Or

I may have or might have ( 或 者 huo<sup>4</sup>-che<sup>3</sup>) read (tu<sup>2</sup>) the book (shu<sup>1</sup>) (lai<sup>2</sup>-cho<sup>2</sup>).

The subject of the verb in the Imperative Mood in the Active voice in Chinese is omitted as in English and this mood is usually expressed with the help of the word 罷 pa<sup>4</sup> which is often used at the end of a sentence, e.g.—

- (a) 去 罷 ch'ü<sup>4</sup> pa<sup>4</sup>, be off, go away.
- (b) 他 走 罷 t'a<sup>1</sup> tsou<sup>3</sup> pa<sup>4</sup>, let him go.

The following sentences illustrate the use of the Infinitive Mood in Chinese:—

- (a) To teach ( 教 chiao<sup>1</sup>) — Present.
- (b) To have taught (chiao<sup>1</sup>-liao<sup>3</sup> << = Eng. ed >>) — Perfect.
- (c) To be about to teach ( 要 yao<sup>4</sup> chiao<sup>1</sup>) — Future.

Examples of the Imperfect Participle:—

- (a) Reading (tu<sup>2</sup>) the book (shu<sup>1</sup>).
- (b) Reading (tu<sup>2</sup> cho<sup>2</sup> << = Eng. -ing >>) the book.

The following are the indicators of the verbs in the Passive Voice:—

<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. <b>叫</b> chiao<sup>4</sup>, to cause, to let.</li> <li>2. <b>挨</b> ai<sup>2</sup>, to suffer.</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>3. <b>被</b> pei<sup>4</sup>, to suffer.</li> <li>4. <b>受</b> shou<sup>4</sup>, to suffer, to bear, to receive, to endure.</li> </ol>
--	---

## EXAMPLES:

(a) The book is or is being read  
(Present Indicative or Present Progressive)

(1) book read ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).  
(2) book cause (chiao<sup>4</sup>)  
man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) read ed  
(liao<sup>3</sup>).

(b) The book has been read  
(Present Perfect)

The book was read (Past Indicative)

The book was being read  
(Past Progressive)

The book had been read  
(Past Perfect)

(3) book suffer (挨 ai<sup>2</sup>)  
read ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).

(4) book suffer (被  
pei<sup>4</sup>) read ed  
(liao<sup>3</sup>).

(5) book suffer (shou<sup>4</sup>)  
read ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).

(1) book suffer (ai<sup>2</sup>)  
read ed.

(2) book suffer (ai<sup>2</sup>)  
ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) read ed.

(3) book cause (chiao<sup>4</sup>)  
man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) read ed.

(4) book suffer (pei<sup>4</sup>)  
man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) read ed.

(5) book suffer (pei<sup>4</sup>)  
people (人家  
jēn<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>) read ed.

(c) The book will be read  
(Future Indicative)

The book would be read  
(Conditional)

(1) book will (要 yao<sup>4</sup>)  
suffer (ai<sup>2</sup>) read ed.

(2) book will (yao<sup>4</sup>)  
suffer (ai<sup>2</sup>) read.

(3) book then (就 chiu<sup>4</sup>)  
suffer (ai<sup>2</sup>) read ed.

(4) book then (chiu<sup>4</sup>)  
will (yao<sup>4</sup>) suffer  
(ai<sup>2</sup>) read.

(5) book in future (將  
來 chiag<sup>1</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>) will  
(yao<sup>4</sup>) read.

(d) The book would have been read (Conditional)	(1) book then (就 chiu <sup>4</sup> ) suffer (ai <sup>2</sup> ) ed read ed.  (2) book then (chiu <sup>4</sup> ) will (yao <sup>4</sup> ) cause (chiao <sup>4</sup> ) man read ed.
(e) The book may or might be read (Subjunctive Mood)	(1) book may or might (許 hsü <sup>3</sup> ) suffer (被 pei <sup>4</sup> ) read.  (2) book may or might (hsü <sup>3</sup> ) cause (chiao <sup>4</sup> ) man read.  (3) book may or might (hsü <sup>3</sup> ) cause (chiao <sup>4</sup> ) people (人 家 jen <sup>2</sup> . chia <sup>1</sup> ) read.  (4) book may or might (hsü <sup>3</sup> ) suffer (ai <sup>2</sup> ) read.
(f) The book may or might have been read (Subjunctive Mood)	= book also may or might (也 許 yeh <sup>3</sup> . hsü <sup>3</sup> ) suffer (ai <sup>2</sup> ) ed read ed.
(g) Let the book be read (Im- perative Mood)	= (1) then (就 chiu <sup>4</sup> ) cause (chiao <sup>4</sup> ) man read book.  (2) cause (chiao <sup>4</sup> ) book suffer (ai <sup>2</sup> ) read.
(h) To be read (Infinitive Mood)	= <u>suffer</u> (ai <sup>2</sup> ) read.
To have been read (Perfect Infinitive Mood)	= <u>suffer</u> (ai <sup>2</sup> ) <u>ed</u> (liao <sup>3</sup> ) <u>read</u> <u>ed</u> (liao <sup>3</sup> ).

### Exercise (with hints)

1. A teacher is teaching ten students = one piece teacher teach ten piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) students.
2. The student is reading a book = student read one piece (pēn<sup>3</sup>) book.
3. This is my book = this piece is my book.
4. He should read the book = he should (chiu<sup>4</sup>) read book.
5. She should have read the book = she should have (chiu<sup>4</sup>) read book.
6. The boy has a pen = boy has one piece (chih<sup>1</sup>) pen.
7. I am going to school = I go school.
8. They are going to university = they go university.
9. Four students will read four books = four piece students will read four piece book.
10. Here is a piece of chalk = one piece (chih<sup>1</sup>) chalk at here.
11. My pencil is there = my pencil at there.
12. He has brought the book = he bring come (拿來 na<sup>2</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>) ed book.

## SEVENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 能 nêng <sup>2</sup> , can, able.	energy, power, ability.	17. 到 tao <sup>4</sup> , to arrive, to reach.
2. 力 li <sup>4</sup> , strength, force, power.		18. 變 pien <sup>4</sup> , to change, to alter, to transform, to become.
3. 會 hui <sup>4</sup> , able, can.		19. 跳 t'iao <sup>4</sup> , to jump.
4. 必 pi <sup>4</sup> , must.	must.	20. 舞 wu <sup>3</sup> , to dance.
5. 要 yao <sup>4</sup> , must.		21. 逃 t'ao <sup>2</sup> , to escape, to flee.
6. 得 tê <sup>2</sup> , must.		22. 走 tsou <sup>3</sup> , to walk, to travel, to go.
7. 不了 pu <sup>4</sup> -liao <sup>3</sup> , can not.		23. 找 chao <sup>3</sup> , to find, to look for, to seek.
8. „ 得 pu <sup>4</sup> -tê, must not.		24. 完 wan <sup>2</sup> , to complete, to finish.
9. 可 k'o <sup>3</sup> , can, able; may or might; a sign of potential mood.		25. 跟 kên <sup>1</sup> , to follow. It also represents English prepositions 'with' and 'to'.
10. 可能 k'o <sup>3</sup> -nêng <sup>2</sup> , able.		26. 忘 w a n g <sup>4</sup> (uang), to forget.
11. 滅 mieh <sup>4</sup> , to destroy, to exterminate, to extinguish.		27. 記 chi <sup>4</sup> , to record, to remember; a sign, a mark.
12. 救 chiu <sup>4</sup> , to save, to deliver, to rescue.		28. 憎 hêng <sup>4</sup> , to hate.
13. 接 chieh <sup>1</sup> , to receive, to welcome, to meet, to accept.	to accept.	29. 聽 t'ing <sup>1</sup> , to hear.
14. 受 shou <sup>4</sup> , to receive.		
15. 答 ta <sup>2</sup> , to reply, to respond to, to echo.	to answer, to reply, to	
16. 復 fu <sup>4</sup> , to reply, to return, to repeat.		
	acknowledge.	

23. Cf. Bengali, cāoyā (cā + oyā); Hindi, cāha; Maithili, cāha; Prakrit, cāha.

30. 帮 pang <sup>1</sup> , to help.	to help.
31. 佐 tso <sup>4</sup> , to help, to assist, to aid.	
32. 希 hsi <sup>1</sup> , to hope.	to hope.
33. 望 w a n g <sup>4</sup> (uang), to hope.	
34. 離 li <sup>2</sup> , to leave.	

35. 借 tsieh <sup>4</sup> (chieh <sup>4</sup> ), to lend; to borrow.
36. 愛 ai <sup>4</sup> , to love, to like; love, affection.
37. 合 ho <sup>2</sup> , to shut, to close.
38. 開 k'ai <sup>1</sup> , to open, to begin.
39. 門 mēn <sup>2</sup> , a door.
40. 放 fang <sup>4</sup> , to put.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. She can dance = she can (會 hui<sup>4</sup> or 能 nēng<sup>2</sup>) dance.
2. He can not hear = he not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (hui<sup>4</sup> or nēng<sup>2</sup>) hear.
3. I can not follow that = that piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) I follow can not (pu<sup>4</sup>-liao<sup>3</sup>).
4. You must help him = you must (pi<sup>4</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>) help him.
5. You must not hate me = you hate must not (pu<sup>4</sup>-tē<sup>2</sup>) me.
6. Shut the door = shut door.
7. Open the door = open door..
8. I have begun that = that piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) I begin (開 k'ai<sup>1</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
9. Come with me = with (跟 kēn<sup>1</sup>) me come.
10. Speak to him = to (kēn<sup>1</sup>) him speak (說 shuo<sup>1</sup>).
11. Those who love are loved = love man man love.
12. Follow the good and learn them = follow good man, learn good man.
13. Put it here = put at here.
14. Energy is not destroyed = energy not (pu<sup>4</sup>) destroy.
15. He escaped with his life = he escape ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) life (生 shēng<sup>1</sup>).

## EIGHTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

## ADJECTIVES

1. 好 hao <sup>3</sup> , good, well.	17. 清 ch'ing <sup>1</sup> , clear, pure, lucid.
2. 壞 huai <sup>4</sup> , bad.	18. 楚 ch'u <sup>3</sup> , distinct, clear.
3. 大 ta <sup>4</sup> , great, big, large.	19. 貴 kuei <sup>4</sup> , dear, costly, expensive.
4. 漂 p'iao <sup>1</sup> , to look fresh.	20. 親 ch'in <sup>1</sup> (ts'in <sup>1</sup> ), to love, intimate.
5. 亮 liang <sup>4</sup> , light, bright, brightness, clear, transparent.	21. 愛 ai <sup>4</sup> , to love; love.
6. 年 nien <sup>2</sup> , year, age.	22. 便 p'ien <sup>2</sup> , cheap. pien <sup>4</sup> , convenient.
7. 輕 ching <sup>1</sup> , light, not heavy.	23. 宜 i <sup>2</sup> , right.
8. 老 lao <sup>3</sup> , old, aged.	24. 強 ch'iang <sup>2</sup> , strong, fierce, violent.
9. 長 ch'ang <sup>2</sup> , long.	25. 壯 chuang <sup>4</sup> , stout, strong, healthy.
10. 短 tuan <sup>3</sup> , short.	26. 弱 jo <sup>4</sup> , weak.
11. 高 kao <sup>1</sup> , tall, high, lofty, noble.	27. 勇 yung <sup>3</sup> , brave, courageous.
12. 寬 k'uo <sup>4</sup> (k'o <sup>4</sup> ), broad.	28. 忙 mang <sup>2</sup> , busy, anxious, hurried, in haste.
13. 狹 hsia <sup>2</sup> , narrow.	
14. 瞎 hsia <sup>1</sup> , blind.	
15. 富 fu <sup>4</sup> , rich, wealthy.	
16. 窮 ch'iung <sup>2</sup> , poor.	

10. Cf. Skt. tanū, thin, small, slender; Gk. ταναος, slim; Lat. tenu-is; wed. tunn; Eng. thin; Russ. tonkü.

29. 容 yung <sup>2</sup> ,	easy.
30. 易 i <sup>4</sup> , easy, to be at ease.	
31. 艱 chien <sup>1</sup> , difficult, hard, dis- tressing.	difficult.
32. 難 n an <sup>2</sup> , difficult, trouble- some.	
33. 新 hsin <sup>1</sup> (sin <sup>1</sup> ), new, modern.	

34. 趣 ch'ü<sup>4</sup> (ts'ü<sup>4</sup>) interesting.

35. 是 shih<sup>4</sup>, right. It also means 'yes', the verb 'to be' and English preposition 'like'.

36. 非 fei<sup>1</sup>, wrong, false. It also means 'not' and 'without'.

37. 近 chin<sup>4</sup>, near.

38. 遠 yüan<sup>3</sup> (üen), far, distant.

39. 各 ko (koh), each, every.

### COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

The Comparative Degree is made with the following words of which the first one is prefixed to the Positive:—

1. 更 kēng<sup>4</sup>, more;
2. 比 pi<sup>3</sup>, to compare;
3. 强 ch'iang<sup>2</sup>, superior, better;
4. 多 to<sup>1</sup>, much, many;
5. 些 hsieh<sup>1</sup>, a little, some;
6. 一點 i<sup>1</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>, a little.

The Superlative Degree is formed by prefixing 1. 最 tsui<sup>4</sup> (chui<sup>4</sup>), 'most' and 2. 頂 ting<sup>3</sup>, 'most' to the Positive.

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
大 great ta <sup>4</sup>	更 kēng <sup>4</sup> 大 ta <sup>4</sup>	最 tsui <sup>4</sup> or 頂 ting <sup>3</sup> 大 ta <sup>4</sup>
小 small hsiao <sup>3</sup>	,, 小 hsiao <sup>3</sup>	,, or ,, 小 hsiao <sup>3</sup>

Examples of other words used in Comparative statements:

1. 他 比 你 好 t'a<sup>1</sup> pi<sup>3</sup> ni<sup>3</sup> hao<sup>3</sup> (=he compare you good)  
he is better than you.
2. ,, ,, ,, ch'iang<sup>2</sup>,\* t'a<sup>1</sup> pi<sup>3</sup> ni<sup>3</sup> ch'iang<sup>2</sup> (=he compare you superior) he is better than you.

\* As to the character see 'No. 3' above.

3. 他好多 t'a<sup>1</sup> hao<sup>3</sup> to<sup>1</sup> (=he good much) he is much better.
4. „ „ 一點 t'a<sup>1</sup> hao<sup>3</sup> i<sup>1</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup> (= he good a little) he is a little better.
5. „ „ 些 t'a<sup>1</sup> hao<sup>3</sup> hsieh<sup>1</sup> (=he good some) he is a little better.

Adjectives are generally used together with **的** ti<sup>4</sup>, hereafter represented by 'one' to qualify nouns,\* as:—

高的人 kao<sup>1</sup> ti<sup>4</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, a tall man.

大 „ 書 ta<sup>4</sup> ti<sup>4</sup> shu<sup>1</sup>, a big book.

Sometimes adjectives without **的** ti<sup>4</sup> qualify nouns, as:—

窮人 ch'iung<sup>2</sup> jēn, a poor man.

小字 hsiao<sup>3</sup> tzu<sup>4</sup>, a small letter.

## ADVERBS

Adverbs are often formed by adding ti<sup>4</sup>, as:—

他 寫 的 好 t'a<sup>1</sup> hsieh<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>4</sup> hao<sup>3</sup>, he writes well.

hao<sup>3</sup>† hao<sup>3</sup>† „ 做 hao<sup>3</sup> hao<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>4</sup> tso<sup>4</sup>, do it well, i.e. do it carefully.

1. **很** hēn<sup>3</sup>, very.
2. **太** t'ai<sup>4</sup>, too, very.
3. **慢** ‡ man<sup>4</sup>, slow, slowly.
4. „ **慢** man<sup>4</sup>-man<sup>4</sup>, slowly.
5. **快** k'uai<sup>4</sup>, fast, quickly, hasty, soon, sharp, keen.
6. „ **快** k'uai<sup>4</sup>-k'uai<sup>4</sup>, quickly, instantly.

Adverbs are generally placed before adjectives and verbs which they modify.

\* Cf. Dravidian ti or t̄i. In Telugu ti or t̄i is used after words for the conversion of substantives into adjectives, e.g., Tel. monna, before, is formed the adjective monna-t̄i, former, as, monna-t̄i tirpu, the former decision.

† For the character see the last character of the above sentence.

‡ Cf. Skt. manda, slow, slowly.

## NOUNS

1. 心 \* hsin<sup>1</sup> (sin<sup>1</sup>), the heart.
2. 口 † k'ou<sup>3</sup>, a mouth.
3. 生 shêng<sup>1</sup>, to be born, to beget, to be alive; life.
4. 意 i<sup>4</sup>, an idea, an opinion, wish, will, purpose, meaning.

livelihood, a living.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. He is a great man=he is great man.
2. He is a good boy=he is good boy (小孩子 hsiao<sup>3</sup>.hai<sup>2</sup>.tzu).
3. This is very small=this piece (個 ko<sup>4</sup>) is very small.
4. He is a big business-man=he is big buy-sell (買賣 mai<sup>2</sup>.mai<sup>4</sup>) man.
5. I have a good book=I have one piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) good one (ti<sup>4</sup>) book.
6. She is pretty=she pretty one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
7. That is the best of all=that piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) most good.
8. This is the worst=this piece most bad.
9. My grandfather is very old=my grandfather very old.
10. She writes well=she write (寫 hsieh<sup>3</sup>) good one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
11. He is very strong=he very (t'ai<sup>4</sup>) strong.
12. I am too busy=I too (t'ai) busy.
13. Come slowly=slowly come.
14. Go quickly=quickly go.
15. He is better than you=he compare (pi<sup>3</sup>) you better (ch'iang<sup>2</sup>).
16. Calcutta is bigger than Bombay=Calcutta compare (pi<sup>3</sup>) Bombay big.
17. In my opinion it is not 'easy=at (在 tsai<sup>4</sup>) I say (講 chiang<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) is easy one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
18. A man may be old in years, but his heart need not be old=man old heart not (pu<sup>4</sup>) old.
19. It is hard to make a living=living difficult.
20. Each has its right and wrong=each (ko) has right (shih<sup>4</sup>) wrong (fei<sup>1</sup>).
21. The mouth is right, but the heart is false=mouth right (shih<sup>4</sup>) heart false (fei<sup>1</sup>).

\* Cf. Arabic 心 jinn, the heart.

† It also means a hole, an opening, an aperture; Cf. Skt. khâ, n. an aperture and khâ, f. a well.

## NINTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 今 chin<sup>1</sup>, now.
2. „ 年 chin<sup>1</sup> nien<sup>2</sup>, this year; where the latter means 'a year'.
3. „ 天 chin<sup>1</sup> t'ien<sup>1</sup>, to-day; where the latter means 'God, the sky, heaven, a day; natural'.
4. 明 „ ming<sup>2</sup> t'ien<sup>1</sup>, to-morrow; where the former means 'bright'.
5. 後 „ hou<sup>4</sup> t'ien<sup>1</sup>, day after to-morrow; where the former means 'after'.
6. 昨 „ tso<sup>2</sup> t'ien<sup>1</sup>, yesterday; where the former means 'yesterday'.
7. 天 „ t'ien<sup>1</sup> t'ien<sup>1</sup>, everyday.
8. 春 „ ch'un<sup>1</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>, the spring day; the former means 'the spring'.
9. 夏 „ hsia<sup>4</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>, summer day; the former means 'summer'.
10. 秋 „ ch'iu<sup>1</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>, the autumn day; the former means 'the autumn'.
11. 冬 „ tung<sup>1</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>, winter day; the former means 'winter'.
12. 明年 ming<sup>2</sup> nien<sup>2</sup>, next year.
13. 去 „ ch'ü<sup>4</sup> nien<sup>2</sup>, last year.
14. 氣 ch'i<sup>4</sup>, breath, air, gas, steam, the weather. } the weather,
15. 候 hou<sup>4</sup>, a period of five days. } climate.
16. 日 jih<sup>4</sup>, the sun.
17. „ 子 jih<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a day.
18. 月 yüeh<sup>4</sup>, the moon, a month.
19. 草 ts'ao<sup>3</sup>, a plant, grass.
20. 热 jêh<sup>4</sup>, hot.

16. Cf. Arabic  zih, the sun.

21. 冷 lêng<sup>3</sup>, cold.
22. 凄 ch'i<sup>1</sup>, chilly, cold.
23. 也 yêh<sup>3</sup>, also, too.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. He is going to-day=he to-day go.
2. My father will come to-morrow=my father to-morrow want (要 yao<sup>4</sup>) come.
3. His brother came yesterday=his brother (兄弟 hsiung<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) yesterday come ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
4. Your teacher will come day after to-morrow=your teacher (先生 hsien<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) day after to-morrow want come.
5. Our friend comes everyday=our friend (朋友 p'êng<sup>2</sup>.yü<sup>3</sup>) every day come.
6. It is very hot to-day=to-day very (hêng<sup>3</sup>) hot.
7. Last year my mother was here=last year my mother at (在 tsai<sup>4</sup>) here (這裏 chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>).
8. This year she is also here=this year she also at here.
9. My maternal uncle will come next year=next year my maternal uncle (舅舅 chiu<sup>3</sup>.chiu<sup>3</sup> or 舅父 chiu<sup>3</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>) want come.
10. He will see me day after to-morrow=he day after to-morrow want see (看見 k'an<sup>4</sup>.chien<sup>4</sup>) me.
11. In summer the day is long=summer day long (長 ch'ang<sup>2</sup>).
12. In winter the day is short=winter day short (短 tuan<sup>3</sup>).
13. In the spring the day is bright=spring day bright (明 ming<sup>2</sup>).
14. In the autumn the weather gets chilly=autumn weather chilly chilly.
15. In winter the weather is cold=winter weather cold (lêng<sup>3</sup>).
16. He cannot come to-day=he to-day not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nêng<sup>2</sup>) come.
17. I shall see him this month=this month (今月 chin<sup>1</sup>.yüeh<sup>4</sup>) I want see (k'an<sup>4</sup>.chien<sup>4</sup>) him.
18. To-day the weather is fine=to-day weather fine (hao<sup>3</sup>).
19. If man does not recognise the spring, plants do=man not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know (知 chih<sup>1</sup>) spring, plant know spring.

## TENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 禮 li<sup>3</sup>, worship, ceremony, offerings.
2. 拜 pai<sup>4</sup>, to worship, to salute, to bow down.
3. 星 hsing<sup>1</sup>, the star.
4. 其月 \* ch'i<sup>2</sup>, a period, a limit of time.
5. 禮拜 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup> or 星其月 \* hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>, a week.
6. „ „ 日 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-jih<sup>4</sup> or „ „ 日 hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-jih<sup>4</sup>, Sunday.
7. „ „ 一 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>1</sup> or „ „ 一 hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>, Monday.
8. „ „ 二 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-êrh<sup>4</sup> or „ „ 二 hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-êrh<sup>4</sup>, Tuesday.
9. „ „ 三 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-san<sup>1</sup> or „ „ 三 hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-san<sup>1</sup>, Wednesday.
10. „ „ 四 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-ssü<sup>4</sup> or „ „ 四 hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-ssü<sup>4</sup>, Thursday.
11. „ „ 五 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-wu<sup>3</sup> or „ „ 五 hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-wu<sup>3</sup>, Friday.
12. „ „ 六 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-liu<sup>4</sup> or „ „ 六 hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-liu<sup>4</sup>, Saturday.
13. 正月 chêng<sup>4</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, January; where the former one means 'principal' (the first month).
14. 二 „ êrh<sup>4</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, February (the second month).
15. 三 „ san<sup>1</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, March (the third month).
16. 四 „ ssü<sup>4</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, April (the fourth month).
17. 五 „ wu<sup>3</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, May (the fifth month).
18. 六 „ liu<sup>4</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, June (the sixth month).
19. 七 „ ch'i<sup>1</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, July (the seventh month).
20. 八 „ pa<sup>1</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, August (the eighth month).
21. 九 „ chiu<sup>3</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, September (the ninth month).
22. 十 „ shih<sup>4</sup>-yüeh<sup>2</sup>, October (the tenth month).

\* To be taken as one character (ch'i<sup>2</sup>)

23. 十一月 shih<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, November (the eleventh month).

24. „ 二 „ shih<sup>2</sup>-êrh<sup>4</sup>, yüeh<sup>4</sup>, December (the twelfth month).

25. 鐘 chung<sup>1</sup>, a bell, a clock.

26. 表 piao<sup>3</sup>, a watch.

27. 點 tien<sup>3</sup>, a dot, the stroke of a clock.

28. 刻 k'o<sup>4</sup>, a quarter of an hour.

29. 幾 chi<sup>3</sup>, several, many, how much? how many?

30. 按 an<sup>4</sup>, as, according to. } according to.

31. 着 cho<sup>2</sup>, to order, to place. }

32. 時 shih<sup>2</sup>, time, opportunity. } time.

33. 候 hou<sup>4</sup>, to wait, to expect. }

34. 現 hsien<sup>4</sup>, now, at present, present. } now, present.

35. 在 tsai<sup>4</sup>, at. }

36. 過 kuo<sup>4</sup>, to pass. } past.

37. 去 ch'ü, to go. }

38. 將 chiang<sup>1</sup>, future; chiang<sup>4</sup>, a leader, a general. } future.

39. 來 lai<sup>2</sup>, to come. }

40. 點鐘 tien<sup>3</sup>-chung<sup>1</sup>, an hour.

41. 晌 shang<sup>3</sup>, midday.

42. 晚 wan<sup>3</sup>, late, evening.

43. 乎 hu<sup>2</sup>, an interrogative particle; a particle expressive of doubt, or of surprise, an expletive; in, at, from, than.

44. 再 tsai<sup>4</sup>, again.

45. 既 chi<sup>4</sup>, since, when. } when, since.

46. 是 shih<sup>4</sup>, to be. }

### Exercise (with hints)

1. To-day is Sunday=to-day is Sunday.
2. What is the time now?=now is what time.
3. What o'clock is it?=how many dot bell.
4. It is three o'clock=three dot bell.
5. By my watch it is half past three=according to my watch is three dot half (半 pan<sup>4</sup>) bell.
6. It is now ten minutes to three=now three dot less or short of (少 shao<sup>3</sup>) ten part (分 fēn<sup>1</sup>).
7. It is twenty minutes past three=three dot one quarter five open (開 k'ai<sup>1</sup>).
8. I shall come at a quarter to five=I four dot bell three quarter want come.
9. He came last night=he yesterday late midday come ed.
10. My father arrived yesterday evening=my father yesterday late midday come ed.
11. I shall come on Saturday next=below (下 hsia<sup>4</sup>) Saturday I want come.
12. His mother came on Friday last=above (上 shang<sup>4</sup>) Friday his mother come ed.
13. She came on Wednesday morning=Wednesday upper half (pan<sup>4</sup>) day she come ed.
14. He will go on Monday=Monday he want go.
15. My friend will come in January=January my friend want come.
16. They will go in December next=below December they want go.
17. My brother came last July=above July my brother come ed.
18. Times are bad=time bad (huai<sup>4</sup>).
19. Time never comes back=time surprise (乎 hu<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) again come.
20. When fortune smiles, who does not? when fortune does not, who does?  
=time come, who (谁 shui<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) come, time not come, who come.
21. When did your grandfather come?=when your grandfather (tsu<sup>3</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>) come ed.

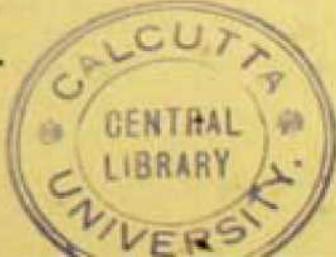


## ELEVENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## ADVERBS, PREPOSITIONS AND CONJUNCTIONS

1. 在 tsai<sup>4</sup>, at.
2. 還 hai<sup>2</sup>, yet, still, or ; huan<sup>2</sup>, to repay.
3. 同 t'ung<sup>2</sup>, with; and ; same.
4. 和 ho<sup>2</sup>, to, with; and.
5. 對 tui<sup>4</sup>, to.
6. 紿 kei<sup>3</sup>, for.
7. 替 t'i<sup>4</sup>, for.
8. 代 tai<sup>4</sup>, for.
9. 前 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, before, ago.
10. 後 hou<sup>4</sup>, after.
11. „ 來 hou<sup>4</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>, afterwards.
12. „ hou<sup>4</sup> } behind.
13. 頭 t'ou<sup>2</sup>, head. }
14. „ t'ou<sup>2</sup> } before, in front of.
15. 裏 li<sup>3</sup>, in. }
16. „ 頭 li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>2</sup>, inside.
17. 外 „ wai<sup>4</sup> (uai<sup>4</sup>)-t'ou<sup>2</sup>, out, outside; where the former means 'outside', 'beyond', 'foreign' and 'external'.
18. 從 ts'ung<sup>2</sup>, from.
19. 除了 ch'u<sup>2</sup>-liao<sup>3</sup>, except; where the former means 'besides', 'except'.
20. „ 非 ch'u<sup>2</sup>-fei<sup>1</sup>, unless; where the latter means 'wrong', 'bad', 'not', 'without'.
21. 當 tang<sup>4</sup>, during.
22. 爲 wei<sup>4</sup> (uei<sup>4</sup>), for.
23. „ 甚麼 wei<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>2</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>, why.



24. 因爲 yin<sup>1</sup> (in<sup>1</sup>)\*-wei<sup>4</sup> (uei<sup>4</sup>), because; where the former means 'because' and the latter 'to cause'.

25. 雖然 sui<sup>1</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, though, although; where the former means 'though', 'still', 'even if' and the latter 'yes', 'certainly', 'really', 'still', 'nevertheless', 'but', 'although', 'on the other hand'.

26. 自,, tzü<sup>1</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, of course; where the former means 'self', 'private', 'personal', 'natural'.

27. 忽,, hu<sup>1</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, suddenly; where the former means suddenly.

28. 既,, chi<sup>1</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, since; where the former means 'since', 'when'.

29. 不,, pu<sup>1</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, otherwise, or.

30. 所 so<sup>3</sup>, that which, what, whatsoever,  
who, a cause, whereby. } therefore, so.

31. 以 yi<sup>3</sup> (i<sup>3</sup>), by, through, with, an in-  
strumental preposition, a sign of the object  
which it precedes. }

32. 或 huo<sup>4</sup>, if, perhaps, either.....or. } or.

33. 者 che<sup>3</sup>, a pronoun—this, that, it,  
which, what, he, who, those, who; a particle  
imparting adjectival or adverbial shades of  
meaning to words to which it is joined. }

34. 但是 tan<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, but; where the former means 'but'.

35. 就,, chiu<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, only.

36. 假 chia<sup>3</sup>, if. } if.

37. 使 shih<sup>3</sup>, to allow, to cause. } if.

38. 恐 k'ung<sup>3</sup>, fearful, to fear, lest. } lest.

39. 怕 p'a<sup>4</sup>, to fear, perhaps, lest. } lest.

40. 只 chih<sup>3</sup>, only.

41. 怎 ts'en<sup>3</sup>, how, why, what. } how.

42. 麽 mo<sup>3</sup>, an interrogative. } how.

\* Cf. Arabic و (inna) for, because. 24. Cf. also Arabic و (wa inna) for, because.

43. 一定 i<sup>1</sup>-ting<sup>4</sup>, certainly; where the latter means 'certainly'.

44. 早 tsao<sup>3</sup>, the morning, early.

45. 晚 wan<sup>3</sup> (uan<sup>3</sup>), the evening, late.

46. 會 hui<sup>4</sup>, a little while.

47. 等 têng<sup>3</sup>, to wait.

48. 到 tao<sup>4</sup>, to reach, towards.

49. 於 yü<sup>2</sup>, in.

50. 是 shih<sup>4</sup>, this.

51. 前 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, before, ago.

52. 頭 t'ou<sup>2</sup>, the head.

53. 出 ch'ü<sup>1</sup>, out, as 'come out', 'go out'.

} sooner or later.

} till, until.

} then.

} in front.

### NOUNS

54. 椅子 i<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a chair.

55. 板 pan<sup>3</sup>, a board, a slab.

56. 花 hua<sup>1</sup>, a flower.

57. 園 yüan<sup>2</sup> (üen<sup>2</sup>), a garden.

58. 色 sê<sup>4</sup>, colour.

### ADJECTIVES

59. 紅 hung<sup>2</sup>, red.

60. 黑 hê<sup>1</sup>, black.

61. 白 pai<sup>4</sup> (pê<sup>4</sup>), white.

62. 青 ts'ing<sup>1</sup>, green.

63. 黃 huang<sup>2</sup>, yellow.

64. 藍 lan<sup>2</sup>, blue.

65. 紺 kan<sup>4</sup>, violet, purple.

## VERBS

66. **回** hui<sup>2</sup>, to return to or from.
67. **敲** ch'iao<sup>1</sup>, to knock, to strike.
68. **站** chan<sup>4</sup>, to stand.
69. **住** chu<sup>4</sup>, to stop, to cease.
70. **躋** chi<sup>1</sup>, to rise.

} to stop, to stand still.

It should be noted that in Chinese the conjunction 'and' is not often required. Besides t'ung<sup>2</sup>, ho<sup>2</sup> and kēn<sup>1</sup>, **都** tu<sup>1</sup>, all, both and **連** lien<sup>2</sup>, together with, are also used to express the sense of 'and'; e.g.—**他 你 都 站** t'a<sup>1</sup> ni<sup>3</sup> tu<sup>1</sup> chan<sup>4</sup>, he you all stand.

It should also be noted that in Chinese 'but' is almost invariably used after the personal pronoun. Thus English 'But I' is rendered into Chinese as 'I but', not 'but I'.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. My father is at home = my father at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) home (**家** chia<sup>1</sup>) inside (**裏** li<sup>3</sup>).
2. Where do you come from? = you from where (na<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) come.
3. Are you going alone, or are you going with your friends = you are one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) man go, or (hai<sup>2</sup>) are with your friend go.
4. Why has he not gone? = he why not (mei<sup>2</sup>) go.
5. Is he still here? = he still at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) here (chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) interrogative (mo<sup>3</sup>).
6. So the teacher gets up from his chair = so teacher (hsien<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) from his chair top (shang<sup>4</sup>) stand-(chan<sup>4</sup>) rise (chi<sup>1</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) [= get up].
7. He writes with chalk on the blackboard = he take (na<sup>2</sup>) chalk (fēn<sup>3</sup>.pi<sup>3</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) blackboard top (shang<sup>4</sup>) write (hsieh<sup>3</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>).
8. He walks back to his chair = he walk (tsou<sup>3</sup>) back (hui<sup>2</sup>) his chair.
9. I walk to the blackboard = I walk (tsou<sup>3</sup>) towards (tao<sup>4</sup>) blackboard-of (ti<sup>1</sup>) front (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>.t'ou<sup>2</sup> = front head).
10. Then the student writes the character jēn<sup>2</sup> (man) = then (yü<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) write one piece man character.
11. Suddenly he knocks at the door = suddenly he knock door.
12. But I do not know = I but not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know.
13. How did you go? = you are (shih<sup>4</sup>) how go-ing (ti<sup>4</sup>).
14. There is only this one = only there is (yu<sup>3</sup>) this one piece.
15. Morning and evening are not the same = morning (tsao<sup>3</sup>) evening (wan<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) same (t'ung<sup>2</sup>).

16. Sooner or later he will come = he sooner later come.
17. My friend will certainly come = my friend certainly want come.
18. Wait till to-morrow = till to-morrow.
19. Wait till he comes = till he come.
20. I did not go out because he came = I not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have go out (ch'ü<sup>1</sup>) because he come ed.
21. My brother went out but I was at home = my brother (hsiung<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) go out but I at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) home inside (li<sup>3</sup>).
22. You come behind = you at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) behind come.
23. Afterwards he will go = afterwards he want go.
24. There are flowers in the garden = flower garden inside (li<sup>3</sup>) there is (yu<sup>3</sup>) flower.
25. Some are red, some are white, some are green, some are yellow, some are blue and some are violet = some (yü<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup> = have one) are (shih<sup>4</sup>) red ti<sup>4</sup>, some are white ti<sup>4</sup>, some are green ti<sup>4</sup>, some are yellow ti<sup>4</sup>, some are blue ti<sup>4</sup>, some are violet ti<sup>4</sup>.
26. A few days ago he came here = ago (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>) several (chi<sup>3</sup>) day (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) he come ed here.

---

## TWELFTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 身子 shēn<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, the body.
2. 頭 t'ou<sup>2</sup>, the head.
3. „ 髮 t'ou<sup>2</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>, hair.
4. 面 mien<sup>4</sup>, the face. } the face.
5. 孔 k'ung<sup>3</sup>, a 'hole. }
6. 嘴 tsui<sup>3</sup>, the mouth.
7. 眼 yen<sup>3</sup>, the eye. } eyes.
8. 睛 ching<sup>1</sup>, the eye-ball. }
9. 鼻子 pi<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, the nose.
10. 耳 ērh<sup>3</sup>, the ear. } ears.
11. 耳朵 to<sup>3</sup>, the lobe of the ear. }
12. 脣 ch'un<sup>2</sup>, the lips.
13. 牙 ya<sup>2</sup>, a tooth. } teeth.
14. 齒 ch'ih<sup>3</sup>, the upper incisors. }
15. 舌 shē<sup>2</sup>, the tongue. } the tongue.
16. 頭 t'ou<sup>2</sup>, the head. }
17. 喉 hou<sup>2</sup>, the throat.
18. 胸 hsiung<sup>1</sup>, the chest.
19. „ 指 shou<sup>3</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>, the finger; where the latter means a finger, a toe.
20. 腳 chiao<sup>3</sup>, the foot, the leg.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. Her face is beautiful = her face beautiful (p'iao<sup>1</sup>-liang<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
2. She has two big eyes = she has two (liang<sup>3</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) big (ta<sup>4</sup>) eye.
3. His hair is black = his hair black (hê<sup>1</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
4. Her upper and lower lips are red = her above (shang<sup>4</sup>) below (hsia<sup>4</sup>) lip red (hung<sup>2</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
5. He has two long hands = he has two (liang<sup>3</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) long (ch'ang<sup>2</sup>) hand.
6. Teeth are white = tooth white (pai<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
7. The body of man is the universe in miniature = man body one (i<sup>1</sup>) small (hsiao<sup>3</sup>) God (t'ien<sup>1</sup>).

---

## THIRTEENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 飯 fan<sup>4</sup>, cooked rice, food ; fan<sup>3</sup>, to eat.
2. 米 mi<sup>3</sup>, uncooked rice.
3. 麵 mien<sup>4</sup>, flour.
4. 包 pao<sup>1</sup>, a parcel ; to wrap, to include.
5. 牛 niu<sup>2</sup>, an ox, a cow.
6. 油 yu<sup>2</sup> (iu<sup>2</sup>), oil, fat.
7. 奶 nai<sup>3</sup>, milk; the breast of a woman.
8. 牛奶 niu<sup>2</sup>-nai<sup>3</sup>, cow's milk, milk.
9. „ „ 皮 niu<sup>2</sup>-nai<sup>3</sup>, -p'i<sup>2</sup>, cream; where p'i<sup>2</sup> means 'skin', 'leather', 'bark', outer covering, wrapping.
10. 口加\* chia<sup>1</sup> or k'a<sup>1</sup>, used in transliterating.
11. 啡 fei<sup>1</sup>, used in transliterating.
12. 茶 ch'a<sup>2</sup>, tea.
13. 糖 t'ang<sup>2</sup>, sugar.
14. 餅子 ping<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup> (a noun-indicator), a cake.
15. 醬 chiang<sup>4</sup>, sauce.
- 油 yu<sup>2</sup> (iu<sup>2</sup>), oil, fat.
16. 口加\* chaa<sup>1</sup> or k'a<sup>1</sup>.
- 喇 li<sup>4</sup>, used in transliterating.
17. 菜 ts'ai<sup>4</sup>, vegetables.
18. 生菜 shêng<sup>1</sup>-ts'ai<sup>4</sup>, salad, lettuce.
19. 白 „ pai<sup>2</sup>-ts'ai<sup>4</sup>, cabbage.
20. 湯 t'ang<sup>1</sup>, soup.
21. 鹽 yen<sup>2</sup>, salt.
22. 胡 hu<sup>2</sup>, foolishly, blindly, recklessly.
23. 椒 chiao<sup>1</sup>, pepper, various spices.

7. Cf. Bengali māi (মাই), the breast of a woman.

\* To be taken as one character (chia<sup>1</sup> or k'a).

24. 魚 yü<sup>2</sup> (ü<sup>2</sup>), a fish.

25. 肉 ju<sup>4</sup>, meat.

26. 蛋 tan<sup>4</sup>, an egg. }  
27. 卵 luan<sup>3</sup>, an egg. } an egg.

28. 雞 or 鷄 chi<sup>1</sup>, a chicken, a fowl.

29. „ or „, 蛋 chi<sup>1</sup>-tan<sup>4</sup>, hen's egg.

30. 羊 yang<sup>2</sup> (iang<sup>2</sup>) a sheep, a goat.

31. 鵝 o<sup>2</sup>, a goose.

32. 鴨 ya<sup>1</sup>, a duck.

33. 豬 chu<sup>1</sup>, a hog, a pig.

34. 鳩 chiu<sup>1</sup>, a pigeon.

35. 壺 hu<sup>2</sup>, a pot.

36. 杯 pei<sup>1</sup>, a cup, a glass.

37. 盤 p'an<sup>2</sup>-(tzü<sup>3</sup>), a plate.

38. 刀 tao<sup>1</sup>-(tzü<sup>3</sup>), a knife.

39. 匙 ch'ih<sup>2</sup>-(tzü<sup>3</sup>), a spoon.

40. 托 t'o<sup>1</sup>, to carry on the palm, to support with  
the hand. }  
盤 p'an<sup>2</sup>, a plate. } a tray.

41. 瓶 p'ing<sup>2</sup>-(tzü<sup>3</sup>), a bottle.

42. 氣 ch'i<sup>4</sup>, air, steam, gas, breath. }  
43. 水 shui<sup>3</sup>, water. } soda water.

44. 火 huo<sup>3</sup> (ho<sup>3</sup>), fire.

45. 洋 yang<sup>2</sup>, the ocean ; foreign. }  
火 huo<sup>3</sup> (ho<sup>3</sup>), fire. } a match.

46. 柴 ch'ai<sup>2</sup>, fuel.

47. 旅 lü<sup>3</sup>, to travel, to lodge. }  
48. 館 kuan<sup>3</sup>, a private dwelling, a public office, } a hotel.  
a hall, a restaurant ; to lodge.

49. 餐 ts'an<sup>1</sup>, to eat ; a meal.      館 kuan<sup>3</sup>, a hall, a restaurant. } a restaurant.

50. 廚 ch'u<sup>2</sup>, a kitchen, a cook.      廚 } a kitchen.

51. 房 fang<sup>2</sup>, a house, a building, a room. } a room.

52. .. 間 fang<sup>2</sup>-chien<sup>1</sup>, a room ; where the latter means  
'a room', 'a division of a house'.

53. 公 kung<sup>1</sup>, public, open to all. } a park.

54. 園 yüan<sup>2</sup>, a garden. } a park.

55. 草 kuo<sup>3</sup> (ko<sup>3</sup>)-(tzü<sup>3</sup>), a fruit.

56. 餓 o<sup>4</sup>, hungry.

57. 渴 k'o<sup>3</sup>, thirsty.

58. 飲 in<sup>3</sup> or 喝 ho<sup>1</sup>, to drink.

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. Here is a cup of tea = this (chê<sup>4</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) cup tea.
2. Bring here that cup = take (na<sup>2</sup>) that (na<sup>4</sup>) cup here (chê<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
3. Is that tea hot ? = that (na<sup>4</sup>) tea hot (jeh<sup>4</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle).
4. No, it is cold = no (pu<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) cold (lêng<sup>3</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
5. Give me some milk and sugar = give (kei<sup>3</sup>) me little (黑口 tien<sup>3</sup>) milk  
and (kê<sup>1</sup>) sugar.
6. I drink tea with milk = I drink tea with (kê<sup>1</sup>) milk.
7. Bring me some bread and butter = take (na<sup>2</sup>) little (tien<sup>3</sup>) bread and  
(kê<sup>1</sup>) butter.
8. Come and have dinner with me = please (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) with (kê<sup>1</sup>) me eat  
(ch'i<sup>1</sup>) food.
9. Can you come and dine with me to-morrow ? = you to-morrow (ming<sup>2</sup>-  
t'ien<sup>1</sup>) to (上 shang<sup>4</sup>) me here (chê<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) food,  
suit (行 hsing<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) suit (hsing<sup>2</sup>).
10. I am thirsty, bring me some soda water = I thirsty, give (kei<sup>3</sup>) me take  
(na<sup>2</sup>) soda water come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
11. I must drink a glass of water = I must (得 tê<sup>2</sup>) drink one (i<sup>1</sup>) glass  
water.
12. I drink tea and eat cake = I drink tea and (kê<sup>1</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) cake.
13. Are you hungry ? = hungry not (pu<sup>4</sup>) hungry.
14. I want a tea-pot = I want (yao<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) tea-pot.

15. Bring here that plate, knife and spoon = take (na<sup>2</sup>) that (na<sup>4</sup>) plate knife spoon here (chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
16. On the tray there are a bottle of water and a glass = tray above (shang<sup>4</sup>) have (y়<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) bottle water and (kén<sup>1</sup> or ho<sup>2</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) glass.
17. Have you coffee ? = you have (yu<sup>3</sup>) coffee mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle)
18. Yes, I have = yes ( 是 shih<sup>4</sup>), I have (yu<sup>3</sup>).
19. No, I have not = no (pu<sup>4</sup>), I not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>).
20. Do you like fish ? = you like (yao<sup>4</sup>) fish mo<sup>3</sup>.
21. Yes, I like to have some fish, meat and eggs = yes ( 是的 shih<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>), I like some ( — 里 <sup>上</sup> i<sup>1</sup>.tien<sup>3</sup>) fish meat egg.
22. Have you a match ? = you have (yu<sup>3</sup>) match mo<sup>3</sup>.
23. Yes, sometimes I have = yes ( 有的 yu<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) sometimes (yu<sup>3</sup>.ti.shih<sup>2</sup> — yu<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>, some and 時 shih<sup>2</sup>, time) I have (yu<sup>3</sup>).
24. My friend opens a restaurant in Calcutta = my friend (p'eng<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) Calcutta open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>) restaurant.
25. Here is a hotel = here (chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) hotel.
26. He is playing in the park = park inside ( 裏 li<sup>3</sup>) he play (wan<sup>2</sup>).

## FOURTEENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 丈 chang<sup>4</sup>, a husband.
2. 夫 fu<sup>1</sup>, a husband, a man. } a husband.
3. 老 lao<sup>3</sup>, old, aged, venerable.
4. 婆 p'o<sup>2</sup>, a wife ; an old woman. } a wife.  
or
5. 妻 ch'i<sup>1</sup> (ts'i<sup>1</sup>), a wife ; to give in marriage.
6. 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> son (here an indicative of noun.) } a wife.
7. 嫁 chia<sup>4</sup>, to marry a husband, to give a daughter in marriage. } marriage.
8. 婚 hun<sup>1</sup>, to marry a wife ; a bridegroom. } marriage.
9. 先 hsien<sup>1</sup>, before. } mister, 'Mr.'
10. 生 shêng<sup>1</sup>, to be born. } madam, mistress, 'Mrs.'
11. 太 t'ai<sup>4</sup>, very, much, too. } madam, mistress, 'Mrs.'
12. 太 t'ai<sup>4</sup>, very, much, too. } madam, mistress, 'Mrs.'
13. 小 hsiao<sup>3</sup>, small, little.
14. 姐 chieh<sup>3</sup> (tsieh<sup>3</sup>), a term of respect for a young lady ; an elder sister. } Miss.
15. 歲 sui<sup>4</sup>, age, a year.
16. 幾 chi<sup>3</sup>, how ?
17. 如 ju<sup>2</sup>, like, as. } now.
18. 今 chin<sup>1</sup>, now. } now.
19. 名 ming<sup>2</sup>, a name ; fame.
20. .. 叫 ming<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>, called, named ; where the latter means 'to call'.
21. 姓 hsing<sup>4</sup> (sing<sup>4</sup>), a surname.
22. .. 名 hsing<sup>4</sup>-ming<sup>2</sup>, a name.

21. 筆名 pi<sup>3</sup>-ming<sup>2</sup>, pen-name, nom-de-plume.

22. 貴 kuei<sup>4</sup>, honourable ; 'your'.

23. „ 姓 kuei<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>4</sup>, your honourable surname.

24. 謝 hsieh<sup>4</sup>, to thank.

25. 同 t'ung<sup>2</sup>, to-gether ; with ; and. } a colleague.

26. 事 shih<sup>4</sup>, an affair, a matter, business. }

27. 禱 tao<sup>3</sup>, to pray ; prayer.

28. 對 tui<sup>4</sup>, to oppose, to compare, to suit, to reply, to respond ; to make a pair.

29. 起 ch'i<sup>3</sup>, to rise ; to raise.

30. 緊 chin<sup>3</sup>, to bind tightly ; tight, close, near.

31. 胡 hu<sup>2</sup>, recklessly, foolishly, blindly.

32. 勞 lao<sup>2</sup>, to toil, to suffer, to give trouble ; weary.

33. 駕 chia<sup>4</sup>, a polite form of address.

34. 久 chiu<sup>3</sup>, a long time.

35. 仰 yang<sup>3</sup>, to look up.

36. 會 hui<sup>4</sup>, to meet.

37. 裏 li<sup>3</sup>, in. } inside.

38. 面 mien<sup>4</sup>, the surface. }

### Exercise (with hints)

1. Who is he ? = he is (shih<sup>4</sup>) who (shui<sup>2</sup>).
2. He is her husband = he is her (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) husband.
3. His wife is here = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) wife at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) here (chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>).
4. Do you know Mr. Datta ? = you recognise (jén<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) Datta Mr. (hsien<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle).
5. What is Mrs. Mitra doing ? = Mitra Mrs. (t'ai<sup>4</sup>.t'ai<sup>4</sup>) do (tso<sup>4</sup>) what (shênn<sup>2</sup>.mo<sup>3</sup>).
6. Miss Sen is a teacher = Sen Miss (hsiao<sup>3</sup>.chieh<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) teacher (hsien<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>).
7. How old are you ? = you how (chi<sup>3</sup>) age.
8. I am now twenty years of age = I now (ju<sup>2</sup>.chin<sup>1</sup>) twenty (êrh<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>) age.
9. What is your name ? = you honourable (kuei<sup>4</sup>) surname  
or  
honourable surname name.
10. My name is Mohit = I name call (= named, called) Mohit.

11. What do you want ? = you want (yao<sup>4</sup>) what (shēn<sup>2</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>).
12. I want to see Mr. Chaudhuri = I want (yao<sup>4</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) Chaudhuri Mr.
13. Is Mr. Chaudhuri in ? = Chaudhuri Mr. at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) home (chia<sup>1</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle).
14. Please come in = please (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) pray (tao<sup>3</sup>) inside (li<sup>3</sup>-mien<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
15. Won't you sit down ? = please sit (tso<sup>4</sup>) pa<sup>4</sup> ( 還 a final particle).
16. Yes, I am sitting = have (yu<sup>3</sup>) sit (tso<sup>4</sup>).
17. How do you do ? = long time (chiu<sup>3</sup>) look up (yang<sup>3</sup>).
18. How are you ? = you good (hao<sup>3</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle).
 

or

good mo<sup>3</sup>.
19. I am very well = I very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) good.
20. Thank you = thank thank you.
21. I beg your pardon = oppose (tui<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) rise (ch'i<sup>3</sup>).
22. Excuse me = oppose (tui<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) rise (ch'i<sup>3</sup>).
23. I am very sorry = I very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) oppose (tui<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) rise (ch'i<sup>3</sup>).
24. That is all right = good (hao<sup>3</sup>) pa<sup>4</sup> (a final particle).
25. Wait a moment = wait (tēng<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>4</sup>) wait (tēng<sup>3</sup>).
26. I have troubled you (excuse me) = give trouble (lao<sup>2</sup>) chia<sup>4</sup> (a polite form of address).
27. Never mind = not (pu<sup>4</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) tight (chin<sup>3</sup>).
28. Nonsense = foolishly (hu<sup>2</sup>) talk (shuo<sup>1</sup> or sho<sup>1</sup>).
29. Why don't you do that ? = why (wei<sup>4</sup>-shēn<sup>2</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>) you not (pu<sup>4</sup>) do (tso<sup>4</sup>) that piece (ko<sup>4</sup>).
30. Is he still here ? Why has he not gone ? = he still ( 還 hai<sup>2</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) here (chē<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle), he why (wei<sup>4</sup>-shēn<sup>2</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
31. Are you going alone or are you going with your friends ? = you are (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>) or ( 還 hai<sup>2</sup>) are with (kēn<sup>1</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) friend (p'ēng<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>) go.
32. Mr. Wang is my colleague = Wang ( 王 ) Mr. is (shih<sup>4</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) colleague.
33. I say to Wang, 'Come along, Wang' = I reply (tui<sup>4</sup>) Wang Mr. say (shuo<sup>1</sup>), 'come (lai<sup>2</sup>), Wang Mr.'
34. Good-bye = again (tsai<sup>4</sup>) meet (hui<sup>4</sup>).

## FIFTEENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 金 chin<sup>1</sup>, gold. It also means 'metals' generally.
2. 銀 yin<sup>2</sup>, silver.
3. 鐵 t'ieh<sup>3</sup>, iron.
4. 銅 t'ung<sup>2</sup>, copper.
5. 鉛 ch'ien<sup>1</sup>, lead.
6. 錫 hsi<sup>2</sup> (or si<sup>2</sup>), tin.
7. 白 pê<sup>2</sup> (or pai<sup>2</sup>) white, pure, clear, bright. 金 chin<sup>1</sup>, metal. } platinum.
8. „ 剛 石 chin<sup>1</sup>-kang<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>, the diamond; where 'kang<sup>1</sup>' means 'hard, unyielding' and 'shih<sup>2</sup>' means 'stone, rock.'
9. 鑛 k'uang<sup>4</sup> (also kung<sup>3</sup>), the ore of metals; a mine.
10. 銀 yin<sup>2</sup>, silver, riches, wealth. 行 hang<sup>2</sup>, a mercantile establishment, a house of business. } a bank.
11. „ 市 hang<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, the market-rate; where the latter means 'a market'.
12. 錢 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, money.
13. 金 ch'ao<sup>4</sup> (or ch'ao<sup>1</sup>) paper-money, a money-order, a document, a voucher, a receipt. } currency note.
14. 票 p'iao<sup>4</sup>, a bill, a bank-note, a ticket, a certificate, a document, a warrant, a slip of paper. }
15. 銀 yin<sup>2</sup> 角 chio<sup>2</sup>, a tenth of a dollar. 子 tzü<sup>3</sup>. } a coin.

7 Old sound, pak; Cf. Japanese, haku (paku); Skt. pâka, pure (RV. I. 164. 5; X. 2. 5; 7. 6); Persian, پاک pak, pure.

16. 塊 k'uai<sup>4</sup>, a lump, a piece. }  
 錢 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, money. } a dollar.

17. 價 chia<sup>4</sup>, price, value. }  
 錢 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, money. } price.

18. 辦 pan<sup>4</sup>, to manage, to do business.

19. 公 kung<sup>1</sup>, public. } an office.

20. 廳 t'ing<sup>1</sup>, a hall, a room. }

21. 舖 p'u<sup>4</sup>, a shop } a shop.  
 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> }

22. 經 ching<sup>1</sup>, to manage. } a manager.

23. 理 li<sup>3</sup>, to manage. }

24. 衣 i<sup>1</sup>, cloth ; i<sup>4</sup>, to wear. } clothes.

25. 裳 shang<sup>2</sup>, clothes. }

26. 布 pu<sup>4</sup>, cotton cloth, shirtings.

27. 襪 ch'ên<sup>4</sup>, underclothing. } a shirt.

28. 衫 shan<sup>1</sup>, a shirt. }

29. 襪 ch'ên<sup>4</sup>. } pants.  
 褲 k'u<sup>4</sup>, trousers. }

30. .. k'u<sup>4</sup> } trousers.  
 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> }

31. 汗 han<sup>4</sup>, sweat, perspiration. } a vest.  
 衫 shan<sup>1</sup> }

32. 褥 kua<sup>4</sup>, a coat. } a coat.  
 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> }

33. 砍 k'an<sup>3</sup>, to cut. } a waistcoat.

34. 肩 chien<sup>1</sup>, the shoulder. }

33 Cf. Skt. √khand to cut.

35. 帽 mao<sup>4</sup>, a cap, a hat. }  
 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> } a cap, a hat.

36. 皮 p'i<sup>2</sup>, leather. }  
 37. 帶 tai<sup>4</sup>, a girdle. } a belt.

38. 手 shou<sup>3</sup>, hands. }  
 表 piao<sup>3</sup>, a watch. } a wrist-watch.

39. 鞋 hsieh<sup>3</sup>, shoes. }  
 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> } shoes.

40. 襪 wa<sup>4</sup> (ua<sup>4</sup>), socks, stockings. }  
 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> } socks, stockings.

41. 傘 san<sup>3</sup>, an umbrella.

42. 裁 ts'ai<sup>2</sup>, to cut out. }  
 43. 縫 fêng<sup>2</sup>, to sew. } a tailor.

44. „ 上 fêng<sup>2</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>, to sew up.

45. 穿 „ ch'uān<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>, to put on.

46. „ ch'uān<sup>1</sup>, to wear, to put on.

47. 脫 t'uo<sup>1</sup> (t'o<sup>1</sup>), to undress, to take off, to put off.

48. 鈎 chēn<sup>1</sup>, a needle.

49. 線 hsiien<sup>4</sup>, thread.

50. 撕 ssü<sup>1</sup>, to tear.

51. 改 kai<sup>3</sup>, to alter, to change.

52. 方 fang<sup>1</sup>, a plan. }  
 53. 便 pien<sup>4</sup>, convenient. } convenient.

54. 緊 chin<sup>3</sup>, tight.

55. 算 suan<sup>4</sup>, to reckon, to count, to consider.

56. 現 hsiien<sup>3</sup>, now, at present. }  
 在 tsai<sup>4</sup>, at, in, on. } now, at present.

57. 多 to<sup>1</sup>, many, much. }  
 少 shao<sup>3</sup>, few, little. } some.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. What is the market-rate of silver to-day ? = to-day (chin<sup>1</sup>.t'ien) silver what (shēn<sup>2</sup>.mo<sup>3</sup>) market-rate.
2. I have not yet heard = I yet (hai<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) hear (t'ing<sup>1</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup> or sho<sup>1</sup>).
3. Dollars of course are convenient = of course (tzü<sup>4</sup>.jan<sup>2</sup>) are (shih<sup>4</sup>) dollar convenient.
4. Give me six dollars = give (kei<sup>3</sup>) me (wo<sup>3</sup>) six (liu<sup>4</sup>) dollar.
5. What is the price ? = what (shēn<sup>2</sup>.mo<sup>3</sup>) price.
6. What is the price of this pair of shoes ? = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) pair (雙 tui<sup>4</sup>) shoes is (shih<sup>4</sup>) what (shēn<sup>2</sup>.mo<sup>3</sup>) price.
7. Where is the bank ? = where (na<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) bank.
8. He is going to the office = he to (到 tao<sup>4</sup>) office go (ch'u<sup>4</sup>).
9. Have you any money ? = you have (yu<sup>3</sup>) money mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle).
10. Yes, not much = yes (yu<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) much (to<sup>1</sup>).
11. Cloth is very dear = cloth (i<sup>1</sup>) consider (suan<sup>4</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) dear (kuei<sup>4</sup>).
12. Tell the tailor that the trousers are too long and the coat is too short.  
They must be altered = tell (kao<sup>4</sup>.su<sup>4</sup>) tailor that (na<sup>4</sup>) trousers too (t'ai<sup>4</sup>) long (ch'ang<sup>2</sup>), coat too (t'ai<sup>4</sup>) short (tuan<sup>3</sup>), two (liang<sup>3</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) all (者 tu<sup>1</sup>) must (得 tē<sup>2</sup>) alter.
13. This coat of mine is torn. Get a needle and thread and sew it up = I this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) coat tear ed (liao<sup>3</sup>), take (na<sup>2</sup>) needle thread sew up.
14. Now I put on my clothes and shoes = now (hsien<sup>3</sup>.tsai<sup>4</sup>) I put on (ch'u'an<sup>1</sup>.ch'u'an<sup>1</sup>) clothes (i'-shang<sup>2</sup>) put on (ch'u'an<sup>1</sup>) shoes.
15. First I put on my vest and shirt = I first (先 hsien<sup>1</sup>) put on (ch'u'an<sup>1</sup>.shang<sup>4</sup>) vest and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) shirt.
16. I put on my socks = I put on (ch'u'an<sup>1</sup>.shang<sup>4</sup>) socks.
17. My pants are tight = my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) pants tight lao<sup>3</sup> (了, a final particle).
18. Take off your hat = take off (t'o<sup>1</sup> or t'uo<sup>1</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) hat.
19. He has a good wrist-watch = he has (yu<sup>3</sup>).one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>) wrist-watch.
20. I want to go to the shop = I want (yao<sup>4</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) shop go (ch'u<sup>4</sup>).
21. Where is the manager ? = manager at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) where (na<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>).
22. His father has some money in the bank = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) father fu<sup>4</sup>.ch'in<sup>1</sup> has (yu<sup>3</sup>) some (to<sup>1</sup>.shao<sup>3</sup>) money in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) bank.

## SIXTEENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 郵政局 yu<sup>2</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-chü<sup>2</sup>, a post office; where yu<sup>2</sup> means 'a post-house', chêng<sup>4</sup> means 'administration' and chü<sup>2</sup> means 'an office'.
2. .. 局長 yu<sup>2</sup>-chü<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, a post master; where chang<sup>3</sup> means 'senior, old'.
3. .. 差 yu<sup>2</sup>-ch'ai<sup>1</sup>, a postal peon; where the latter means 'the servant of an official'.
4. .. 件 yu<sup>2</sup>-chien<sup>1</sup>, mail; where the latter means 'an article'.
5. .. 票 yu<sup>2</sup>-p'iao<sup>4</sup>, a stamp; where p'iao<sup>4</sup> (tzu<sup>4</sup>) means 'a ticket, a warrant'.
6. 信 hsin<sup>4</sup> (sin<sup>4</sup>), a letter.
7. .. 片 hsin<sup>4</sup>-p'ien<sup>4</sup>, a postcard; where the latter means 'a splinter, a slice'.
8. .. 箱 hsin<sup>4</sup>-hsiang<sup>1</sup> (siang<sup>1</sup>), a letter-box; where the latter means 'a box, a chest'.
9. 封信 fêng<sup>1</sup>-hsin<sup>4</sup>, a sealed letter; where the former means 'to seal up'.
10. .. 套 fêng<sup>1</sup>-t'ao<sup>4</sup>, an envelope; where the latter means 'a cover, a case'.
11. 地址 ti<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>, an address; where the former means 'the earth, locality' and the latter means 'a foundation, a boundary'.
12. 電 tien<sup>4</sup>, electricity.
13. .. 報 tien<sup>4</sup>-pao<sup>4</sup>, a telegram; where the latter means 'news'.
14. .. 局 tien<sup>4</sup>-pao<sup>4</sup>-chü<sup>2</sup>, a telegraph-office.
15. .. 話 tien<sup>4</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, telephone; where 'hua<sup>4</sup>' means 'speech, language, to speak'.

16. 電 車 tien<sup>4</sup>-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>, a tram; where ch'ê<sup>1</sup> means 'a cart, a carriage'.

17. 火 .. huo<sup>3</sup> (ho<sup>3</sup>)-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>, a train.

18. .. .. 站 huo<sup>3</sup>-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>-chan<sup>4</sup>, a railway station; where chan<sup>4</sup> means 'to stop, to stand up'.

19. 蒸 車 ch'i<sup>4</sup>-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>, a motor car; where the former means 'steam, vapour'.

20. 開 車 的 k'ai<sup>1</sup>-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, a driver; where k'ai<sup>1</sup> means 'to open'.

21. 公 kung<sup>1</sup>, public.  
共 kung<sup>4</sup>, all, the whole. } public.

22. 飛 機 fei<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>, an aeroplane; where the former means 'to fly' and the latter means 'a machine'.

23. 機 器 chi<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>4</sup>, a machine, machinery; where the latter means 'implements'.

24. 船 ch'uān<sup>2</sup>, a ship, a steamer.

25. 小 船 hsiao<sup>3</sup>-ch'uān<sup>2</sup>, a boat.

26. 洋 yang<sup>2</sup>, the ocean.

27. 海 hai<sup>3</sup>, the sea.

28. 湖 hu<sup>2</sup>, a lake.

29. 河 ho<sup>2</sup>, a river.

30. 數 shu<sup>4</sup>, several, number; shu<sup>3</sup>, to count.

31. 遣 ti<sup>4</sup>, to hand over, to forward.

32. 接 chieh<sup>1</sup>, to meet, to receive, to accept.

33. 用 yung<sup>4</sup>, to use.

34. 寄 chi<sup>4</sup>, to send.

35. 乘 ch'êng<sup>2</sup>, to ride, to mount.

36. 坐 tso<sup>4</sup>, to travel by ; to sit.

37. 呢 ni<sup>2</sup>, an interrogative and emphatic particle.

Exercise (with hints)

- Where is the post office = where (na<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) post office.
- I want to send letters = I want (yao<sup>4</sup>) send letter.
- The postal peon says to me, ' A letter for you, Sir ! ' = postal peon to (tui<sup>4</sup>) me (wo<sup>3</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup> or sho<sup>1</sup>), ' Sir (hsien<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>), here (chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) you (nin<sup>2</sup>—a polite form of address) one (i<sup>1</sup>) seal (fêng<sup>1</sup>) letter.
- He then hands the letter to my driver = he then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) take hold of (pa<sup>3</sup>) letter hand over (ti<sup>4</sup>) give (kei<sup>3</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) driver. [ ti<sup>4</sup>.kei<sup>3</sup>, to hand over, e.g. ti<sup>4</sup>.kei<sup>3</sup> wo<sup>3</sup>, hand it over to me.]
- I take the telegram = I take hold of (pa<sup>3</sup>) telegram receive (chieh<sup>1</sup>) pass (過 kuo<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) [or take (na<sup>2</sup>) pass (kuo<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>)]. [chieh<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>4</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup> or na<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>4</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>, to take over.]
- You need not wait. There is no need for an answer or reply = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) wait (têng<sup>3</sup>) cho<sup>2</sup>.lo<sup>1</sup> ( 着 了, indicator of the completion of action), not (pu<sup>4</sup>) must (pi<sup>4</sup>) give (kei<sup>3</sup>) return ( 回 hui<sup>2</sup>) letter. [pu<sup>4</sup>.yung<sup>4</sup>, need not ; hui<sup>2</sup>.hsin<sup>4</sup>, a reply.]
- What is your address ? = your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) address (ti<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>3</sup>) ni<sup>2</sup> (an interrogative particle) ?
- Have you a postcard ? = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) postcard mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle) ?
- Yes, I have a postcard and an envelope = yes (yu<sup>3</sup>), I have (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) postcard and (kêñ<sup>1</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) envelope.
- The post master has a good motor car = post master has (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>) motor car.
- I go to Delhi by a train = I mount (ch'êng<sup>2</sup>) train to (tao<sup>4</sup>) Delhi go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).
- He is going by an aeroplane = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) travel by (tso<sup>4</sup>) aeroplane.
- I go to the tram-stop = I walk (tsou<sup>3</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) tram (tien<sup>4</sup>.ch'ê<sup>1</sup>) stop (chan<sup>4</sup>).
- I then get on the bus = I then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) ascend ( 上 shang<sup>4</sup>) lo<sup>1</sup> (a final particle) bus. [ shang<sup>4</sup>.lo<sup>1</sup>, to get on.]
- This ship is very small = this (chê<sup>4</sup>) ship very (hêñ<sup>3</sup>) small (hsiao<sup>3</sup>).
- There are boats in the river = in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) river there are (yu<sup>3</sup>) number (shu<sup>4</sup>) many (to<sup>1</sup>) boat.

37 Cf. Bengali নি <<ni>>, an interrogative and emphatic particle ; e.g. interrogative : এই নি পণ্ডিত << ei ni pândit >>, কেহ নি আসিয়া আছে << keha ni âsiyâ âche >> (Caitanyabhâgavat) ; emphatic : দেখিলে নি দয়া লাগে << dekhile ni dayâ lâge >> (Padmâvatîr Pâncâli).

17. The ocean is bigger than the sea = ocean compare (pi<sup>3</sup>) sea big (ta<sup>4</sup>).
18. That lake is very broad = that (na<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) lake very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) broad (k'uo<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
19. This river is very narrow = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) river very narrow (hsia<sup>2</sup>).
20. I am going to the station = I to (tao<sup>4</sup>) station (huo<sup>3</sup>.ch'ē<sup>1</sup>.chan<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'u<sup>4</sup>).
21. Bring here the machine = take (na<sup>2</sup>) machine to (tao<sup>4</sup>) here (chē<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) [ na<sup>2</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>, to bring].

---

## SEVENTEENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

### VOCABULARY

1. 印度 yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>4</sup>, India.
2. 中國 chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, China ; where kuo<sup>2</sup> means 'country, kingdom'.
3. 華 hua<sup>2</sup>, China, Chinese. (The original meaning is flower or flowery, glory or glorious.)
4. 俄國 ngo<sup>2</sup> (o<sup>2</sup>)-kuo<sup>2</sup>, Russia.
5. 英 ,, ying<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, England.
6. 法 ,, fa<sup>4</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, France.
7. 德 ,, tê<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, Germany.
8. 美 ,, mei<sup>3</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, America (U.S.A.)
9. 獅子國 shih<sup>1</sup>-tzu<sup>3</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, Ceylon.
10. 阿富汗 a<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>4</sup>-han<sup>4</sup>, Afghanistan.
11. 巴基斯坦 pa<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>-su<sup>1</sup>-tan<sup>4</sup> Pakistan.
12. 波斯 po<sup>1</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup> (ssu<sup>1</sup>), Persia.
13. 阿刺伯 a<sup>1</sup>-la<sup>2</sup>-pai<sup>3</sup> (or pê<sup>2</sup>), Arabia.
14. 埃及 ai<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>2</sup>, Egypt.
15. 日本 jih<sup>4</sup>-pêñ<sup>3</sup>, Japan.
16. 爪哇 chao<sup>3</sup>-wa<sup>1</sup> (chua<sup>3</sup>-wa<sup>1</sup>) Java.
17. 父母國 fu<sup>4</sup>-mu<sup>3</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, (one's) native land ; parent country, i.e. father-land or mother-land.
18. 縣 hsien<sup>4</sup>, a district.
19. 城市 ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, a city, a town ; where the former means 'a city, a town' and the latter means 'a market'.
20. 鄉下 hsiang<sup>1</sup>-hsia<sup>4</sup>, a country, a village ; where the former means 'a country'.
21. 瞭得 hsiao<sup>3</sup>-tê<sup>2</sup>, to understand ; where the former means 'to understand' and the latter means 'to get'.
22. 駐 chu<sup>4</sup>, to dwell temporarily.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. I am an Indian = I am (shih<sup>4</sup>) India man (jēn<sup>2</sup>).
2. He is a Pakistani = he is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Pakistan man.
3. Where did you come from ? = you from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) wherg (na<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) ?
4. I came from Russia = I from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) Russia come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
5. Have you been to China ? = you to (tao<sup>4</sup>) pass (kuo<sup>4</sup>) China mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle) ? [tao<sup>4</sup>.kuo<sup>4</sup>, to have been.]
6. Can you speak Chinese ? = you can (hui<sup>4</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) China language (hua<sup>4</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> ?
7. Yes, I can speak = yes (shih<sup>4</sup>), I can (hui<sup>4</sup>) speak.
8. No, I cannot speak = no (pu<sup>4</sup>) I not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) speak.
9. I understand a little = I understand not (pu<sup>4</sup>) much (to<sup>1</sup>).
10. I can speak French and German = I can (hui<sup>4</sup>) speak France language (hua<sup>4</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) Germany language (hua<sup>4</sup>).
11. He is going to China = he to (tao<sup>4</sup>) China go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).
12. My friend is going to England = my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) friend (p'ēng<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) England go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).
13. I am going to the town = I to (tao<sup>4</sup>) town go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).
14. He speaks Arabic and Persian well = he speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) Arabia language (hua<sup>4</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) Persia language (hua<sup>4</sup>).
15. Mr. Datta has lived in Japan for three years = Datta Mr. (hsien<sup>1</sup>.shēng<sup>1</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) Japan already (i<sup>3</sup>.ching<sup>1</sup>) dwell temporarily (chu<sup>4</sup>) past (liao<sup>3</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) year (nien<sup>2</sup>) lo<sup>1</sup> (a final particle).
16. I have been a year in the country = I in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) country dwell temporarily (chu<sup>4</sup>) past (liao<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) year (nien<sup>2</sup>).

## EIGHTEENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. **教室** chiao<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, the class-room; where the former means 'to teach' and the latter means 'a room, a house'.
2. **皮包** p'i<sup>2</sup>-pao<sup>1</sup>, a bag; where the former means 'leather' and the latter means 'to wrap'.
3. **本子** pên<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, an exercise book; where 'pên<sup>3</sup>' means 'origin, root'.
4. **徧** pien<sup>4</sup>, a time, a turn.
5. **次** tz'ü<sup>4</sup>, a time, a turn.
6. **章** chang<sup>1</sup>, a chapter, a section.
7. **課** k'o<sup>4</sup>, a lesson.
8. **抹布** mo<sup>3</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>, a duster; where the former means 'to wipe, to rub' and the latter means 'cloth'.
9. **塊** k'uai<sup>4</sup>, a lump, a piece.
10. **聲** shêng<sup>1</sup>, a tone, sound.
11. **陰平** yin<sup>1</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup>, the name of the first tone; where 'yin<sup>1</sup>' means 'dark, darkness; the negative or female principle in nature; female' and p'ing<sup>2</sup> means 'level'.
12. **陽** .. yang<sup>2</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup>, the name of the second tone; where the former means 'light; the positive or male principle in nature; male'.
13. **上聲** shang<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>, the name of the third tone, i.e. the rising tone; where shang<sup>4</sup> means 'to rise, to ascend'.
14. **去** .. ch'ü<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>, the name of the fourth tone, i.e. the departing tone; where ch'ü<sup>4</sup> means 'to go'.
15. **部首** pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>, radicals (for Chinese characters); where pu<sup>4</sup> means 'a section' and shou<sup>3</sup> means 'the head, heading'.

16. 號碼 hao<sup>4</sup>-ma<sup>3</sup>, number; where hao<sup>4</sup> means 'a number' and ma<sup>3</sup> means 'a form of Chinese numerals'.
17. 字典 tzü<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>, a dictionary; where the former means 'a letter, a written character, a word' and the latter means 'a statute, a law, a code, a canon, documents, records'.
18. 法 fa<sup>3</sup>, method, law, statutes.
19. 打 ta<sup>3</sup>, to strike, to hit, to bit.
20. 念 nien<sup>4</sup>, to read, to chant, to think, to remember, to recall.
21. 起 ch'i<sup>3</sup>, to rise, to raise.
22. 擦 ts'a<sup>1</sup>, to rub, to wipe.
23. .. 去 ts'a<sup>1</sup>-ch'ü<sup>4</sup>, to rub out, to wipe out.
24. 摺 ko<sup>1</sup>, to put, to place.
25. 完 wan<sup>2</sup>, to finish, to complete.
26. 查 ch'a<sup>2</sup>, to search, to seek out.
27. 記得 chi<sup>4</sup>-tê<sup>2</sup>, to remember; where chi<sup>4</sup> means 'to remember' and tê<sup>2</sup> means 'to get, to obtain'.
28. 地道 ti<sup>4</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>, genuine, thoroughly; where the former means 'the earth' and the latter means 'a road'.
29. 全 ch'üan<sup>2</sup>, perfect, complete.
30. 不方便 pu<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>-pien<sup>4</sup>, inconvenient; where pu<sup>4</sup> means 'not', fang<sup>1</sup> means 'a place' and pien<sup>4</sup> means 'convenient'.
31. 要是 yao<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, if; where yao<sup>4</sup> means 'if' and 'shih<sup>4</sup>' means 'to be'.
32. 或 .. huo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, or; where huo<sup>4</sup> means 'or'.

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. The teacher teaches in the class-room = teacher (hsien<sup>1</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) class-room teach (chiaol<sup>1</sup>) book (shu<sup>1</sup>) or explain (chiang<sup>3</sup>) book (shu<sup>1</sup>).
2. He picks up a duster = he take (na<sup>2</sup>) rise (ch'i<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (k'uai<sup>4</sup>) duster come (lai<sup>2</sup>) [ na<sup>2</sup>.ch'i<sup>3</sup> and subsequent lai<sup>2</sup> means 'to pick up' ].

3. He rubs out the characters which he has written = he rub out writing (寫的 hsieh<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>).
4. The third chapter is very long = order (ti<sup>4</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) chapter very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) long (ch'ang<sup>2</sup>).
5. The fourth lesson is very difficult = order (ti<sup>4</sup>) four (ssü<sup>4</sup>) lesson very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) difficult (chien<sup>1</sup>-nan<sup>2</sup>).
6. The character i<sup>1</sup> (one) is the first tone or yin<sup>1</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup> = one (i<sup>1</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) tone (shēng<sup>1</sup>) or (huo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>) yin<sup>1</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup>.
7. The character jēn<sup>2</sup> (man) is the second tone or yang<sup>2</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup> = man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) two (ērh<sup>4</sup>) tone (shēng<sup>1</sup>) or (huo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>) yang<sup>2</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup>.
8. The character shui<sup>3</sup> (water) is the third tone or shang<sup>4</sup>-shēng<sup>1</sup> = water (shui<sup>3</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) tone (shēng<sup>1</sup>) or (huo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>) shang<sup>4</sup>-shēng<sup>1</sup>.
9. The character êrh<sup>4</sup> (two) is the fourth tone or ch'ü<sup>4</sup>-shēng<sup>1</sup> = two (ērh<sup>4</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) four (ssü<sup>4</sup>) tone (shēng<sup>1</sup>) or (huo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>) ch'ü<sup>4</sup>-shēng<sup>1</sup>.
10. All these characters are the radicals = this (chê<sup>4</sup>) some (sieh<sup>1</sup> or hsieh<sup>1</sup>) characters (tzü<sup>4</sup>) all (者 tu<sup>1</sup>) are (shih<sup>4</sup>) radicals (pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>).
11. i<sup>1</sup> is radical no. 1 = one (i<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) radical (pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup> = no.) one (i<sup>1</sup>).
12. jēn<sup>2</sup> is radical no. 9 = man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) radical (pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) nine (chiu<sup>3</sup>).
13. shui<sup>3</sup> is radical no. 85 = water (shui<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) radical (pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) eight ten five (pa<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-wu<sup>3</sup>).
14. êrh<sup>4</sup> is radical no. 7 = two (êrh<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) radical (pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) seven (ch'i<sup>1</sup>).
15. The student takes the exercise book out of his bag = student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>) shēng<sup>1</sup>) from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) bag (p'i<sup>2</sup>-pao<sup>1</sup>) inside (li<sup>3</sup>) take (na<sup>2</sup>) out (ch'u<sup>1</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) exercise book (pêñ<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
16. He opens this exercise book = he take hold of (pa<sup>3</sup>) this (chê<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) exercise book (pêñ<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>) strike (ta<sup>3</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>). [ ta<sup>3</sup>-k'ai<sup>1</sup>, to open.]
17. He writes some very simple or easy Chinese characters = he write (hsieh<sup>3</sup>) several (chi<sup>3</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) easy (yung<sup>2</sup>-yi<sup>4</sup>) writing (hsieh<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) China (chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>).
18. He has finished writing = he write (hsieh<sup>3</sup>) finish (wan<sup>2</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
19. He reads these characters three times = he take hold of (pa<sup>3</sup>) this (chê<sup>4</sup>) some (sieh<sup>1</sup> or hsieh<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>) read (nien<sup>4</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) time (pien<sup>4</sup> or tz'u<sup>4</sup>).

20. He puts the duster down = he get hold of (pa<sup>3</sup>) duster (mo<sup>3</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>) put (ko<sup>1</sup>) down (hsia<sup>4</sup>).

21. So he is learning very thoroughly how to write and read the Chinese characters, the four tones and the numbers of radicals = so (so<sup>3</sup>.i<sup>3</sup>) he take hold of (pa<sup>3</sup>) China (chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>) -'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) write (hsieh<sup>3</sup>) method (fa<sup>3</sup>) read (nien<sup>4</sup>) method (fa<sup>3</sup>) four (ssü<sup>4</sup>) tone (shêng<sup>1</sup>) and (kén<sup>1</sup>) radical (pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>) -'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) number (hao<sup>4</sup>-ma<sup>3</sup>) perfect (ch'üan<sup>2</sup>) learning (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) very (hêng<sup>3</sup>) thoroughly (ti<sup>4</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>).

22. To look up the Chinese dictionary is very difficult or inconvenient, if one does not remember the numbers of the radicals = search (ch'a<sup>2</sup>) China (chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>) dictionary (tzü<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>), if (yao<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) remember (chi<sup>4</sup>-tê<sup>2</sup>) radical (pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>) -'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) number (hao<sup>4</sup>-ma<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) very (hêng<sup>3</sup>) inconvenient (pu<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>-pien<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).

---

## NINETEENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 風 fung<sup>1</sup>, wind.
2. 空氣 k'ung<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>4</sup>, air; where k'ung<sup>1</sup> means 'empty, hollow' and ch'i<sup>4</sup> means 'air, breath, steam'.
3. 天空 t'ien<sup>1</sup>-k'ung<sup>1</sup>, the sky, the firmament.
4. 雲彩 yün<sup>2</sup>-ts'ai<sup>3</sup>, the cloud; where yün<sup>2</sup> means 'cloud' and ts'ai<sup>3</sup> means 'variegated colours'.
5. 雨 yü<sup>2</sup>, the rain.
6. 雷 lei<sup>2</sup>, thunder.
7. 閃 shan<sup>3</sup>, a flash of lightning, lightning.
8. 霽 pao<sup>2</sup> (tzü<sup>3</sup>), hail.
9. 雪 hsüeh<sup>3</sup>, snow.
10. 冰 ping<sup>1</sup>, ice.
11. 霧 wu<sup>4</sup>, fog, mist.
12. 露 lu<sup>4</sup>, dew.
13. 昏 hun<sup>1</sup>, dark.
14. 晴 ch'ing<sup>2</sup> (or ts'ing<sup>2</sup>), clear (sky), fair (weather).
15. 滿 man<sup>3</sup>, full, whole, complete.
16. 風舌 kua<sup>1</sup>, to blow (as the wind). } to blow away.
17. 散 san<sup>4</sup>, to scatter, to disperse. }
18. 就 chiu<sup>4</sup>, then; to come, to go, to follow. } to take.  
把 pa<sup>3</sup>, to take hold of }
19. 消 hsiao<sup>1</sup>, to melt. } to melt.
20. 化 hua<sup>4</sup>, to change, to transform. }
21. 又 yu<sup>4</sup>, again.
22. 也 yeh<sup>3</sup>, an emphatic particle giving special emphasis to the preceding word.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. The sky is very cloudy = sky (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) dark.
2. There are thunder, lightning and rain = then (yu<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, lit. have is) thunder, then (yu<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) lightning, then (yu<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) rain.
3. A strong wind is blowing away the clouds = great (ta<sup>4</sup>) wind take (chiu<sup>4</sup>-pa<sup>3</sup>) cloud (yün<sup>2</sup>-ts'ai<sup>3</sup>) blow away.
4. It rains and snows = then (yu<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) rain, then (yu<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) snow.
5. Ice is melting = ice melt.
6. Dew is falling = dew fall (hsia<sup>4</sup>, down).
7. A fog overspreads the sky = full (man<sup>3</sup>) sky (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) fog.
8. The sky has cleared up again = sky (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) again (yu<sup>4</sup>) clear-ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
9. Both the moon and the stars were seen (came out) = moon (yüeh<sup>4</sup>) both (liang<sup>3</sup>) yeh<sup>3</sup> (an emphatic particle) star (hsing<sup>1</sup>) star (hsing<sup>1</sup>) yeh<sup>3</sup> (an emphatic particle) out (ch'u<sup>1</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).

## TWENTIETH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

## VOCABULARY

1. 疾 chi<sup>2</sup> (tsi<sup>2</sup>), disease, sickness. } disease.
2. 病 ping<sup>4</sup>, disease. }
3. „ 人 ping<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>, a patient.
4. 醫 i<sup>1</sup>, to heal, to cure ; a doctor. } a doctor, a physician.
5. 生 shēng<sup>1</sup>, a scholar, a student. }
6. 太 t'ai<sup>4</sup>, very, too. } a doctor, a physician.
7. 夫 fu<sup>1</sup>, a man. }
8. 醫院 i<sup>1</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>, a hospital ; where the latter means 'a hall, a public building'.
9. 藥 yao<sup>4</sup>, medicine.
10. „ 水 yao<sup>4</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, mixture ; where the latter means 'water ; liquids'.
11. „ 丸 yao<sup>4</sup>-wan<sup>2</sup> (uan<sup>2</sup>), a pill, a tablet ; where the latter means 'a pill'.
12. 醫針 i<sup>1</sup>-chēn<sup>1</sup>, injection ; where the latter means 'a needle'.
13. 注 chu<sup>4</sup>, water flowing. } inoculation.
14. 射 shē<sup>4</sup>, to project, to shoot out. }
15. 溫 wēn<sup>1</sup> (uēn<sup>1</sup>), warm, hot. } temperature.
16. 度 tu<sup>4</sup>, a measure, a degree. }
17. 體 t'i<sup>2</sup>, the body. }
18. 溫 wēn<sup>1</sup>, warm, hot. } thermometer.
19. 聽 t'ing<sup>1</sup>, to hear. }
20. 診 chēn<sup>3</sup>, to examine (disease). } stethoscope.
21. 器 ch'i<sup>4</sup>, organ in the body. }
22. 脈 or 脈 mai<sup>4</sup>, the pulse. }

23. 膏藥 kao<sup>1</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>, a plaster; where the former means 'plaster'.

24. 藥方 yao<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>, a prescription; where the latter means 'direction'.

25. 頭疼 t'ou<sup>2</sup>-t'êng<sup>2</sup>, headache; where the former means 'head' and the latter 'pain, to ache'.

26. 热 jê<sup>4</sup>, fever; hot.

27. 燒 shao<sup>1</sup>, fever.

28. 瘧疾 yao<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>2</sup> (tsi<sup>2</sup>), malaria; where the former means 'fever'.

29. 咳嗽 k'ê<sup>2</sup>-sou<sup>4</sup>, cough; both mean 'to cough'.

30. 霍 huo<sup>4</sup>, quickly, suddenly.

31. 亂 luan<sup>4</sup>, disorderly, reckless; rebellion. } cholera.

32. 痢疾 li<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>2</sup> (tsi<sup>2</sup>), dysentery; where the former means 'dysentery, diarrhoea'.

33. 白痢 pai<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>4</sup>, diarrhoea; where the former means 'white'.

34. .. 喉 pai<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>2</sup>, diphtheria; where the latter means 'the throat, the gullet'.

35. 疹子 chêñ<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, measles.

36. 天花 t'ien<sup>1</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, small-pox; where the former means 'the sky, heaven' and the latter 'flowers'.

37. 流 liu<sup>2</sup>, to flow, a current. } epidemic.

38. 行 hsing<sup>2</sup>, to walk, to travel. }

39. 傳 ch'uán<sup>2</sup>, to spread. } influenza.

40. 染 jan<sup>3</sup>, to infect, to catch a disease. }

41. 病 ping<sup>4</sup>, disease. }

42. 肺炎 fei<sup>4</sup>-yên<sup>2</sup>, pneumonia; where the former means 'the lungs' and the latter 'a flame; to flame; inflammation'.

43. 肺病 fei<sup>4</sup>-ping<sup>4</sup>, tuberculosis.

44. 瘟 .. wên<sup>1</sup> (uêñ<sup>1</sup>)-ping<sup>4</sup>, epidemics; where the former means 'epidemic, plague'.

45. 瘟疫 wēn<sup>1</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, plague; where the latter means 'epidemic'.

46. 時間 shih<sup>2</sup>-chien<sup>1</sup>, time; where the former means 'time' and the latter 'while, among, in, on'.

47. 傳 ch'uān<sup>2</sup>, to spread.

48. 染 jan<sup>3</sup>, to infect, to catch a disease. } infectious.

49. 右 yu<sup>4</sup>, the right-hand side, the right side.

50. 左 tso<sup>3</sup>, the left-hand side, the left side.

51. 鬧 nao<sup>4</sup>, to suffer (from).

52. 開 k'ai<sup>1</sup>, to write (a prescription).

53. 號 hao<sup>4</sup>, to feel (the pulse).

54. 癰 fa<sup>1</sup>, to rise, to manifest.

55. 摩 mo<sup>2</sup>, to feel with the hand.

56. 用 yung<sup>4</sup>, to use.

57. 打 ta<sup>3</sup>, to send (a telegram), to speak (by telephone).

58. 服 fu<sup>2</sup>, to take (medicine); a dose of medicine.

59. 跳 t'iao<sup>4</sup>, to jump, to leap.

60. 快 k'uai<sup>4</sup>, quickly, rapidly.

61. 以 i<sup>3</sup>, when.

62. 按照 an<sup>4</sup>-chaot, according to; where both mean 'according to'.

63. 詳 hsiang<sup>2</sup>, in detail, such as.

64. 等等的 tēng<sup>3</sup>-tēng<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, et cetera; etc.

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. I have fever = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) rise (fa<sup>1</sup>) fever (shao<sup>1</sup>).
2. You are suffering from fever = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) suffer (nao<sup>4</sup>) fever (jē<sup>4</sup>).
3. Your temperature is 102.4° = your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) temperature is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) hundred (pai<sup>3</sup>) zero (ling<sup>2</sup>) two (érh<sup>4</sup>) degree (tu<sup>4</sup>) four (ssü<sup>4</sup>).

4. When I put my hand to your head, it feels hot = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) hand (shou<sup>3</sup>) when (i<sup>3</sup>) feel with hand (mo<sup>2</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) head (t'ou<sup>2</sup>) head (t'ou<sup>2</sup>) hot (jē<sup>4</sup>).
5. I shall ask Dr. Pal to come and see you = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) request (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) Dr. (t'ai<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>1</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) give (kei<sup>3</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) pa<sup>4</sup> ( 龜 a final particle).
6. I telephone for Dr. Pal = I send (ta<sup>3</sup>) telephone (tien<sup>4</sup>.hua<sup>4</sup>) for (kei<sup>3</sup>) Pal Dr.
7. Dr. Pal comes to examine you = Pal Dr. grant (kei<sup>3</sup>, give) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) disease (ping<sup>4</sup>).
8. The doctor feels your pulse with the right hand = doctor (t'ai<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>1</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) right (yu<sup>4</sup>) hand (shou<sup>3</sup>) feel (hao<sup>4</sup>) feel (hao<sup>4</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) pulse.
9. In the left hand he holds a watch and looks at the time = he use (yung<sup>4</sup>) left (tso<sup>3</sup>) hand (shou<sup>3</sup>) take (na<sup>3</sup>) cho<sup>2</sup> ( 着 a durative suffix) watch (piao<sup>3</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) time (shih<sup>2</sup>.chien<sup>1</sup>).
10. The doctor says, 'your pulse is beating very quickly = doctor say (shuo<sup>1</sup>) 'your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) pulse jump (t'iao<sup>4</sup>)-ing (ti<sup>4</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) quickly (k'uai<sup>4</sup>).'
11. He asks again, 'Have you a cough?' = he again (yu<sup>4</sup>) ask (wēn<sup>4</sup>) 'you (ni<sup>3</sup>) cough (k'ē<sup>2</sup>.sou<sup>4</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle) ?'
12. The doctor writes you a prescription = doctor give (kei<sup>3</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) write (k'ai<sup>1</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) prescription (yao<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>1</sup>).
13. You take medicine according to his prescription = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) according to (an<sup>4</sup>.chao<sup>4</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) prescription take (fu<sup>2</sup>) medicine (yao<sup>4</sup>).
14. He is quite well now = now (hsien<sup>4</sup>.tsai<sup>4</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) illness (ping<sup>4</sup>) well (hao<sup>3</sup>) lo<sup>1</sup> (a final particle).
15. We have injections and inoculations = we (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) injection and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) inoculation.
16. There are infectious diseases or epidemics, such as, cholera, small-pox, diphtheria, measles, influenza, dysentery, tuberculosis, etc. = there are (yu<sup>3</sup>) infectious disease (ch'uan<sup>2</sup>.jan<sup>3</sup> ping<sup>4</sup>) or ( 瘟 huo<sup>4</sup>) epidemics (wēn<sup>1</sup>.ping<sup>4</sup>) such as (hsiang<sup>2</sup>) cholera, small-pox, diphtheria, measles, influenza, tuberculosis, etc. (tēng<sup>3</sup>.tēng<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>).

## TWENTY-FIRST LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

### VOCABULARY

1. 考試 k'ao<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, examination; both mean 'to test, to examine; examination'.
2. 筆 „ pi<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, written examination.
3. 口 „ k'ou<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, oral examination.
4. 題目 t'i<sup>2</sup>-mu<sup>4</sup>, a question, a theme; where the former means 'the forehead'; hence 'a heading, a theme, a subject, a proposition' and the latter means 'the eyes, an index, a list, an item'.
5. 卷子 chüan<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, examination paper.
6. 一篇文章 i<sup>1</sup>-p'ien<sup>1</sup>-wēn<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>1</sup>, an essay; where p'ien<sup>1</sup> means 'a leaf of a book, an essay, a passage', wēn<sup>2</sup> (uen<sup>2</sup>) means 'literature' and chang<sup>1</sup> means 'chapter' [wēn<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>1</sup>, an essay, an article, a paper] [p'ien<sup>1</sup> is here a numerative].
7. 英文 ying<sup>1</sup>-wēn<sup>2</sup>, English, the English text.
8. 華 „ hua<sup>2</sup>-wēn<sup>2</sup>, Chinese, the Chinese text.
9. 文法 wēn<sup>2</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>, grammar. ?
10. 史 shih<sup>3</sup>, history.
11. 系主任 hsi<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-jēn<sup>4</sup>, the Head of the Department; where hsi<sup>4</sup> means 'a connection', chu<sup>3</sup> means 'a lord, a master' and jēn<sup>4</sup> means 'an official position, an office' [chu<sup>3</sup>-jēn<sup>4</sup>, a principal, a chairman].
12. 道 tao<sup>4</sup>, a road, truth, doctrine.
13. 圖書館 t'u<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>, a library-, where t'u<sup>2</sup> means 'a map, a picture, a diagram, a portrait', shu<sup>1</sup> means 'a book' and kuan<sup>3</sup> means 'a hall'.
14. 國家圖書館 kuo<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup> t'u<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>, National Library [kuo<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup> means 'nation, national'].

15. 小說 hsiao<sup>3</sup>- shuo<sup>1</sup>, a novel ; where the former means 'small ; a concubine' and the latter means 'to speak, to say, to tell'.

16. 著作人 chu<sup>4</sup>-tso<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>, an author ; where chu<sup>4</sup> means 'to write (a book) and tso<sup>4</sup> means 'to write, to compose, to do, to work, to make'.

17. 架子 chia<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a shelf.

18. 書目 shu<sup>1</sup>-mu<sup>4</sup>, a catalogue of books.

19. .. 架 shu<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>, a book-shelf.

20. .. 櫃 shu<sup>1</sup>-kuei<sup>4</sup>, a book-case ; where the latter means 'a cupboard, a shop-counter'.

21. 借書證 chieh<sup>4</sup> (tsieh<sup>4</sup>)-shu<sup>1</sup>-chēng<sup>4</sup>, a library-card ; where chieh<sup>4</sup> means 'to borrow, to lend' and chēng<sup>4</sup> means 'evidence, proof ; to give evidence, to testify'.

22. .. .. 單 chieh<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-tan<sup>1</sup>, a book-ticket, a borrowing slip ; where tan<sup>1</sup> means 'a document, a bill, a cheque, a single sheet of paper'.

23. 及格 chi<sup>2</sup> (chih<sup>2</sup>) -ko<sup>2</sup> (kē<sup>2</sup>), to pass (an examination), where both mean 'to reach, to come up to'.

24. 進 chin<sup>4</sup> (tsin<sup>4</sup>), to enter.

25. 緣譯 fan<sup>1</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, to translate ; where both mean 'to translate'.

26. 填 t'ien<sup>2</sup>, to fill up, to fill in.

27. 摆 kou<sup>4</sup>, to pull, to drag.

28. 簽 ch'ien<sup>1</sup> (ts'ien<sup>1</sup>), to sign, to endorse.

29. 並且 ping<sup>4</sup>-ch'ieh<sup>3</sup> (ts'ieh<sup>3</sup>), moreover, besides ; where ping<sup>4</sup> means 'and, also' and ch'ieh<sup>3</sup> means 'moreover, further'.

30. 一  
共 i<sup>1</sup>-kung<sup>4</sup>, altogether.

**Exercise (with hints)**

1. The student enters the examination hall = student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shēng<sup>1</sup>) enter (chin<sup>4</sup>) examination (k'ao<sup>3</sup> or shih<sup>4</sup>) hall (t'ang<sup>2</sup>).
2. He wants an examination paper and a question = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) examination (k'ao<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) paper (chüan<sup>4</sup>-tzu<sup>3</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) question (t'i<sup>2</sup>-mu<sup>4</sup>).

3. There are nine questions in all, six of which are to be answered = altogether (i<sup>1</sup>.kung<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) nine (chiu<sup>3</sup>) question (t'i<sup>2</sup>) allow (任 jēn<sup>4</sup>) answer (ta<sup>2</sup>) six (liu<sup>4</sup>) question (t'i<sup>2</sup>).
4. The Head of the Department asks the student to read and translate it into English = Head of the Department (hsı<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.jēn<sup>4</sup>) call (chia<sup>4</sup>) student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.shēng<sup>1</sup>) read (nien<sup>4</sup>) moreover (ping<sup>4</sup>.ch'ieh<sup>3</sup>) call (chia<sup>4</sup>) student translate (fan<sup>1</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>) English text (ying<sup>1</sup>.wēn<sup>2</sup>).
5. The student passed the examination = student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.shēng<sup>1</sup>) examination (k'ao<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) pass (chih<sup>2</sup>.ko<sup>2</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
6. I passed the written examination = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) written examination (pi<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>.k'ao<sup>3</sup>) pass (chih<sup>2</sup>.ko<sup>2</sup>) ed.
7. He did not pass the oral examination = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) pass (chih<sup>2</sup>.ko<sup>2</sup>) oral examination (k'ou<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>).
8. We borrow books from the library = we (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn) from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) library borrow (chieh<sup>4</sup>) book (shu<sup>1</sup>).
9. There are great many Chinese books in our National Library = our (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn-ti<sup>4</sup>) national library (kuo<sup>2</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup> t'u<sup>2</sup>.shu<sup>1</sup>.kuan<sup>3</sup>) in (li<sup>3</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) many (to<sup>1</sup>) Chinese (chung<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>) book (shu<sup>1</sup>).
10. He is very fond of reading novels = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) love (ai<sup>4</sup>) read (k'an<sup>4</sup>, to look at, to read) novel.
11. He takes the book from the shelf = he take (pa<sup>3</sup>) book from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) shelf (chia<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) on (shang<sup>4</sup>) pull (kou<sup>4</sup>) down (hsia<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
12. He fills in a book-ticket (a borrowing slip) = he fill (t'ien<sup>2</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) book-ticket (chiēh<sup>4</sup>.shu<sup>1</sup>.tan<sup>1</sup>).
13. He fills in the title of the book and the name of the author = he fill (t'ien<sup>2</sup>) on (shang<sup>4</sup>) book ((shu<sup>1</sup>) name (ming<sup>2</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) author (chu<sup>4</sup>.tso<sup>4</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>).-s (ti<sup>4</sup>) name (hsing<sup>4</sup>.ming<sup>2</sup>).
14. He signs it (or his name) = he sign (ch'ien<sup>1</sup>) on (shang<sup>4</sup>) letter (tzü<sup>4</sup>) (his name, t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup> ming<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>).

## TWENTY-SECOND LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

## VOCABULARY

1. 警察 ching<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>, the police, policeman; where the former means 'to warn' and the latter 'to examine judicially, to find out.'
2. .. .. 局 ching<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>-chü<sup>2</sup>, a police station; where chü<sup>2</sup> means 'an office'.
3. .. 士 ching<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, a constable; where the latter means 'a soldier'.
4. .. 長 ching<sup>3</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Inspector of police, police sergeant; where chang<sup>3</sup> means 'old, senior, chief'.
5. .. 察總監 ching<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>-tsung<sup>3</sup>-chien<sup>1</sup>, Commissioner of police; where tsung<sup>3</sup> means 'the chief; to manage' and chien<sup>1</sup> means 'to inspect'.
6. 報才案 pao<sup>4</sup>-t'an<sup>4</sup>, a detective; where pao<sup>4</sup> means 'to report, to inform' and t'an<sup>4</sup> means 'to spy, to search out'.
7. 法堂 fa<sup>3</sup>-t'ang<sup>2</sup>, a court; where the former means 'laws, statutes' and the latter means 'a hall'.
8. 案件 an<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>4</sup>, a case, a trial; where the former means 'a case at law, legal records' and the latter means 'an article'.
9. 報告 pao<sup>4</sup>-kao<sup>4</sup>, a report; where kao<sup>4</sup> means 'to tell, to inform'.
10. 獄 yü<sup>4</sup> (iuh<sup>4</sup>) a prison, a gaol.
11. 海關 hai<sup>3</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, a custom-house; where the former means 'the sea' and the latter means 'a frontier-pass or gate; a custom-house'.
12. 行李 hsing<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, a luggage, a baggage; where the former means 'to travel' and the latter means 'a plum'.

13. 護照 hu<sup>4</sup>-chao<sup>4</sup>, a passport; where hu<sup>4</sup> means 'to guard, to escort' and chao<sup>4</sup> means 'a pass, a permit'.
14. 監察 chien<sup>1</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>, to examine, to inspect; where chien<sup>1</sup> means 'to inspect'.
15. 兵 ping<sup>1</sup>, soldier.
16. 陸軍 lu<sup>4</sup>-chün<sup>1</sup>, army; where lu<sup>4</sup> means 'dry land' and chün<sup>1</sup> means 'military, army'.
17. 海 „, hai<sup>2</sup>-chün<sup>1</sup>, navy.
18. 空 „, k'ung<sup>1</sup>-chün<sup>1</sup>, air force; where k'ung<sup>1</sup> means 'empty, hollow'.
19. 師 shih<sup>1</sup>, a division (military unit).
20. 劍 chi'en<sup>4</sup>, a sword.
21. 鎗 ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, a gun.
22. „, 彈 ch'iang<sup>1</sup>-tan<sup>4</sup>, a cartridge, a bullet; where tan<sup>4</sup> means 'a bullet, a shell'.
23. 子 „, tzü<sup>3</sup>-tan<sup>4</sup>, a cartridge, a bullet.
24. 手鎗 shou<sup>3</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, a pistol.
25. 機關鎗 chi<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, a machine-gun; where chi<sup>1</sup> means 'a machine'.
26. 六輪式手鎗 liu<sup>4</sup>-lun<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, a revolver; where liu<sup>4</sup> means 'six', lun<sup>2</sup> means 'a wheel' and shih<sup>4</sup> means 'a pattern'.
27. 轉 „, „, „, chuan<sup>4</sup>-lun<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, a revolver; where chuan<sup>4</sup> means 'to revolve'.
28. 炸彈 cha<sup>4</sup>-tan<sup>4</sup>, a bomb; where cha<sup>4</sup> means 'to explode, to burst'.
29. 軍官 chün<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, an officer; where kuan<sup>1</sup> means 'an official'.
30. 碲臺 p'ao<sup>4</sup>-t'ai<sup>2</sup>, a fort; where the former means 'a cannon, a gun' and the latter means 'a tower, a terrace'.
31. 旗 ch'i<sup>2</sup>, a flag.
32. 顏色 yén<sup>2</sup>-sé<sup>4</sup>, colour; where both mean 'colour'.

33. 烟 yen<sup>1</sup>, a cigarette, smoke, tobacco.

34. „ 灰碟 yen<sup>1</sup>-hui<sup>1</sup>-tieh<sup>2</sup>, an ashtray; where hui<sup>1</sup> means 'ashes, dust, lime' and tieh<sup>2</sup> means 'a plate, a saucer'.

35. 鼻烟 pi<sup>2</sup>-yen<sup>1</sup>, snuff; where pi<sup>2</sup> means 'the nose'.

36. 種 chung<sup>3</sup>, a kind or sort.

37. 酒 chiu<sup>3</sup> (tsiu<sup>3</sup>), wine.

38. 紙牌 chih<sup>3</sup>-p'ai<sup>2</sup>, playing-cards; where the former means 'paper' and the latter means 'a placard, a sign-board, a tablet'.

39. 網球 wang<sup>3</sup> (uang<sup>3</sup>)-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, tennis; where wang<sup>3</sup> means 'a net, a web' and ch'iu<sup>2</sup> means 'a ball'.

40. 籃 „ lan<sup>2</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, basket-ball; where lan<sup>2</sup> means 'a basket'.

41. 排 „ p'ai<sup>2</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, volleyball; where p'ai<sup>2</sup> means 'a row, a line, a rank'.

42. 足 „ chü<sup>2</sup> (tsu<sup>2</sup>)-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, foot-ball; where chü<sup>2</sup> means 'the foot'.

43. 應該 ying<sup>1</sup>-kai<sup>1</sup>, should, ought to; where both mean 'should, ought to'.

44. 抽 ch'ou<sup>1</sup>, to smoke; to draw out, to take out.

45. 打 ta<sup>3</sup>, to play (cards), to beat, to strike.

46. 喜歡 hsi<sup>3</sup>-huan<sup>1</sup>, like, fond of; where both mean 'pleasure, joy, pleased, glad'.

47. 踢 t'i<sup>1</sup>, to kick (the ball).

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. He is an Inspector of Police = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Inspector of Police (ching<sup>3</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>).
2. I am going to the Police Station = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) to (到) tao<sup>4</sup>) Police Station go (ch'u<sup>4</sup>).
3. The Commissioner of Police will come to-morrow from Delhi = Commissioner of Police from (ch'ung<sup>2</sup> or ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) Delhi to-morrow (ming<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
4. What are the soldiers doing ? = soldier do (tso<sup>4</sup>) what (shen<sup>2</sup>-mo<sup>3</sup>)?

5. They are playing football = they (t'a<sup>1</sup>-mēn) kick ball (ch'iu<sup>2</sup>).
6. The officers are playing cards = officer (chūn<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>) play (ta<sup>3</sup>) playing-card.
7. This fort is very big = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) fort very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) big (ta<sup>4</sup>).
8. That gaol is very small = that (na<sup>4</sup>) gaol very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) small (hsiao<sup>3</sup>).
9. Where is the court ? = where (na<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) court.
10. There is a customs-house over there = there (na<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) customs-house.
11. He is examining my luggage = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) examine (chien<sup>1</sup>.ch'a<sup>2</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) luggage.
12. Have you a gun = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) gun mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle) ?
13. No, I have not = no (pu<sup>4</sup>), I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>).
14. We should not drink wine = we (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) should (ying<sup>1</sup>.kai<sup>1</sup>) drink (ho<sup>1</sup>) wine.
15. I have no cigarette = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) cigarette.
16. I do not like smoking = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) like (hsı-huan<sup>1</sup>) smoke (ch'ou<sup>1</sup>) cigarette.
17. Here is an ashtray = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) ashtray.
18. What is the colour of our National Flag = our (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn.ti<sup>4</sup>) national (國 kuo<sup>2</sup>) flag is (shih<sup>4</sup>) what (shēn<sup>2</sup>.mo<sup>3</sup>) colour (yēn<sup>2</sup>.sē<sup>4</sup>) ?
19. Our national flag has three colours—yellow, white and green = our national flag has (yu<sup>3</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) kind (chung<sup>3</sup>) colour—yellow (huang<sup>2</sup>) white (pai<sup>4</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) green (ch'ing<sup>1</sup>.sē<sup>4</sup>).

## TWENTY-THIRD LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

## VOCABULARY

1. 卧室 wō<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, a bed-room; where the former one means 'to rest, to lie down' and the latter means 'a room, an apartment'.
2. 浴 .. yü<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, a bath-room; where the former means 'to bathe'.
3. 肥皂 fei<sup>2</sup>-tsao<sup>4</sup>, soap; where the former means 'fat' and the latter means 'black'.
4. 塊 k'uai<sup>4</sup>, a piece (of).
5. 海綿 hai<sup>3</sup>-mien<sup>2</sup>, sponge; where hai<sup>3</sup> means 'the sea' and mien<sup>2</sup> means 'soft; floss silk'.
6. 水關子 shui<sup>3</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, water-tap; where shui<sup>3</sup> means 'water' and kuan<sup>1</sup> means 'a frontier-pass or gate'.
7. 臉 lien<sup>3</sup>, the face.
8. 口 k'ou<sup>3</sup>, the mouth.
9. 衣裳 i<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>2</sup>, clothes; where i<sup>1</sup> means 'clothing' and shang<sup>2</sup> means 'clothes'.
10. 刷子 shua<sup>1</sup>- tzü<sup>3</sup>, a brush.
11. 牙粉 ya<sup>2</sup>-fēn<sup>3</sup>, tooth-powder; where the former means 'tooth' and the latter means 'powder'.
12. .. 膏 ya<sup>2</sup>-kao<sup>1</sup>, tooth-paste; where kao<sup>1</sup> means 'ointment, fat, grease'.
13. .. 牀子 ya<sup>2</sup>-ch'uang<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, the gum; where ch'uang<sup>2</sup> means 'a couch, a bed'.
14. 手巾 shou<sup>3</sup>-chin<sup>1</sup>, a towel; where the former means 'the hand' and the latter means 'a napkin; a cap'.
15. 頭 .. t'ou<sup>2</sup>-chin<sup>1</sup>, a turban; where t'ou<sup>2</sup> means 'the head'.

16. 理髮匠 li<sup>3</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>-chiang<sup>4</sup> (tsiang<sup>4</sup>), a barber; where li<sup>3</sup> means 'to arrange', fa<sup>3</sup> means 'the hair on the human head' [li<sup>3</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>, to dress the hair, hair-cut] and chiang<sup>4</sup> denotes 'a workman, a mechanic'.

17. ,, 室 li<sup>3</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, a barber's shop, where shih<sup>4</sup> means 'a house'.

18. 刮臉刀 kua<sup>1</sup>-lien<sup>3</sup>-tao<sup>1</sup>, a razor; where kua<sup>1</sup> means 'to shave', lien<sup>3</sup> denotes 'the face' and tao<sup>1</sup> means 'a knife, a sword, a razor'.

19. 推子 t'ui<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a hair-clipper; where t'ui<sup>1</sup> means 'to push, to expel'.

20. 翦,, chien<sup>3</sup> (tsien<sup>3</sup>)-tzü<sup>3</sup>, scissors; where 'chien<sup>3</sup>' denotes 'to cut with scissors; to trim'.

21. 梳,, shu<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a comb; where shu<sup>1</sup> means 'to comb'.

22. 鏡,, ching<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a mirror.

23. 洗頭 hsi<sup>3</sup> (si<sup>3</sup>)-t'ou<sup>2</sup>, a shampoo; where hsi<sup>3</sup> means 'to wash' and t'ou<sup>2</sup> denotes 'the head'.

24. 木卓子 cho<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a table.

25. 畫報 hua<sup>4</sup>-pao<sup>4</sup>, an illustrated magazine; where hua<sup>4</sup> means 'a picture, a painting, a drawing' and pao<sup>4</sup> denotes 'a newspaper'.

26. 每 mei<sup>3</sup>, each, every.

27. ,, 天 mei<sup>3</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>, every day.

28. 睡覺 shui<sup>4</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, sleep, to sleep, where the former means 'to sleep, to doze' and the latter denotes 'a nap'.

29. ,, 的 shui<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, asleep.

30. 全 ch'üan<sup>2</sup> (ts'üan<sup>2</sup>), all, the whole.

31. 享 hsiang<sup>3</sup>, to enjoy.

32. 醒 hsing<sup>3</sup> (sing<sup>3</sup>), to wake up, to be aroused.

33. ,, 叫 hsing<sup>3</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, to awake; when the latter means 'to cause, to let'.

34. ,, 鐘 hsing<sup>3</sup>-chung<sup>1</sup>, the alarm-clock; where chung<sup>1</sup> means 'a clock'.

35. 游 yu<sup>2</sup>, to go, to roam, to travel.
36. 拿 or 拿 na<sup>2</sup>, to take.
37. 起 ch'i<sup>3</sup>, to rise, to raise.  
[ na<sup>2</sup>-ch'i<sup>3</sup>+lai<sup>2</sup> (to come) = to pick up, to take ].
38. 搓上 ts'o<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>, to rub over; where the former means 'to rub' and the latter denotes 'on, over'.
39. 嘶 shu<sup>4</sup> (also read sou<sup>4</sup>), to rinse (the mouth).
40. 磨 mo<sup>2</sup>, to sharpen.
41. 完 wan<sup>2</sup>, to finish, to complete. [ wan<sup>2</sup>-la<sup>1</sup> (= liao<sup>3</sup>), finished ].
42. 找 chao<sup>3</sup>, to look for, to find, to seek.
43. 於是 yü<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, then; where the former denotes 'in, on, at, by, from' and the latter means 'to be'.
44. 然後 jan<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>4</sup>, then; where the former means 'really, nevertheless, although, on the other hand' and the latter denotes 'afterwards, behind, then'.
45. 亦 i<sup>4</sup>, and.

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. Every morning he sleeps = everyday (mei<sup>3</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>) morning (chao<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>) he sleep (shui<sup>4</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>).
2. He wakes up = he wake up [ hsing-kuo<sup>4</sup> (過) -lai<sup>2</sup> (來) ].
3. Then he goes from the bed-room to the bath-room = then (yü<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) he go (yu<sup>2</sup>) from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) bed-room to (到) tao<sup>4</sup> bath-room.
4. He has a bath = he bathe (hsie<sup>3</sup>-tsao<sup>3</sup>).
5. He takes a sponge and a piece of soap = he take (na<sup>2</sup>) rise (ch'i<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (k'uai<sup>4</sup>) sponge and (k'en<sup>1</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (k'uai<sup>4</sup>) soap come (lai<sup>3</sup>).
6. Then with the sponge he rubs soap over his whole body = then (yü<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) he use (yung<sup>4</sup>) sponge take (把) pa<sup>3</sup> he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) whole (ch'u'an<sup>2</sup>) body (shen<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>) (then) all (tu<sup>1</sup>) rub over soap.
7. He washes his face = he wash (hsie<sup>3</sup>) face (lien<sup>3</sup>).
8. He puts the tooth-paste on the tooth-brush = he put (放) fang<sup>4</sup> tooth-paste on (在) tsai<sup>4</sup> tooth-brush (ya<sup>2</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>) on (shang<sup>4</sup>).

42. Cf. Bengali চাষা cāoyā, meaning পাইতে ইষা করা (to seek, to look for), খেত (to find).

9. He brushes his teeth and rinses his mouth = he brush (shua<sup>1</sup>) tooth (ya<sup>2</sup>) rinse (shu<sup>4</sup>) mouth (k'ou<sup>3</sup>).
10. He rinses his teeth, gums and tongue = he rinse (shu<sup>4</sup>) tooth, gum and (ken<sup>1</sup>) tongue (shé<sup>2</sup>.t'ou<sup>2</sup>).
11. After washing his face and brushing his teeth he puts on his clothes and his shoes = he wash (hsia<sup>3</sup>) finished (wan<sup>2</sup>.la<sup>1</sup>) face (lien<sup>3</sup>) brush (shua<sup>1</sup>) finished (wan<sup>2</sup>.la<sup>1</sup>) tooth (ya<sup>2</sup>) and (i<sup>4</sup>) then (hou<sup>4</sup>) he put on (ch'u'an<sup>1</sup>) clothes (i<sup>1</sup>.shang<sup>2</sup>) put on (ch'u'an<sup>1</sup>) shoes (hsieh<sup>2</sup>.tzu<sup>3</sup>).
12. I went to the barber's shop for hair-cut = I to (tao<sup>4</sup>) barber's shop go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) hair-cut (li<sup>3</sup>.fa<sup>3</sup>).
13. On the table there were newspapers and illustrated magazines = table on (shang<sup>4</sup>) there were (yu<sup>3</sup>) newspaper (pao<sup>4</sup>) and (kén<sup>1</sup>) illustrated magazine (hua<sup>4</sup>.pao<sup>4</sup>).
14. The barber asked me, 'Do you want a hair-cut or a shave ?' = barber (li<sup>3</sup>.fa<sup>3</sup>.chiang<sup>4</sup>) ask (wén<sup>4</sup>) ed me (wo<sup>3</sup>) you (nin<sup>2</sup>) are (shih<sup>4</sup>) hair-cut, are (shih<sup>4</sup>) shave (kua<sup>1</sup>) face (lien<sup>3</sup>).
15. I said, 'Hair-cut and shave' = I say (shuo<sup>1</sup>) ed hair-cut and (kén<sup>1</sup>) shave face.
16. He takes the clippers and clips the short hair and then using a comb and scissors he cuts the long hair = he take rise (na<sup>2</sup>.ch'i<sup>3</sup>) clipper come (lai<sup>2</sup>) first (先 hsien<sup>1</sup>) clip (t'ui<sup>1</sup>) short (tuan<sup>3</sup>) hair (t'ou<sup>2</sup>.fa<sup>3</sup>) then (jan<sup>2</sup>.hou<sup>4</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) comb (shu<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) and (kén<sup>1</sup>) scissors (chien<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) cut (chien<sup>3</sup>) long (ch'ang<sup>2</sup>) hair (t'ou<sup>2</sup>.fa<sup>3</sup>).
17. Hair-cut is finished = hair-cut finished (wan<sup>2</sup>.la<sup>1</sup>).
18. The barber hands to me a mirror = barber hand over (ti<sup>4</sup>) give (kei<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) mirror.
19. He invites me to look at myself = please (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) myself (wo<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>3</sup>) look (chao<sup>3</sup>).
20. Then he sharpens his razor = then (yü<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) he sharpen (mo<sup>2</sup>) sharpen (mo<sup>2</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) razor.
21. He shaves my face = he shave (kua<sup>1</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) face (lien<sup>3</sup>).
22. He gives me a shampoo = he give (kei<sup>3</sup>) me (wo<sup>3</sup>) shampoo.

## TWENTY-FOURTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 地 *ti<sup>4</sup>*, the earth, land, soil.
2. „ 方 *ti<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>*, a place; where the latter means 'a place, a square, a direction'.
3. 世界 *shih<sup>4</sup>-chieh<sup>4</sup>*, the world; where the former means 'the world, society' and the latter 'a boundary, a limit'.
4. 事情 *shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'ing<sup>2</sup>* (*ts'ing<sup>2</sup>*), a matter, a business; where the former means 'an affair, a matter, a business' and the latter denotes 'circumstances'.
5. 工作 *kung<sup>1</sup>-tso<sup>4</sup>*, a work, to work; where the former means 'labour, a labourer, a job' and the latter 'to do, to make, to work'.
6. 和平 *ho<sup>2</sup>-ping<sup>2</sup>*, peace; where the former means 'peace, harmony' and the latter 'level, even, just, equal, common'.
7. 路 *lu<sup>4</sup>*, a road, a way.
8. 旅行 *lü<sup>3</sup>-hsing<sup>2</sup>*, journey, to travel; where the former means 'to travel,' and the latter 'to travel, to walk'.
9. 航海 *hang<sup>2</sup>-hai<sup>3</sup>*, voyage, to navigate; where the former means 'to sail, to navigate' and the latter 'the sea'.
10. 歡迎 *huan<sup>1</sup>-ying<sup>2</sup>*, welcome; to welcome; where the former means 'to welcome, to enjoy' and the latter 'to receive, to welcome'.
11. 生命 *shêng<sup>1</sup>-ming<sup>4</sup>*, life; where both mean 'life'.
12. 戰爭 *chan<sup>4</sup>-chêng<sup>1</sup>*, war; where the former means 'to fight, to war' and the latter 'to strive, to contend, to wrangle'.
13. 敵人 *ti<sup>2</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup>*, a foe, an enemy [lit. enemy-man].

14. 山 shan<sup>1</sup>, a mountain, a hill.
15. 石 shih<sup>2</sup>, stone, rock.
16. 煤 mei<sup>2</sup>, coal.
17. 棉 mien<sup>2</sup>, cotton.
18. 輪子 lun<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a wheel [lun<sup>2</sup>, to revolve].
19. ,, 轉 lun<sup>2</sup>-chuan<sup>4</sup>, to revolve, to turn around ; where chuan<sup>4</sup> means 'to turn around, to revolve'.
20. 蠢 ch'un<sup>3</sup>, foolish, stupid.
21. 聰明 ts'ung<sup>1</sup>-ming<sup>2</sup>, wise ; where the former means 'quick of apprehension' and the latter 'bright, intelligent'.
22. 堅牢 chien<sup>4</sup>-lao<sup>2</sup>, hard ; where the former means 'hard, durable, strong' and the latter 'firm, firmly'.
23. 硬 ying<sup>4</sup>, hard.
24. 軟 juan<sup>3</sup>, soft, tender, light.
25. 有用 yu<sup>3</sup>-yung<sup>4</sup>, useful [lit. have use].
26. 奇怪 ch'i<sup>2</sup>-kuai<sup>4</sup>, strange ; where the former means 'strange, wonderful, rare' and the latter 'strange, wonderful'.
27. 平安 ping<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>1</sup>, safe ; where an<sup>1</sup> means 'peace, quiet'.
28. 肥 fei<sup>2</sup>, fertile, fat.
29. 靖 tsing<sup>4</sup>, quiet, to pacify.
30. 需要 hsü<sup>1</sup> (sü<sup>1</sup>)-yao<sup>4</sup>, necessary, demand ; where the former means 'to require, to need, essential' and the latter 'necessary'.
31. 急 chi<sup>2</sup>, urgent, important.
32. 緊要 chin<sup>3</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>, urgent, important ; where chin<sup>3</sup> means 'urgent, important'.
33. 懶惰 lan<sup>3</sup>-to<sup>4</sup>, lazy, idle ; where both mean 'lazy, idle'.
34. 贏 ying<sup>2</sup>, to win.

14. It is also pronounced as 'san' ; Cf. Skt. सान् sánu, meaning 'a peak, a summit', also 'a mountain, a hill' (RV. VI. 39. 2).

15. Cf. Skt. सिला si-lá, a stone.

35. 成功 ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>, to succeed, successful ; where the former means 'to succeed' and the latter 'achievement'.

36. 反抗 fan<sup>3</sup>-k'ang<sup>4</sup>, to resist ; where the former means 'to rebel, to turn over' and the latter 'to oppose, to resist'.

37. 拒絕 chü<sup>4</sup>-tsüeh<sup>2</sup>, to refuse ; where the former means 'to oppose, to resist' and the latter 'to cut short, to break off, to interrupt'.

38. 逆 ni<sup>4</sup>, to rebel, rebellion.

39. 換 huan<sup>4</sup>, to change, to exchange.

40. 變化 pien<sup>4</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, to change ; where both mean 'to change, to alter'.

41. 私人 ssü<sup>1</sup> (szü<sup>1</sup>)-jên<sup>2</sup>, a private individual ; personal.

42. 讓 jang<sup>4</sup>, to let.

43. 剛剛 kang<sup>1</sup>-kang<sup>1</sup>, just.

44. 只 chih<sup>3</sup>, only.

45. 僅僅 chin<sup>3</sup>-chin<sup>3</sup>, only.

46. 一同 i<sup>1</sup>-t'ung<sup>2</sup>, together ; where the former means 'one, unity' and the latter 'together'.

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. The soil is very fertile = soil (ti<sup>4</sup>) very (hêng<sup>3</sup>) fertile (fei<sup>2</sup>).
2. The world goes round like a wheel (i.e. the affairs of the world are constantly changing = world (shih<sup>4</sup>-chieh<sup>4</sup>) like (ju<sup>2</sup>) wheel (lun<sup>2</sup>) revolve (chuan<sup>4</sup>) [lun<sup>2</sup>. chuan<sup>4</sup>, to revolve].
3. This is my personal business = this (chê<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) personal (ssü<sup>1</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup>) business (shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'ing<sup>2</sup>).
4. The matter is urgent = this (chê<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) urgent matter (shih<sup>4</sup>).
5. That work is very useful = that (na<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) work (kung<sup>1</sup>-tso<sup>4</sup>) very (hêng<sup>3</sup>) useful (yu<sup>3</sup>-yung<sup>4</sup>).
6. May you enjoy peace all the way (Bon voyage) = one (i<sup>1</sup>) road (lu<sup>4</sup>) safe (ping<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>1</sup>).
7. They won the war = they (t'a<sup>1</sup>-mên) win (ying<sup>2</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) war (chan<sup>4</sup>-chêng<sup>1</sup>).

41. Cf. Skt. **स्वा** svâ, own, self ; Gk. **ἴ**, ὁς, δρός ; Lat. **se**, SOVOS, suus ; Goth. **sik** ; Germ. **sich**.

8. An idle man cannot succeed in life = idle (lan<sup>3</sup>.to<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) one life (i<sup>1</sup>.shēng<sup>1</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) succeed (ch'ēng<sup>2</sup>.kung<sup>1</sup>).
9. The Russians resisted the enemy = Russia (ngo<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) resist (fan<sup>3</sup>.k'ang<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) enemy (ti<sup>2</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>).
10. My brother has just arrived = my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) brother (hsiumg<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) just (kung<sup>1</sup>.kung<sup>1</sup>) arrive (至) tao<sup>4</sup>.
11. You are a fool = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) are (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) foolish (ch'un<sup>3</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>).
12. He is a wise man = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one piece wise (ts'ung<sup>1</sup>.ming<sup>2</sup>) man.
13. Your younger brother is a strange man = your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) younger brother (ti<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) strange (ch'i<sup>2</sup>.kuai<sup>4</sup>) man.
14. Change it for a new one = change (huan<sup>4</sup>) it (上 shang<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) new (hsin<sup>1</sup>) one (的) ti<sup>4</sup>).
15. We travelled together = we (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn) together (i<sup>1</sup>.t'ung<sup>2</sup>) travel (lū<sup>3</sup>.hsing<sup>2</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
16. Let us go = let (jang<sup>4</sup>) we (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
17. The soldiers put down rebellion = soldier (ping<sup>1</sup>) pacify (tsing<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) rebellion (ni<sup>4</sup>).
18. India and Pakistan should cease hostilities = India (yin<sup>4</sup>.tu<sup>4</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) Pakistan (pa<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>1</sup>.su<sup>1</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>) should (ying<sup>1</sup>.kai<sup>1</sup>) pacify arms (兵 ping<sup>1</sup>).
19. I am going to the railway station to welcome my friend = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) railway station (huo<sup>3</sup>.ch'ē<sup>1</sup>.chan<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>) welcome (huan<sup>4</sup>.yin<sup>2</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) friend (p'ēng<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>).
20. I have only three rupees = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) only (chih<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) rupee.
21. This mountain is the biggest of all = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) mountain (shan<sup>1</sup>) most (tsui<sup>4</sup>) big (ta<sup>4</sup>).
22. Cotton is soft, but coal is hard = cotton (mien<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) soft (juān<sup>3</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>) but (tan<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) coal (mei<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) hard (ying<sup>4</sup> or chien<sup>4</sup>.lao<sup>2</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
23. Stone is as hard as iron = stone (shih<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) hard (ying<sup>4</sup>) as (ju<sup>2</sup>) iron (t'ieh<sup>3</sup>).
24. He has changed his mind (views) = he change (pien<sup>4</sup>.hua<sup>4</sup>) ed mind (心) hsin<sup>1</sup> or sin<sup>1</sup>).

## TWENTY-FIFTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

### VOCABULARY

1. 話匣子 hua<sup>4</sup>-hsia<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a gramophone ; where hua<sup>4</sup> means 'a word, talk, to speak' and hsia<sup>2</sup> denotes 'a small box, a casket'.
2. 片子 p'ien<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a (gramophone) record ; where p'ien<sup>4</sup> means 'a splinter, a slice, a strip, a slip, a flake'.
3. 無線電 wu<sup>2</sup>-hsien<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>4</sup>, a radio ; where wu<sup>2</sup> means 'without', hsien<sup>4</sup> means 'wire, thread' and tien<sup>4</sup> denotes 'electricity'.
4. 電影 tien<sup>4</sup>-ying<sup>3</sup>, cinema ; where the latter means 'a shadow, an image, a reflection'.
5. 影戲 ying<sup>3</sup>-hsı<sup>4</sup>, motion picture ; where the latter means 'a play, to play'.
6. 戲園 hsi<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, a theatre, where the latter means 'a park, a garden'.
7. ,, 劇 hsi<sup>4</sup>-chü<sup>4</sup>, a play, a drama ; where the latter means 'a comedy, a play, a drama'.
8. ,, 曲 hsi<sup>4</sup>-ch'ü<sup>3</sup>, a drama ; where the latter means 'a song, a play'.
9. ,, „ 家 hsi<sup>4</sup>-ch'ü<sup>3</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, a dramatist.
10. ,, 子 hsi<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, an actor.
11. ,, 臺 hsi<sup>4</sup>-t'ai<sup>2</sup>, the stage ; where the latter means 'a platform, a stage, a tower'.
12. 票 p'iao<sup>4</sup>, a ticket.
13. 頭等 t'ou<sup>2</sup>-têng<sup>3</sup>, 1st class ; where the latter means 'a class'.
14. 二 „ êrh<sup>4</sup>-têng<sup>3</sup>, 2nd class.
15. 三 „ san<sup>1</sup>-têng<sup>3</sup>, 3rd class.
16. 片子 p'ien<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a (cinema) film.

17. 墮 to<sup>4</sup> (tuo<sup>4</sup>), to fall, to sink, to set (as the sun).

18. 從來沒 ts'ung<sup>2</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>-mei<sup>2</sup>, never ; where ts'ung<sup>2</sup> means 'from, by, since' ; lai<sup>2</sup> means 'to come' and ts'ung<sup>2</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup> = at any time ; mei<sup>2</sup> denotes 'not'.

**Exercise (with hints)**

1. He has brought the gramophone = he take (na<sup>2</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) [na<sup>2</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup> = to bring] ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) gramophone.
2. My sister opens the gramophone and hears the record = my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) sister (chie<sup>3</sup>.mo<sup>4</sup>) take (pa<sup>3</sup>) gramophone strike (ta<sup>3</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>) [ta<sup>3</sup>.k'ai<sup>1</sup> = to open] and (k'en<sup>1</sup>) hear (t'ing<sup>1</sup>) record.
3. Mrs. Sen has bought the radio = Sen Mrs. (t'ai<sup>4</sup>.t'ai<sup>4</sup>) buy (mai<sup>3</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) radio.
4. They went together to the cinema to see a film = they (t'a<sup>1</sup>.m'en) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) together (i<sup>1</sup>.t'ung<sup>2</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) cinema (tien<sup>4</sup>.ying<sup>3</sup>) hall (yuan<sup>4</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) film.
5. It was past six o'clock when the film was over = look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) finish (wan<sup>2</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup> or la<sup>1</sup>) cinema (tien<sup>4</sup>.ying<sup>3</sup>) already (i<sup>3</sup>.ching<sup>1</sup>) six (liu<sup>4</sup>) dot (tien<sup>3</sup>) fall (to<sup>4</sup>) ed [= past] (liao<sup>3</sup>).
6. Both of them have never seen the theatre = two (liang<sup>3</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) all (tu<sup>1</sup>) never (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>.mei<sup>2</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) theatre.
7. The world is a stage where we all are actors = world (shih<sup>4</sup>.chieh<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) stage (hsie<sup>4</sup>.t'ai<sup>2</sup>) we (wo<sup>3</sup>.m'en) all (tu<sup>1</sup>) are (shih<sup>4</sup>) actor (hsie<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>).

## TWENTY-SIXTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

## VOCABULARY

1. 故事 *ku<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, a story ; where the former means 'old' and the latter 'an affair, a matter'.
2. 意 *i<sup>4</sup>*, a meaning, an idea, an opinion, wish, will, purpose.
3. 自來水筆 *tzü<sup>4</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>*, a fountain-pen ; where *tzü<sup>4</sup>* means 'self', *lai<sup>2</sup>* means 'to come', *shui<sup>3</sup>* denotes 'water' and *pi<sup>3</sup>* means 'a pen'.
4. 墨 *mo<sup>4</sup>* (*mê<sup>4</sup>*), ink.
5. 吸墨紙 *hsü<sup>1</sup>-mo<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>*, blotting-paper ; where *hsü<sup>1</sup>* means 'to suck up, to attract, to inhale' and *chih<sup>3</sup>* means 'paper'.
6. 橡皮 *hsiang<sup>4</sup>* (*siang<sup>4</sup>*)-*p'i<sup>2</sup>*, India-rubber ; where *hsiang<sup>4</sup>* means 'the chestnut-oak' and *p'i<sup>2</sup>* means 'skin, bark'.
7. 擦子 *ts'a<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>*, an eraser, where the former means 'to rub, to wipe, to clean, to scour'.
8. 印刷 *yin<sup>4</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>*, to print ; where *yin<sup>4</sup>* means 'to print, to stamp ; a stamp, a mark, an official seal' and *shua<sup>1</sup>* means 'a brush, to brush, to cleanse, to scrub, to print, specially from blocks'.
9. ,, , 機 *yin<sup>4</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>*, a printing machine ; where *chi<sup>1</sup>* means 'a machine, a loom'.
10. ,, , 品 *yin<sup>4</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>-p'in<sup>3</sup>*, a printed matter ; where *p'in<sup>3</sup>* means 'a kind, a class, a series, an order, degree, rank, a thing, to classify, to estimate'.
11. 鎖頭 *so<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>2</sup>*, a lock ; where *so<sup>3</sup>* (*suo<sup>3</sup>*) means 'a lock, chains, fetters ; to lock' and *t'ou<sup>2</sup>* means 'the head, a noun-suffix'.

12. 鑰匙 yō<sup>4</sup> (yao<sup>4</sup>)-shih<sup>2</sup>, a key; where both mean 'a key'.
13. 口袋 k'ou<sup>3</sup>-tai<sup>4</sup>, a pocket; where k'ou<sup>3</sup> means 'an opening, a mouth, a hole' and tai<sup>4</sup> means 'a pocket, a bag'.
14. 乾 kan<sup>1</sup>, dry, to dry.
15. 由 yu<sup>2</sup> (iu<sup>2</sup>), from.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. He is writing a story with a fountain-pen = he use (yung<sup>4</sup>) fountain-pen on (tsai<sup>4</sup>) write (hsieh<sup>3</sup>) story (ku<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>).
2. The boy first dries the ink with blotting-paper = boy (hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>) first (hsien<sup>1</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) blotting-paper take (pa<sup>3</sup>) liquid ink (mo<sup>4</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, lit. ink-water) suck up (hsí<sup>1</sup>) dry (kan<sup>1</sup>) lo<sup>1</sup> (a final particle).
3. He erases the character with India-rubber = he use (yung<sup>4</sup>) India-rubber take (pa<sup>3</sup>) character (tzü<sup>4</sup>) erase (ts'a<sup>1</sup>-hsia<sup>4</sup>-ch'ü<sup>4</sup>, lit. rub-down-go).
4. Every word has a meaning = word (tzü<sup>4</sup>) word (tzü<sup>4</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) meaning (i<sup>4</sup>).
5. He has a good printing machine = he has (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) printing machine (yin<sup>4</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>).
6. Have you an eraser? = you have (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) eraser mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle)?
7. He takes the key out of the pocket = he from (yu<sup>2</sup>) pocket (k'ou<sup>3</sup>-tai<sup>4</sup>) inside (li<sup>3</sup>) take (na<sup>2</sup>) out (ch'u<sup>1</sup>) key come (lai<sup>2</sup>) [na<sup>2</sup>-ch'u<sup>1</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>, to take out].
8. He unlocks the door with the key = he use (yung<sup>4</sup>) key take (pa<sup>3</sup>) door (mēn<sup>2</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) lock (so<sup>3</sup>) strike (ta<sup>3</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>).
9. Lock the door = lock (so<sup>3</sup>) up (shang<sup>4</sup>) door (mēn<sup>2</sup>).

*Note.*—用 yung<sup>4</sup> is used for expressing the English preposition 'with' denoting the means by which an action is done; whereas denoting possession 有 yu<sup>2</sup>, to have, is used; e.g., a house with six rooms—**有六間屋子的房子** yu<sup>2</sup> liu<sup>4</sup> chien<sup>1</sup>-wu<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>4</sup> fang<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>. Again denoting company 跟 kēn<sup>1</sup> or 同 t'ung<sup>2</sup> is used; e.g., he goes with me—**他跟我去** t'a<sup>1</sup> kēn<sup>1</sup> wo<sup>3</sup> ch'u<sup>4</sup>; I come with you **我同你來** wo<sup>3</sup> t'ung<sup>2</sup> ni<sup>2</sup> lai<sup>2</sup>.

## TWENTY-SEVENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. **第一層樓** *ti<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>-ts'êng<sup>2</sup>-lou<sup>2</sup>*, the first floor; where *ti<sup>4</sup>* is 'an indicator of ordinal number', *ts'êng<sup>2</sup>* means 'a storey, a stair', *lou<sup>2</sup>* 'an upper storey' and *ts'êng<sup>2</sup>-lou<sup>2</sup>* means 'a floor'.
2. .. **二** .. *ti<sup>4</sup>-êrh<sup>4</sup>-ts'êng<sup>2</sup>-lou<sup>2</sup>*, the second floor.
3. .. **三** .. *ti<sup>4</sup>-san<sup>1</sup>-ts'êng<sup>2</sup>-lou<sup>2</sup>*, the third floor.
4. **地下的一層** *ti<sup>4</sup>-hsia<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>-ts'êng<sup>2</sup>*, the ground-floor; where *ti<sup>4</sup>* means 'ground, earth', *hsia<sup>4</sup>* means 'below, down', *ti<sup>4</sup>* 'an indicator of possessive case', *i<sup>1</sup>* means 'one'.
5. **電梯** *tien<sup>4</sup>-t'i<sup>1</sup>*, an electric lift; where the former means 'electricity' and the latter 'a ladder, steps, stairs'.
6. **樓** .. *lou<sup>2</sup>-t'i<sup>1</sup>*, a staircase.
7. **燈** *têng<sup>1</sup>*, a lamp, a lantern.
8. **電門** *tien<sup>4</sup>-mén<sup>2</sup>*, or **開關** *k'ai<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>*, a switch; where *mén<sup>2</sup>* means 'a door, a gateway, an opening', *k'ai<sup>1</sup>* denotes 'to open' and *kuan<sup>1</sup>* means 'to shut, to close'.
9. .. **扇** *tien<sup>4</sup>-shan<sup>4</sup>*, an electric fan; where *shan<sup>4</sup>* means 'a fan'.
10. .. **燈泡** *tien<sup>4</sup>-têng<sup>1</sup>-p'ao<sup>4</sup>*, an electric light-bulb; where *p'ao<sup>4</sup>* means 'a bubble, a blister'.
11. **開** .. *k'ai<sup>1</sup>* *têng<sup>1</sup>*, to put on the light.
12. **關** .. *kuan<sup>1</sup>* *têng<sup>1</sup>*, to put off the light.
13. **風扇** *fêng<sup>1</sup>-shan<sup>4</sup>*, a punkha; where *fêng<sup>1</sup>* means 'wind'.
14. **屋子** *wu<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>*, a house, a room.
15. **書房** *shu<sup>1</sup>-fang<sup>2</sup>*, the study; where *shu<sup>1</sup>* means 'a book' and *fang<sup>2</sup>* denotes 'a house, a building, a room'.

16. 窗戶 ch'uang<sup>1</sup>-hu<sup>4</sup>, a window ; where the former means 'a window' and the latter 'a door'.
17. 天窗 t'ien<sup>1</sup>-ch'uang<sup>1</sup>, a skylight ; where t'ien<sup>1</sup> means 'the sky'.
18. 亮 liang<sup>4</sup>, light, bright, clear, brightness, transparent.
19. 許多 hsü<sup>3</sup>-to<sup>1</sup>, many ; where the former means 'very' and the latter 'many, much'.
20. 拉 la<sup>1</sup>, to pull, to drag, to seize.
21. 照 chao<sup>4</sup>, to illumine, to reflect.
22. 扭 nien<sup>3</sup>, to twist (with the fingers), to play with.

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. He walks to the lift = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) walk (tsou<sup>3</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) lift (tien<sup>4</sup>.t'i<sup>1</sup>).
2. He is going to the fourth floor = he go (上 shang<sup>4</sup>) four (ssü<sup>4</sup>) storey (ts'êng<sup>2</sup>).
3. He goes up by the lift = he travel by (坐 tso<sup>4</sup>) lift (tien<sup>4</sup>.t'i<sup>1</sup>) upper storey (lou<sup>2</sup>).
4. The student walks to the staircase = student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) walk (tsou<sup>3</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) staircase (lou<sup>2</sup>.t'i<sup>1</sup>).
5. Is Mr. Tung upstairs ? = Tung Mr. (hsien<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) upstairs (lou<sup>2</sup>.shang<sup>4</sup> 上) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle) ?
6. No, he has gone out = no (pu<sup>4</sup>), he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) out (ch'u<sup>1</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
7. His room is on the third floor = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) room (wu<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) on (tsai<sup>4</sup>) order (ti<sup>4</sup>) three (san<sup>3</sup>) floor (ts'êng<sup>2</sup>.lou<sup>2</sup>) up (shang<sup>4</sup>).
8. My friend is in the ground-floor = my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) friend (p'êng<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) ground-floor (ti<sup>4</sup>.hsia<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>.jü<sup>1</sup>.ts'êng<sup>2</sup>).
9. The teacher opens the window of his study = teacher (hsien<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) take (pa<sup>3</sup>—a sign of the objective case) study (shu<sup>1</sup>.fang<sup>2</sup>).s (ti<sup>4</sup>) window (ch'uang<sup>1</sup>.hu<sup>4</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>).
10. He switches on the light = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) take (pa<sup>3</sup>) lamp (têng<sup>1</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>).
11. The bulb is lighted = bulb (tien<sup>4</sup>.têng<sup>1</sup>.p'ao<sup>4</sup>) light (chao<sup>4</sup>).
12. Now the room is lighted = now (hsien<sup>3</sup>.tsai<sup>4</sup>) room (wu<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) light (liang<sup>4</sup>).
13. Then he turns off the switch = then (yü<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) take (pa<sup>3</sup>) switch (tien<sup>4</sup>.mén<sup>2</sup> or k'ai<sup>1</sup>.kuan<sup>1</sup>) twist (nien<sup>3</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>).
14. The man is pulling the punkha = man (jén<sup>2</sup>) pull (la<sup>1</sup>) punkha (fêng<sup>1</sup>.shan<sup>4</sup>).
15. There are many electric fans in the class-room = in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) class-room (chia<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) in (li<sup>3</sup>) there are (yu<sup>3</sup>) many (hsü<sup>3</sup>.to<sup>1</sup>) electric fan (tien<sup>4</sup>.shan<sup>4</sup>).

## TWENTY-EIGHTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 東方 tung<sup>1</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>, the east ; where the former means 'the east' and the latter 'the region'.
2. 西 „ hsi<sup>1</sup> (si<sup>1</sup>)-fang<sup>1</sup>, the west ; where the former means 'the west'.
3. 北 „ pei<sup>3</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>, the north ; where the former means 'the north'.
4. 南 „ nan<sup>2</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>, the south ; where the former means 'the south'.
5. 東北 tung<sup>1</sup>-pei<sup>3</sup>, the north-east.
6. „ 南 tung<sup>1</sup>-nan<sup>2</sup>, the south-east.
7. 西北 hsi<sup>1</sup>-pei<sup>3</sup>, the north-west.
8. „ 南 hsi<sup>1</sup>-nan<sup>2</sup>, the south-west.
9. 東西 tung<sup>1</sup>-hsı<sup>1</sup>, a thing.
10. 大小 ta<sup>4</sup>-hsiao<sup>3</sup>, size (lit. big and small).
11. 山水 shan<sup>1</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, scenery, landscape (lit. a hill and water).
12. 早茶 tsao<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>, breakfast, early morning tea ; where tsao<sup>3</sup> means 'early, in the morning'.
13. „ 飯 tsao<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>, breakfast ; where fan<sup>4</sup> means 'food'.
14. 午 „ wu<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>, lunch, luncheon ; where the former means 'noon'.
15. 晚 „ wan<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>, supper ; where the former means 'evening'.
16. 照片 chao<sup>4</sup>-p'ien<sup>4</sup> or 相片 hsiang<sup>4</sup>-p'ien<sup>4</sup>, a photograph ; where chao<sup>4</sup> means 'to reflect, to illumine', hsiang<sup>4</sup> 'a form' and p'ien<sup>4</sup> 'a splinter, a slice'.
17. „ 相機 chao<sup>4</sup>-hsiang<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>, a camera ; where chi<sup>1</sup> means 'a machine'.

18. 軟片 juan<sup>3</sup>-p'ien<sup>4</sup>, (photographic) film; where the former means 'soft, tender, light'.

19. 鏡頭 ching<sup>4</sup>-t'ou<sup>2</sup>, lens; where the former means 'a mirror' and the latter 'the head; a noun-suffix'.

20. 放大 fang<sup>4</sup>-ta<sup>4</sup>, to enlarge (as a photograph); where fang<sup>4</sup> means 'to loosen, to liberate, to let go' and ta<sup>4</sup> denotes 'big, great'.

21. .. 鏡 fang<sup>4</sup>-ta<sup>4</sup>-ching<sup>4</sup>, magnifying glass.

22. 眼鏡 yen<sup>3</sup>-ching<sup>4</sup>, spectacles; where the former means 'the eye'.

23. 脚踏車 chiao<sup>3</sup>-t'a<sup>4</sup>-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>, a bicycle; where chiao<sup>3</sup> means 'the foot, legs', t'a<sup>4</sup> denotes 'to tread, to walk, to plant the feet' and ch'ê<sup>1</sup> means 'a cart, a carriage'.

24. 車胎 ch'ê<sup>1</sup>-t'ai<sup>1</sup>, a tyre; where the latter means 'the pregnant womb'.

25. 洋車 yang<sup>2</sup>-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>, a rickshaw; where the former means 'the ocean; foreign'.

26. 輪船 lun<sup>2</sup>-ch'uan<sup>2</sup>, a steamer; where lun<sup>2</sup> means 'a wheel, a turn, to revolve' and ch'uan<sup>2</sup> 'a boat, a ship'.

27. 水手 shui<sup>3</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>, a sailor; where the former means 'water' and the latter 'the hand'.

28. 乘客 ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-k'ê<sup>4</sup>, a passenger; where ch'êng<sup>2</sup> means 'to ascend, to ride, to avail of' and k'ê<sup>4</sup> denotes 'a guest, a traveller, a visitor'.

29. 主 chu<sup>3</sup>, a host.

30. 各人 ko<sup>4</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup>, everybody; where ko<sup>4</sup> means 'each, every'.

31. 橋 ch'iao<sup>2</sup>, a bridge.

32. 坐 tso<sup>4</sup>, to ride (a vehicle).

33. 出 ch'u<sup>1</sup>, to rise (as the sun).

34. 落 lo<sup>4</sup> (or lao<sup>4</sup>), to set (as the sun).

35. 相 遇 hsiang<sup>1</sup> (siang<sup>1</sup>)-yü<sup>4</sup>, to meet; where the former means 'mutual, reciprocal, direction towards' and the latter 'to meet'.

36. 遇 見 yü<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>4</sup>, to meet; where chien<sup>4</sup> means 'to see'.

37. 待 tai<sup>4</sup>, to treat, to behave, to entertain, to wait for.

38. 吊 tiao<sup>4</sup>, to suspend, to droop, to hang.

39. 時 常 or 常 常 shih<sup>2</sup>-ch'ang<sup>2</sup>, or ch'ang<sup>2</sup>-ch'ang<sup>2</sup>, often, always; where the former means 'time' and the latter 'constantly, frequently'.

40. 永 不 yung<sup>3</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>, never; where yung<sup>3</sup> means 'perpetual, eternal, long, far-reaching' and pu<sup>4</sup> 'not'.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. The sun rises in the east and sets in the west = sun (jih<sup>4</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) east (tung<sup>1</sup>) rise (ch'u<sup>1</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) west (hsı<sup>1</sup>) set (lo<sup>4</sup>).
2. Everybody worships the rising sun = everybody (ko<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>) worship (拜 pai<sup>4</sup>) rise (shēng<sup>1</sup>) sun.
3. East is east and west is west and never the twain shall meet = east (tung<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) east (tung<sup>1</sup>) west (hsı<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) west (hsı<sup>1</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) two (liang<sup>3</sup>) never (yung<sup>3</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>) meet (hsiang<sup>1</sup>-yü<sup>4</sup>).
4. I met him yesterday = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) yesterday (tso<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>1</sup>) meet (yü<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) him (t'a<sup>1</sup>).
5. I do not know the size of that thing = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know (chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>) that (na<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) thing (tung<sup>1</sup>-hsı<sup>1</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) size (ta<sup>4</sup>-hsiao<sup>3</sup>).
6. The scenery of Darjeeling is very beautiful = Darjeeling-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) scenery (shan<sup>1</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) beautiful (p'iao<sup>1</sup>-liang<sup>4</sup>).
7. We had breakfast at the restaurant = we (wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) restaurant (ts'an<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>) in (li<sup>3</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) breakfast (tsao<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup> or tsao<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>).
8. They had luncheon at the hotel = they (t'a<sup>1</sup>-mēn) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) hotel (lū<sup>3</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>) in (li<sup>3</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) luncheon (wu<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>).
9. We had supper = we (wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) finish (wan<sup>2</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) supper (wan<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>).
10. I want to enlarge the photograph of my mother = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) enlarge (fang<sup>4</sup>-ta<sup>4</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) mother (mu<sup>3</sup>-ch'in<sup>1</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) photograph (chao<sup>4</sup>-p'ien<sup>4</sup> or hsiang<sup>4</sup>-p'ien<sup>4</sup>).
11. I have a good camera = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>) camera (chao<sup>4</sup>-hsiang<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>).
12. This lens is very small = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) lens (ching<sup>4</sup>-t'ou<sup>2</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) small (hsiao<sup>3</sup>).
13. An old man always uses spectacles = old (lao<sup>3</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) always (shih<sup>2</sup>-ch'ang<sup>2</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) spectacles (yen<sup>3</sup>-ching<sup>4</sup>).

14. The tyre of the bicycle is not good = bicycle (chia<sup>3</sup>.t'a<sup>4</sup>.ch'ê<sup>1</sup>).-s (ti<sup>4</sup>) tyre (ch'ê<sup>1</sup>.t'ai<sup>1</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>).
15. How many sailors have you seen in the steamer ? = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) steamer (lun<sup>2</sup>.ch'uan<sup>2</sup>) in (li<sup>3</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) how many (to<sup>1</sup>.shao<sup>3</sup>) sailor (shui<sup>3</sup>.shou<sup>3</sup>) ?
16. I have seen eight or more sailors = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) look (k'an<sup>4</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) ed eight (pa<sup>1</sup>) several (chi<sup>3</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) sailor (shui<sup>3</sup>.shou<sup>3</sup>).
17. Passengers are waiting for the steamer = passenger (ch'êng<sup>2</sup>.k'ê<sup>4</sup>) wait for (têng<sup>3</sup>) steamer (lun<sup>2</sup>.ch'uan<sup>2</sup>).
18. The steamer starts at twenty minutes past three = that (na<sup>4</sup>) steamer (lun<sup>2</sup>.ch'uan<sup>2</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) dot (tien<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) quarter (k'o<sup>4</sup>) five (wu<sup>3</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>, to start as a train, steamer, etc.).
19. The host is entertaining the guest = host (chu<sup>3</sup>) entertain (tai<sup>4</sup>) guest (k'ê<sup>4</sup>).
20. Have you seen the Howrah bridge ? = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) see (k'an<sup>4</sup>) pass (過 kuo<sup>4</sup>) Howrah bridge (ch'iao<sup>2</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> (an interrogative particle) ?
21. Yes, it is a hanging bridge = yes (yu<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) hanging (tiao<sup>3</sup>) bridge (ch'iao<sup>2</sup>).
22. He rides a rickshaw = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) ride (tso<sup>4</sup>) rickshaw (yang<sup>2</sup>.ch'ê<sup>1</sup>).



## TWENTY-NINTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 動物 tung<sup>4</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>, an animal ; where tung<sup>4</sup> means 'to move' and wu<sup>4</sup> 'all living creatures, matter'.
2. 野獸 yeh<sup>3</sup>-shou<sup>4</sup>, a (wild) beast ; where yeh<sup>3</sup> means 'wild' and shou<sup>4</sup> means 'a beast, a brute'.
3. 家畜 chia<sup>1</sup>-ch'u<sup>4</sup>, a domestic animal ; where chia<sup>1</sup> means 'a house, a home' and ch'u<sup>4</sup> denotes 'cattle, a domestic animal'.
4. 獅子 shih<sup>1</sup> (also read szü<sup>1</sup>)-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a lion ; where shih<sup>1</sup> means 'a lion'.
5. 老虎 lao<sup>2</sup>-hu<sup>3</sup>, a tiger ; where the former means 'old, aged' and the latter 'a tiger'.
6. 豹子 pao<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a leopard, a panther.
7. 犀牛 hsi<sup>1</sup> (si<sup>1</sup>)-niu<sup>2</sup>, a rhinoceros ; where the former means 'a rhinoceros' and the latter 'a cow'.
8. 象 hsiang<sup>4</sup> (siang<sup>4</sup>), an elephant.
9. 馬 ma<sup>3</sup>, a horse.
10. 驢 lü<sup>2</sup>, an ass, a donkey.
11. 熊 hsiung<sup>2</sup>, a bear.
12. 野猪 yeh<sup>3</sup>-chu<sup>1</sup>, a boar ; where the former means 'wild' and the latter 'a hog, a pig'.
13. 鹿 lu<sup>4</sup>, a deer.
14. 水牛 shui<sup>3</sup>-niu<sup>2</sup>, a buffalo [lit. water-cow].
15. 公 .. kung<sup>1</sup>-niu<sup>2</sup>, a bull ; where the former means 'male'.
16. 狗 kou<sup>3</sup>, a dog.
17. 小狗 hsiao<sup>2</sup>-kou<sup>3</sup>, a puppy.

4. Cf. Skt. सिंहं *simhā*, a lion.

5. Cf. Arabic *Jas* hawl, strong, powerful.

9. Cf. Skt. मया maya, a horse (VS. XXII. 19).

13. Cf. Skt. गूरु gūru, a species of antelope.

16. Cf. Skt. *kuukura*, *kuukkura*, a dog.

18. 猫子 mao<sup>2</sup> (miao<sup>2</sup>)-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a cat.
19. 老鼠 lao<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>3</sup> (ch'u<sup>3</sup>), a rat; where shu<sup>3</sup> means 'a rat, a mouse'.
20. 小老鼠 hsiao<sup>2</sup>-lao<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>3</sup>, a mouse.
21. 狐狸 hu<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>2</sup>, a fox; where both mean 'a fox'.
22. 猴子 hou<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, an ape, a monkey.
23. 兔子 t'u<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a hare, a rabbit.
24. 蝦 ha<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>2</sup>, a frog; where both mean 'a frog'.
25. 蛇 shê<sup>2</sup>, a snake, a serpent.
26. 螳螂 ma<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup>, an ant; where both mean 'an ant'.
27. 白 .. pai<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup>, a white ant; where pai<sup>2</sup> means 'white'.
28. 虱子 shih<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a louse.
29. 臭蟲 ch'ou<sup>4</sup>-ch'ung<sup>2</sup>, a bug; where the former means 'strong-smelling' and the latter 'a worm, an insect'.
30. 蚊子 wên<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a mosquito.
31. 蚊帳 or 帳子 wên<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>4</sup>, or chang<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a mosquito-net; where chang<sup>4</sup> means 'a curtain' or 'screen'.
32. 蠍子 hsieh<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a scorpion.
33. 龜 kuei<sup>1</sup>, a tortoise.
34. 鱷魚 ngo<sup>4</sup> (o<sup>4</sup>)-yü<sup>2</sup>, a crocodile, an alligator; where the former means 'a crocodile, an alligator' and the latter 'a fish'.
35. 鳥 niao<sup>3</sup>, a bird.
36. .. 鷺 niao<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>1</sup>, a kite; where the latter means 'a kite, a hawk'.
37. 乌鵲 wu<sup>1</sup>-ya<sup>1</sup>, a crow; where both mean 'a crow'.
38. 天鵝 t'ien<sup>1</sup>-ngo<sup>2</sup> (o<sup>2</sup>), a swan; where the former means 'the sky' and the latter 'a domestic goose'.

18. It is an onomatopoeia.

19. Cf. Bengali মুরি, মুরি; Skt. मुरुदरा chuchundara (Suśruta, 5. 6. 2; 3), a musk-rat, is from chuchu and undura (a rat).

39. 隼 chun<sup>3</sup> (also read shuen<sup>3</sup>), a hawk.

40. 鳴鳩 shih<sup>1</sup>-chiu<sup>1</sup>, a cuckoo ; where the former means 'a cuckoo' and the latter 'a pigeon'.

41. 孔雀 k'ung<sup>3</sup>-ch'iao<sup>3</sup> ; a peacock ; where the former means 'a peacock' and the latter 'a small bird'.

42. 鷲鳥 chih<sup>4</sup>-niao<sup>3</sup>, a vulture ; where the former means 'a bird of prey, bloodthirsty'.

43. 窠 wo<sup>1</sup> (o<sup>1</sup>), a nest (of the bird).

44. 象牙 hsiang<sup>4</sup> (siang<sup>4</sup>)-ya<sup>2</sup>, the tusk of the elephant, ivory ; where the latter means 'a tooth'.

45. 井 ching<sup>3</sup> (tsing<sup>3</sup>), a well.

46. 瘋 fêng<sup>1</sup>, mad, insane.

47. 絨 jung<sup>2</sup>, wool.

48. 吼 叻 hou<sup>3</sup>-chiau<sup>4</sup>, to roar ; where the former means 'the roar of animals' and the latter 'to call'.

49. 騎 ch'i<sup>2</sup>, to mount, to ride (an animal).

50. 遊歷 yu<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>4</sup>, to roam, to travel ; where both mean 'to travel, to roam'.

51. 破壞 p'o<sup>4</sup>-huai<sup>4</sup> or 毀壞 hui<sup>3</sup>-huai<sup>4</sup>, to destroy, destruction ; where p'o<sup>4</sup> means 'to destroy', huai<sup>4</sup> 'to ruin' and hui<sup>3</sup> 'to destroy, to ruin'.

52. 強 ch'iang<sup>3</sup>, to force, to compel, to insist.

53. 叫 chiao<sup>4</sup>, to bark (as a dog).

54. 咬 yao<sup>3</sup> (iao<sup>3</sup>), to bite, to gnaw.

55. 鳴 ming<sup>2</sup>, to bray, to neigh.

56. 哭泣 k'u<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>4</sup>, to weep ; where both mean 'to weep'.

57. 死亡 szü<sup>3</sup> (ssü<sup>3</sup>)-wang<sup>2</sup> (uang<sup>2</sup>), to die, death ; where both mean 'to die, dead'.

58. 翱翔 hsiang<sup>2</sup> (siang<sup>2</sup>), to soar, to hover over.

59. 游水 or yu<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, 浮水 fu<sup>3</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, to swim ; where yu<sup>2</sup> means 'to swim, to float', shui<sup>3</sup> 'water' and fu<sup>2</sup> 'to float'.

39. Cf. Skt. शून्यश्चेना, a hawk.

60. 開始 k'ai<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>3</sup>, to begin ; where both mean 'to begin'.

61. 跖 tieh<sup>4</sup>, to swoop down, to fall.

62. 墮 to<sup>4</sup> (tuo<sup>4</sup>), to sink, to fall.

63. 飛 fei<sup>1</sup>, to fly, to go quickly.

64. 條 t'iao<sup>2</sup>, a numerative or classifier of nouns, such as, a dog, a snake, a fish, a road, long and narrow things, i.e. string, thread, rope, etc. ; hereafter indicated by 'piece'.

65. 罕 han<sup>3</sup>, seldom, hardly, scarcely.

66. 阿 a<sup>4</sup>, oh !

**Exercise (with hints)**

1. A lion is roaring = lion (shih<sup>1</sup>) roar (hou<sup>3</sup>).
2. A tiger and a deer do not roam together = tiger (lao<sup>2</sup>-hu<sup>3</sup>) deer (lu<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) together ( 同 t'ung<sup>2</sup>) roam (yu<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>4</sup>).
3. Elephant is destroyed for the sake of its tusks ( दन्तयोऽहनि कुञ्जम् ) = elephant-tusk (hsiang<sup>4</sup>-ya<sup>2</sup>) destroy (p'o<sup>4</sup>-huai<sup>4</sup>) body (shēn<sup>1</sup>).
4. A horse is neighing = horse (ma<sup>3</sup>) neigh (ming<sup>2</sup>).
5. The Inspector of Police rides the horse = Inspector of Police (ching<sup>3</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>) ride (ch'i<sup>2</sup>) horse (ma<sup>3</sup>).
6. If a donkey does not drink, you cannot force it = donkey (lu<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) drink (ho<sup>1</sup>) water (shui<sup>3</sup>), force (ch'iang<sup>3</sup>) drink (in<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>).
7. A dog which barks, seldom bites = bark (fei<sup>4</sup>) dog (kou<sup>4</sup>) seldom (han<sup>3</sup>) bite (yao<sup>3</sup>).
8. A mad dog barks and bites = one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (t'iao<sup>2</sup>) mad (fēng<sup>1</sup>) dog (kou<sup>4</sup>) bark (fei<sup>4</sup>) bite (yao<sup>3</sup>).
9. He is a frog in a well ( कूपमधुक् ) = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) well (ching<sup>3</sup>) frog (ha<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>2</sup>).
10. O cuckoo ! shall I call thee a bird = O (a<sup>4</sup>) cuckoo (shih<sup>1</sup>-chiu<sup>1</sup>) ! I (wo<sup>3</sup>) call (chia<sup>4</sup>) thee (= you sir, nin<sup>2</sup>) bird (niao<sup>3</sup>).
11. When the fox dies, the hare weeps = fox (hu<sup>2</sup>) die (szū<sup>3</sup>), hare (t'u<sup>4</sup>) weep (k'u<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>4</sup>).
12. A cat and a rat are sleeping together = cat (mao<sup>2</sup>) rat (shu<sup>3</sup>) together (t'ung<sup>2</sup>) sleep (shui<sup>4</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>).
13. The white ant has destroyed my woollen cloth = white ant (pai<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup>) destroy (p'o<sup>4</sup>-huai<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) my (wo-ti) wool (jungz) cloth (pu<sup>4</sup>).
14. The cow and the sheep are domestic animals = cow (niu<sup>2</sup>) sheep (yang<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) domestic animal (chia<sup>1</sup>-ch'u<sup>4</sup>).
15. The buffalo gives milk = buffalo (shui<sup>3</sup>-niu<sup>2</sup>) give (kei<sup>3</sup>) milk (nai<sup>3</sup>).
16. The louse and the bug are small insects = louse (sē<sup>1</sup>) bug (mu<sup>4</sup>-sē<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) small (hsiao<sup>3</sup>) insect (ch'ung<sup>2</sup>).

17. A vulture is soaring high in the sky = vulture (chih<sup>4</sup>-niao<sup>3</sup>) high (kao<sup>1</sup>) soar (hsiang<sup>2</sup>) sky (t'ien<sup>1</sup>).
18. The swan swims in water = swan (t'ien<sup>1</sup>-o<sup>2</sup>) swim (yu<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>).
19. The flying kite swoops down into the water = fly (fei<sup>1</sup>) kite (yüan<sup>1</sup>) swoop down (tieh<sup>4</sup>) swoop down (tieh<sup>4</sup>) sink (to<sup>4</sup>) water (shui<sup>3</sup>) inside (中 chung<sup>1</sup>).
20. The bull draws the cart = bull (kung<sup>1</sup>-niu<sup>2</sup>) draw or pull (la<sup>1</sup>) cart (ch'ê<sup>1</sup>).
21. Some mosquitoes beget malaria = some (i<sup>4</sup>-hsieh<sup>1</sup>) mosquito (wēn<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>) beget (shêng<sup>1</sup>) malaria (yao<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>2</sup>).
22. So we should always use the mosquito-net = so (so<sup>3</sup>-yi<sup>3</sup>) we (wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn) always (ch'ang<sup>2</sup>-ch'ang<sup>2</sup>) should (ying<sup>1</sup>-kai<sup>1</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) mosquito-net (wēn<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>4</sup>).
23. The peacock begins to dance at the sight of cloud = peacock (k'ung<sup>3</sup>-ch'iao<sup>3</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) cloud (yün<sup>2</sup>) begin (k'ai-shih<sup>3</sup>) dance (t'iao<sup>4</sup>-wu<sup>3</sup>).

---

*Note.*—A masculine gender is generally formed by adding the prefix 公 kung<sup>1</sup>, meaning 'male' before a noun and a feminine by adding the prefix 婦 mu<sup>3</sup>, meaning 'mother':—kung<sup>1</sup> shih<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, lion, mu<sup>3</sup> shih<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, lioness.

## THIRTIETH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 香蕉 hsiang<sup>1</sup>-chiao<sup>1</sup> (tsiao<sup>1</sup>), the banana, the plantain ; where the former means 'fragrant' and the latter 'the plantain or the banana'.
2. 葡萄 p'u<sup>2</sup>-t'ao<sup>2</sup>, grape ; where both mean 'grape'.
3. 蘋果 p'in<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>3</sup>, apple ; where the former means 'duckweed' and the latter 'fruit'.
4. 橘子 chü<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, an orange.
5. 芒果 mang<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>3</sup>, mango.
6. 波羅果 po<sup>1</sup>-lo<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>3</sup>, a pineapple.
7. 荔枝 li<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>1</sup>, a lichi.
8. 香桃 hsiang<sup>1</sup>-t'ao<sup>2</sup>, lemon ; where the latter means 'peach'.
9. „ „ 水 hsiang<sup>1</sup>-t'ao<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, lemonade.
10. 杏仁露 hsing<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>-lu<sup>4</sup>, syrup; where hsing<sup>4</sup> means 'the apricot, the almond', jēn 'a kernel' and lu<sup>4</sup> 'dew, scent'.
11. 蜂蜜 fēng<sup>1</sup>-mi<sup>4</sup>, honey ; where the former means 'a bee' and the latter 'honey'.
12. 蜜蜂 mi<sup>4</sup>-fēng<sup>1</sup>, a bee.
13. 蔗子 tsao<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, date.
14. 杏兒 hsing<sup>4</sup> (often héng<sup>3</sup>)-érh<sup>2</sup>, an apricot, an almond ; where the latter is a noun indicator.
15. 葱頭 ts'ung<sup>1</sup>-t'ou<sup>2</sup>, onion ; where the latter is a noun-suffix.
16. 蒜 suan<sup>4</sup>, garlic.

11. Cf. Cantonese, mēt ; Japanese, mits<sup>2</sup> ; Skt. मधु mādhu ; Gk. μέθη, μέθη ; Slav. medū ; Lith. midūs, medūs ; Germ. meth ; Eng. mead.

17. 薑 chiang<sup>1</sup>, ginger.
18. 醋 ts'u<sup>4</sup>, vinegar.
19. 馬鈴薯 or 薔 ma<sup>3</sup>-ling<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>3</sup>, potato; where ma<sup>3</sup> means 'a horse', ling<sup>2</sup> means 'a small round bell used on a horse' and shu<sup>3</sup> denotes 'potato'.
20. 餅乾 ping<sup>3</sup>-kan<sup>1</sup>, biscuit; where the former means 'cake, biscuit' and the latter 'dry'.
21. 朱古力 chu<sup>1</sup>-ku<sup>3</sup>-li<sup>4</sup>, chocolate.
22. 咀片 chü<sup>3</sup> (tsü<sup>3</sup>)-p'ien<sup>4</sup>, lozenge; where the former means 'to suck, to chew' and the latter 'a slice'.
23. 玫瑰花 mei<sup>2</sup>-kuei<sup>4</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, the rose; where mei<sup>2</sup> means 'a sparkling red gem', kuei<sup>4</sup> 'the rose' and hua<sup>1</sup> 'flower'.
24. 百合花 pai<sup>3</sup>-ho<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, a lily; where pai<sup>3</sup> means 'all, every, a hundred' and ho<sup>2</sup> 'to shut, to close'.
25. 蓮花 lien<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, a lotus; where the former means 'a lotus'.
26. 荷,, ho<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, a lotus; where the former means 'a lotus'.
27. 水池子 shui<sup>3</sup>-ch'ih<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a pond, a tank; where ch'ih<sup>2</sup> means 'a pond'.
28. 竹子 chu<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a bamboo.
29. 樹 shu<sup>4</sup>, a tree.
30. 幹 kan<sup>4</sup>, the trunk (of a tree)..
31. 枝子 chih<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a branch (of a tree).
32. 葉,, yeh<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a leaf (of a tree).
33. 叉,, ch'a<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a fork.
34. 刀,, tao<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a knife.
35. 筷,, k'uai<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, chopsticks.

30. Cf. Skt. कंडा kāñḍa, the trunk of a tree.

36. 雙 shuang<sup>1</sup>, a pair, a couple, even as opposed to odd ;  
e.g. 一雙筷 i<sup>1</sup> shuang<sup>1</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup>, a pair of chopsticks.

37. 寡婦 kua<sup>3</sup>-fu<sup>4</sup>, a widow ; where the former means 'friendless, alone' and the latter 'a wife, a lady, a woman'.

38. 鯸夫 kuan<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>1</sup>, a widower, a bachelor ; where the former means 'a widower, an unmarried man' and the latter 'man'.

39. ,, 棍 kuan<sup>1</sup>-kun<sup>4</sup>, a widower, a bachelor ; where the latter means 'a stick'.

40. 農夫 nung<sup>2</sup>-fu<sup>1</sup>, a farmer ; where the former means 'a farmer, agriculture'.

41. 製造廠 chih<sup>4</sup>-tsao<sup>4</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, a mill, a factory ; where ch'ang<sup>3</sup> means 'a factory, a workshop, a depot'.

42. 造紙 tsao<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, a paper mill ; where chih<sup>3</sup> means 'paper'.

43. 紗廠 sha<sup>1</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, a cotton mill ; where sha<sup>1</sup> means 'yarn'.

44. 甘蔗 kan<sup>1</sup>-chê<sup>4</sup>, the sugar-cane ; where the former means 'sweet' and the latter 'the sugar-cane'.

45. 甜 t'ien<sup>2</sup>, sweet.

46. 酸 suan<sup>1</sup>, sour.

47. 苦 k'u<sup>3</sup>, bitter.

48. 辣 la<sup>4</sup>, pungent, astringent.

49. 熟 shu<sup>2</sup>, ripe.

50. 青 ts'ing<sup>1</sup> (ch'ing<sup>1</sup>), green.

51. 右 yu<sup>2</sup> (iu<sup>2</sup>), right (side).

52. 喜歡 hsi<sup>3</sup>-huan<sup>1</sup>, to like ; where the former means 'joy, pleasure' and the latter 'joy, pleased, to be glad'.

53. 製造 chih<sup>4</sup>-tsao<sup>4</sup>, to manufacture ; where both mean 'to make'.

54. 榨 cha<sup>4</sup>, to squeeze, to press (for extracting juice, oil, etc.).

55. 招 chao<sup>1</sup>, to beckon, to call.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. Banana is green = banana (hsiang<sup>1</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) green (ts'ing<sup>1</sup>).
2. Grapes are sour = grape (p'u<sup>2</sup>.t'ao<sup>2</sup>) sour (suan<sup>1</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
3. The boy eats an apple = boy (hsiao<sup>3</sup>.hai<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) apple (p'in<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>3</sup>).
4. Now he begins to eat the orange = now (hsien<sup>2</sup>.tsai<sup>4</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) begin (k'ai<sup>1</sup>.shih<sup>3</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) orange (chü<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>).
5. A ripe mango is as sweet as honey = ripe (shu<sup>2</sup>) mango (mang<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) sweet (t'ien<sup>2</sup>) as (ju<sup>2</sup>) honey (fēng<sup>1</sup>.mi<sup>4</sup>).
6. The bee makes honey = bee (mi<sup>4</sup>.fēng<sup>1</sup>) make (chih<sup>4</sup>) honey (fēng<sup>1</sup>.mi<sup>4</sup>).
7. The pineapple is not very ripe = pineapple (po<sup>1</sup>.lo<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) ripe (shu<sup>2</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
8. The lichi is very green = lichi (li<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>1</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) green (ts'ing<sup>1</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
9. Do you like to drink lemonade with syrup ? = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) like (hsi<sup>3</sup>.huan<sup>1</sup>) drink (ho<sup>1</sup>) lemonade (hsiang<sup>1</sup>.t'ao<sup>2</sup>.shui<sup>3</sup>) with (kēn<sup>1</sup>) syrup (hsing<sup>4</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>.lu<sup>4</sup>) mo<sup>3</sup> ?
10. Dates and almonds are dry fruits = date (tsao<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) almond (hsing<sup>4</sup>.ērh<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) dry (kan<sup>1</sup>) fruit (kuo<sup>3</sup>).
11. Hindu widows do not eat onions and garlics = Hindu (yin<sup>4</sup>.tu<sup>4</sup>) widow (kua<sup>3</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) onion (ts'ung<sup>1</sup>.t'ou<sup>2</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) garlic (suan<sup>4</sup>).
12. Ginger is pungent = ginger (chiang<sup>1</sup>) pungent (la<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>).
13. Give me some vinegar = give (kei<sup>3</sup>) me (wo<sup>3</sup>) some (tien<sup>3</sup>) vinegar (ts'u<sup>4</sup>).
14. Children like to eat biscuits, chocolates and lozenges = child (hai<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) like (hsi<sup>3</sup>.huan<sup>1</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) biscuit (ping<sup>3</sup>.kan<sup>1</sup>), chocolate (chu<sup>1</sup>.ku<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>4</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) lozenge (chü<sup>3</sup>.p'ien<sup>4</sup>).
15. Potatoes are vegetables = potato (ma<sup>3</sup>.ling<sup>2</sup>.shu<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) vegetable (ts'ai<sup>4</sup>).
16. There are roses, lotuses and lilies in the garden = garden (hua<sup>1</sup>.yüan<sup>2</sup>) inside (li<sup>3</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) rose (mei<sup>2</sup>.kuei<sup>4</sup>.hua<sup>1</sup>), lotus (lien<sup>2</sup>.hua<sup>1</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) lily (pai<sup>3</sup>.ho<sup>2</sup>.hua<sup>1</sup>).
17. Big trees attract the wind = tree (shu<sup>4</sup>) big (ta<sup>4</sup>) call (chao<sup>1</sup>) wind (fung<sup>1</sup> or fēng<sup>1</sup>).
18. Paper is made from bamboos = bamboo (chu<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) make (chih<sup>4</sup>.tsao<sup>4</sup>) paper (chih<sup>3</sup>).
19. The Chinese eat food with a pair of chopsticks = the Chinese (chung<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) one pair of chopsticks (i<sup>1</sup> shuang<sup>1</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) food (fan<sup>4</sup>).
20. The English eat food with a fork and a knife = the English (ying<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) fork (ch'a<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) knife (tao<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>3</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) food (fan<sup>4</sup>).
21. An Indian eats food with the right hand = an Indian (yin<sup>4</sup>.tu<sup>4</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) right (yu<sup>2</sup>) hand (shou<sup>2</sup>) eat (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) food (fan<sup>4</sup>).

22. The farmer is pressing sugar-canies = farmer (nung<sup>2</sup>-fu<sup>1</sup>) press (cha<sup>4</sup>) sugar-cane (kan<sup>1</sup>-chê<sup>4</sup>).
23. There is a big paper-mill in Calcutta = in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) Calcutta has (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) big (ta<sup>4</sup>) paper-mill (tsao<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>).
24. Mr. Mazumdar is the manager of the Banga-Lakshmi cotton-mill = Mazumdar Mr. (hsien<sup>1</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Banga-Lakshmi cotton-mill (sha<sup>1</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>) -'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) manager (ching<sup>1</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>).

## THIRTY-FIRST LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

### VOCABULARY

1. 宗教 tsung<sup>1</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, religion; where the former means 'a sect, a school of thought' and the latter 'religion'.
2. 印度教 yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>4</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, the Hindu religion, Hinduism.
3. 回回,, hui<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>2</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, the Mohammedan religion, Mohammedanism; where hui<sup>2</sup> means 'Mohammedans'.
4. 基督,, chi<sup>1</sup>-tu<sup>1</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup> | the Christian religion, Christianity; where chi<sup>1</sup>-tu<sup>1</sup> means 'Christ' and yeh<sup>1</sup>-su<sup>1</sup> denotes 'Jesus'.  
or  
耶穌,, yeh<sup>1</sup>-su<sup>1</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup> |
5. ,, ,, 誕 yeh<sup>1</sup>-su<sup>1</sup>-tan<sup>4</sup>, Christmas; where tan<sup>4</sup> means 'a birthday'.
6. 佛教 fo<sup>2</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, the Buddhist religion, Buddhism; where fo<sup>2</sup> means 'Buddha'.
7. 孔,, k'ung<sup>3</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup> | the Confucian religion, Confucianism; where k'ung<sup>3</sup> means 'Confucius' and ju<sup>2</sup> denotes 'the learned, an all-knowing person, a scholar, a Confucianist'.  
or  
儒,, ju<sup>2</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup> |
8. 道,, tao<sup>4</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, the Taoist religion, Taoism; where tao<sup>4</sup> means 'road, way, truth, doctrine, principle, reason'.
9. 章陀 wei<sup>2</sup>-t'o<sup>2</sup>, the Veda.
10. 可蘭 k'o<sup>3</sup>-lan<sup>2</sup>, the Qur'an.
11. 聖經 shêng<sup>4</sup>-ching<sup>1</sup> | the Bible; where shêng<sup>4</sup> means 'holy, sacred, divine, a saint, a sage', and shu<sup>1</sup> denotes 'book'.  
or  
,, 書 shêng<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup> |
12. 廟 miao<sup>4</sup>, a temple (a building for worship). 庙
13. 座 tso<sup>4</sup>, a numerary adjunct; e.g. a temple, i<sup>2</sup> (one) tso<sup>4</sup> miao<sup>4</sup>.
14. 禮拜堂 li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-t'ang<sup>2</sup>, a church; where li<sup>3</sup> means 'worship', pai<sup>4</sup> 'to worship' and t'ang<sup>2</sup> denotes 'a hall'.

15. 天 t'ien<sup>1</sup> or 神 shēn<sup>2</sup>, a god.
16. 女神 nü<sup>3</sup>-shēn<sup>2</sup>, a goddess.
17. 世界 shih<sup>4</sup>-chiai<sup>4</sup> (or chieh<sup>4</sup>), the world; where both mean 'the world'.
18. 宇宙 yü<sup>3</sup>-chou<sup>4</sup>, the universe; where the former means 'space' and the latter 'time'.
19. 根本 kēn<sup>1</sup>-pēn<sup>3</sup>, a root, a source; where both mean 'a root, a base, a foundation'.
20. „ 據 kēn<sup>1</sup>-chü<sup>4</sup>, to base, to found; where chü<sup>4</sup> means 'to rely on, to lean on'.
21. 大洲 ta<sup>4</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup> or 大陸 ta<sup>4</sup>-lu<sup>4</sup>, a continent, where ta<sup>4</sup> means 'great, big', chou<sup>1</sup> denotes 'a continent', and lu<sup>4</sup> means 'a dry land'.
22. 亞 „ ya<sup>3</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup>, Asia.
23. 非 „ fei<sup>1</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup>, Africa.
24. 澳 „ ao<sup>4</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup>, Australia.
25. 歐 „ ou<sup>1</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup>, Europe.
26. 島 tao<sup>3</sup> or 海島 hai<sup>3</sup>-tao<sup>3</sup>, an island; where tao<sup>3</sup> means 'an island' and hai<sup>3</sup> 'a sea'.
27. 文化 wēn<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, culture, civilization; where wēn<sup>2</sup> means 'literature, elegant, refined', and hua<sup>4</sup> 'to change, to transform, to influence'.
28. „ 明 wēn<sup>3</sup>-ming<sup>2</sup>, civilized; where ming<sup>2</sup> means 'bright, clear, light'.
29. 兼愛 chien<sup>1</sup>-ai<sup>4</sup>, universal love; where chien<sup>1</sup> means 'to unite in one, to connect', and ai<sup>4</sup> 'love, to love'.
30. 普通 p'u<sup>3</sup>-t'ung<sup>1</sup>, common, universal (general); where the former means 'universal, general, all', and the latter 'through, to go through, to circulate'.
31. 唯物主義 wei<sup>2</sup> (uei<sup>2</sup>)-wu<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, materialism; where wei<sup>2</sup> means 'only', wu<sup>4</sup> 'matter' and chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup> 'theory, doctrine'—used as a suffix similar to English '-ism'.

32. 人 民 jēn<sup>2</sup>-min<sup>2</sup>, people; where jēn<sup>2</sup> means 'man' and min<sup>2</sup>\* 'people, mankind'.

33. 婦 人 fu<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>, a woman, a lady; where fu<sup>4</sup> means 'a lady'.

34. 唯 靈 論 wei<sup>2</sup>-ling<sup>2</sup>-lun<sup>4</sup>, spiritualism; where ling<sup>2</sup> means 'spirit, spiritual, divine' and lun<sup>4</sup> 'to reason, to argue, to speak of'.

35. 所 有 的 so<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, all (adj.), where so<sup>2</sup> means 'whatsoever', yu<sup>3</sup> 'to have' and ti<sup>4</sup> 'an adjective-suffix'.

36. 有 道 德 yu<sup>3</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>-tē<sup>2</sup>-(ti<sup>4</sup>), virtuous; where tao<sup>4</sup> means 'road' and tē<sup>2</sup> 'virtue'.

37. 快 樂 k'uai<sup>4</sup>-lo<sup>4</sup>, happy; where both mean 'happy, cheerful'.

38. 虔 心 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>-hsin<sup>1</sup>, pious; where ch'ien<sup>2</sup> denotes 'devout, sincere', and hsin<sup>1</sup> 'heart'.

39. 每 mei<sup>3</sup>, each, every.

40. 保 護 pao<sup>3</sup>-hu<sup>4</sup> } to protect, protection; where pao<sup>3</sup>  
or , , 障 pao<sup>3</sup>-chang<sup>4</sup> } and hu<sup>4</sup> mean 'to protect, to  
guard', and chang<sup>4</sup> 'to screen, screen, veil'.

41. 創 造 ch'uang<sup>4</sup>-tsao<sup>4</sup>, to create; where both mean 'to create'.

42. 帶 tai<sup>4</sup>, to guide.

43. 怕 p'a<sup>4</sup>, to fear.

44. 站 起 來 chan<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>3</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>, to arise; where chan<sup>4</sup> means 'to stand up', ch'i<sup>3</sup> 'to rise, to raise' and lai<sup>2</sup> 'to come'.

45. 叫 醒 chiao<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>3</sup> (sing<sup>3</sup>), to awaken.

46. 相 反 的 hsiang<sup>1</sup>-fan<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, on the contrary, whereas; where hsiang<sup>1</sup> means 'mutual' and fan<sup>3</sup> 'contrary'.

\* Cf. Skt. manu, man, mankind; Goth. manna; Engl. man; Eng. man.

<sup>34</sup> ling<sup>2</sup>, denoting the 'Male Principle of Nature,' is undoubtedly the origin of Skt. liṅga, the male organ or phallus, especially that of Śiva worshipped in the form of a stone, which generally rises out of a yoni (Cf. Chinese 陰 yin<sup>1</sup>, also pronounced as yun<sup>1</sup>, yung<sup>1</sup>, the 'Female Principle of Nature.')

### Exercise (with hints)

1. God is great = God (shén<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) great (ta<sup>4</sup>).
2. All religions teach universal love = all (so<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) religion (tsung<sup>1</sup>.chiao<sup>4</sup>) teach (chiao<sup>1</sup>) universal love (chien<sup>1</sup>.ai<sup>4</sup>).
3. Religion protects the virtuous = religion protect (pao<sup>3</sup>.hu<sup>4</sup> or pao<sup>3</sup>.chang<sup>4</sup>) virtuous (yu<sup>3</sup>.tao<sup>4</sup>.té<sup>2</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) man (jén<sup>2</sup>).
4. The virtuous are happy in the world = world (shih<sup>4</sup>.chieh<sup>4</sup>) on (上 shang<sup>4</sup>) virtuous man is (shih<sup>4</sup>) happy (k'uai<sup>4</sup>.lo<sup>4</sup>).
5. The Veda is the root of Hinduism = Veda is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Hinduism (yin<sup>4</sup>.tu<sup>4</sup>.chiao<sup>4</sup>).-s (ti<sup>4</sup>) root (kēn<sup>1</sup>.pēn<sup>3</sup>).
6. God has created the universe = God (shén<sup>2</sup>) create (ch'uang<sup>4</sup>.tsao<sup>4</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>3</sup>) universe (yü<sup>3</sup>.chou<sup>4</sup>).
7. The Quran guides those who fear God = Quran guide (tai<sup>4</sup>) God (shén<sup>2</sup>) fear (p'a<sup>4</sup>)-ing (怕) people (jén<sup>2</sup>.min<sup>2</sup>).
8. Mrs. Mukherjee is a pious lady. She everyday reads the Bible and every Sunday goes to Church = Mukherjee Mrs. (t'ai<sup>4</sup>.t'ai<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) pious (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>.hsin<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) lady (fu<sup>4</sup>.jén<sup>2</sup>). She (t'a<sup>1</sup>) every (mei<sup>3</sup>) day (天 t'ien<sup>1</sup>) [or everyday (t'ien<sup>1</sup>.t'ien<sup>1</sup>)] read (tu<sup>2</sup>) Bible (shéng<sup>4</sup>.ching<sup>1</sup> or shéng<sup>4</sup>.shu<sup>1</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) every (mei<sup>3</sup>) Sunday (li<sup>3</sup>.pai<sup>4</sup>.jih<sup>4</sup>) to (到) tao<sup>4</sup>) church (li<sup>3</sup>.pai<sup>4</sup>.t'ang<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
9. My grand-mother always goes to the temple of the goddess Kali = my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) grand-mother (tsu<sup>3</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>) always (ch'ang<sup>2</sup>.ch'ang<sup>2</sup> or shih<sup>2</sup>.ch'ang<sup>2</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) goddess (nū<sup>3</sup>.shén<sup>2</sup>) Kali.-s (ti<sup>4</sup>) temple (miao<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
10. The Asians have arisen and awakened = Asia (ya<sup>3</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup>) man (jén<sup>2</sup>) arise (chan<sup>4</sup>.ch'i<sup>3</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) awaken (chiao<sup>4</sup>.hsing<sup>3</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
11. The European civilization is based on materialism; whereas the Asiatic civilization is based on spiritualism = Europe (ou<sup>1</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup>) civilization (wēn<sup>2</sup>.hua<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) base (kēn<sup>1</sup>.chū<sup>4</sup>) materialism (wei<sup>2</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>); whereas (hsiang<sup>1</sup>.fan<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) Asia (ya<sup>3</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup>) civilization is base spirituality (wei<sup>2</sup>.ling<sup>2</sup>.lun<sup>4</sup>).
12. Africa is a continent = Africa (fei<sup>1</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) continent (ta<sup>4</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup> or ta<sup>4</sup>.lu<sup>4</sup>).
13. Australian butter is good = Australia (ao<sup>4</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup>)-s (ti<sup>4</sup>) butter (niu<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>).

## THIRTY-SECOND LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 省主席 shêng<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-hsî<sup>2</sup>, Governor ; the former means ' province ' and chu<sup>3</sup>-hsî<sup>2</sup> ' a chairman '.
2. 校長 hsiao<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Chancellor (of a university), Principal (of a college), Headmaster (of a school) ; hsia<sup>4</sup> means ' school ' ; chang<sup>3</sup> ' senior '.
3. 副校長 fu<sup>4</sup>-hsiao<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Vice-Chancellor ; where fu<sup>4</sup> means ' an assistant, to aid, to second '.
4. 註冊處主任 chu<sup>4</sup>-ts'ê<sup>4</sup>-ch'u<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-jên<sup>4</sup>, Registrar (an administrative officer of an educational institution) ; where chu<sup>4</sup> denotes ' to sign, to record ', ts'ê<sup>4</sup> ' a register, a list ', ch'u<sup>4</sup> ' to manage ', chu<sup>3</sup> ' a lord, a master ', jên<sup>4</sup> ' an official position '. Again chu<sup>3</sup>-jên<sup>4</sup> means ' a principal, a manager, a chairman ', and chu<sup>4</sup>-ts'ê<sup>4</sup>-ch'u<sup>4</sup> denotes ' office of the Registrar '.
5. 管考員 kuan<sup>3</sup>-k'ao<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, Controller of Examinations ; where kuan<sup>3</sup> means ' to control ', k'ao<sup>3</sup> ' examination ' and yüan<sup>2</sup> ' an official '.
6. 大學 ta<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, a university, a college ; where the latter means ' to learn '.
7. 中學 chung<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, a high school.
8. 小,, hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, a primary school.
9. 視學員 shih<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, Inspector of schools ; where shih<sup>4</sup> means ' to inspect '.
10. 教授 chiao<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>4</sup>, a professor ; where chiao<sup>4</sup> means ' education, teaching ', but chiao<sup>1</sup>, ' to teach ' and shou<sup>4</sup> denotes ' to give, to transmit '.
11. ,, 員 chiao<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, a teacher.

12. 講演 *chiang<sup>3</sup>-yen<sup>3</sup>* }  
 or  
 演說 *yen<sup>3</sup>-shuo<sup>1</sup>* } lecture, to lecture, to address, to  
 deliver a speech ; where *chiang<sup>3</sup>*  
 means 'to preach, to expound, to discuss, to  
 speak', *yen<sup>3</sup>*, 'extended, wide, to practise, to  
 perform, to exercise' and *shuo<sup>1</sup>* means 'to  
 speak'.

13. 大學生 *ta<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>*, a university student.

14. 科 „ *k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>*, science ; where *k'o<sup>1</sup>* means 'a class,  
 an order or series, a department'.

15. 文 „ *wê<sup>n</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>*, arts, literature ; where *wê<sup>n</sup>* means  
 'literature'.

16. 散文 *san<sup>3</sup>-wê<sup>n</sup>*, prose ; where *san<sup>3</sup>* means 'to scatter'.

17. „ „ 家 *san<sup>3</sup>-wê<sup>n</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>*, a prose-writer ; where *chia<sup>1</sup>*  
 used as a suffix to indicate a specialist in any  
 branch.

18. 詩 *shih<sup>1</sup>*, poetry, a poem.

19. „ 人 *shih<sup>1</sup>-jê<sup>n</sup>*, a poet.

20. 女詩人 *nü<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>1</sup>-jê<sup>n</sup>*, a poetess.

21. 首 *shou<sup>3</sup>*, numerary adjunct of poems, plays, etc.

22. 哲科博士 *chê<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, Ph.D. Doctor of  
 Philosophy ; where *chê<sup>2</sup>* means 'wise'  
 and *po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, means Doctor (academic  
 degree)—*po<sup>2</sup>* means 'extensive, ample'  
 and *shih<sup>4</sup>* means 'a scholar'.

23. 文 „ „ „ *wê<sup>n</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, D.Litt. Doctor of  
 Literature.

24. „ „ 碩 „ *wê<sup>n</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, M.A. Master of  
 Arts ; where *shih<sup>2</sup>* (or *shuo<sup>4</sup>*)-*shih<sup>4</sup>* means  
 Master (academic degree); *shih<sup>2</sup>* (or *shuo<sup>4</sup>*)  
 means 'great, eminent, large, full, ripe'.

25. 文科學士 wên<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, B.A. Bachelor of Arts ; where hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, Bachelor (academic degree).

26. 理 .. .. li<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, B.Sc. Bachelor of Science.

27. 法 .. .. fa<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, LL.B. Bachelor of Law.

28. 醫 .. .. i<sup>1</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, M.B. Bachelor of Medicine.

29. 理 .. 碩 .. li<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, M.Sc. Master of Science.

30. .. .. 博 .. li<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, D.Sc. Doctor of Science ; where li<sup>3</sup> means 'reason, principle, right as an abstract principle'.

31. 法 .. .. fa<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, LL.D. Doctor of Law ; where fa<sup>3</sup> means 'law'.

32. 醫 .. .. i<sup>1</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, M.D. Doctor of Medicine ; where i<sup>1</sup> means 'to cure, to heal'.

33. 神 .. .. shêñ<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, D.D. Doctor of Divinity ; where shêñ<sup>2</sup> means 'God, divine'.

34. 工程科學士 kung<sup>1</sup>-ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, B.E. Bachelor of Engineering ; where kung<sup>1</sup> means 'labour, work, to work' ; and ch'êng<sup>2</sup> 'a road, journey' ; kung<sup>1</sup>-ch'êng<sup>2</sup> means 'engineering'.

35. 數學 shu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, mathematics ; where shu<sup>4</sup> means 'number'.

36. 算 .. suan<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, arithmetic ; where suan<sup>4</sup> means 'to calculate, to reckon'.

37. 代數學 tai<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, algebra ; where tai<sup>4</sup> means 'a substitute'.

38. **幾何學** chi<sup>3</sup>.ho<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, geometry.

39. **物理** .., wu<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, physics; where wu<sup>4</sup> means 'matter, substance' and li<sup>3</sup> 'principle, reason'.

40. **化學** hua<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, chemistry; where hua<sup>4</sup> means 'to change'.

41. **生物學** shêng<sup>1</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, biology; where shêng<sup>1</sup> means 'life'.

42. .., **理** .., shêng<sup>1</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, physiology.

43. **地** .., ti<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, geography; where ti<sup>4</sup> means 'earth'.

44. .., **質** .., ti<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, geology; where chih<sup>2</sup> means 'elements, matter'.

45. **動物** .., tung<sup>4</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, zoology; where tung<sup>4</sup> means 'to move, to start' and tung<sup>4</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup> means 'a moving creature, an animal'.

46. **植物** .., chih<sup>2</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, botany; where chih<sup>2</sup> means 'a tree, a plant', and chih<sup>2</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup> means 'a plant'.

47. **心理** .., hsin<sup>1</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, psychology; where hsin<sup>1</sup> means 'the heart, the mind'.

48. **語言** .., yü<sup>3</sup>.yen<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, linguistics, philology; where yü<sup>3</sup> means 'language, a word, to talk' and yen<sup>2</sup> means 'a word, speech, to speak, to talk'.

49. **人類** .., jên<sup>2</sup>.lui<sup>4</sup> (or lei<sup>4</sup>).hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, anthropology; where jên<sup>2</sup> means 'man', lui<sup>4</sup> denotes 'a class, a species, a kind' and jên<sup>2</sup>.lui<sup>4</sup> denotes 'a human being'.

50. **政治** .., chêng<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, politics; where chêng<sup>4</sup> means 'government, administration' and chih<sup>4</sup> 'to govern'.

51. 經濟學 ching<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>4</sup> (or tsi<sup>4</sup>)-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, economics ; where ching<sup>1</sup> means 'to manage, to regulate, to transact' and chi<sup>4</sup> (tsi<sup>4</sup>) 'to aid, to relieve'.

52. 論理 .. lun<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, logic ; where lun<sup>4</sup> means 'to discuss, to reason, to argue'.

53. 哲學 che<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, philosophy ; where che<sup>2</sup> means 'wise, to know intuitively'.

54. 歷史 li<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>3</sup>, history ; where li<sup>4</sup> means 'successive, in order' and shih<sup>3</sup> 'history'.

55. 天文 t'ien<sup>1</sup>-wên<sup>2</sup>, astronomy, astrology.

NOTE.—**家** chia<sup>1</sup> is used as a suffix to indicate a specialist in any branch ; e.g., li<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>3</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, a historian ; che<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, a philosopher.

56. 地圖 ti<sup>4</sup>-t'u<sup>2</sup>, a map ; where ti<sup>4</sup> means 'earth' and t'u<sup>2</sup> 'a map, a picture'.

57. .. .. 書 ti<sup>4</sup>-t'u<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>, an atlas ; where shu<sup>1</sup> means 'a book'.

58. 學識 hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, knowledge (learning) ; where the former means 'to learn, to study' and the latter 'to know, to recognize'.

59. 沒有 mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>, without, not having.

60. 不行 pu<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>2</sup>, impossible ; where the former means 'not' and the latter 'to do, to act, to walk'.

61. 記性 chi<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>4</sup> (sing<sup>4</sup>), memory ; where the former means 'to remember, to record, a sign, a mark' and the latter 'nature, temper, a property, a quality'.

62. 公佈 kung<sup>1</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>, to make public, to publish ; where the former means 'public, open to all' and the latter 'to inform'.

63. 日期 jih<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>, date ; where the former means 'a day' and the latter 'date, period'.

64. 假期 chia<sup>4</sup>.ch'i<sup>2</sup>, vacation ; where the former means 'leave of absence'.

65. 暑假 shu<sup>3</sup>.chia<sup>4</sup>, the summer vacation ; where the former means 'the heat of summer'.

66. 裏 li<sup>3</sup>, within, inside.

67. 徨 pien<sup>4</sup>, a time, a turn, whole, everywhere.

68. 所有(的) so<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup> (ti<sup>0</sup>), all ; where so<sup>2</sup> means 'what, whatsoever, that which' and yu<sup>3</sup> 'to have'.

69. 合 ho<sup>2</sup>, to shut, to close (as book).

70. 放 ko<sup>1</sup>, to put, to place.

71. 皮包 p'i<sup>2</sup>.pao<sup>1</sup>, a bag ; where the former means 'leather' and the latter 'to wrap'.

72. 話 hua<sup>4</sup>, speech, talk, word, to speak.

73. 訓 hsün<sup>4</sup>, to instruct, to advise.

74. 完 wan<sup>2</sup> (uan<sup>2</sup>), finish.

75. 同 t'ung<sup>2</sup>, all, together.

76. 鼓掌 ku<sup>2</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, to clap (the hands) ; where the former means 'a drum, to drum, to beat (a drum), to strike (a ball)' and the latter 'the palm of the hand'.

77. 代 tai<sup>4</sup> officiating, acting.

78. 又 yu<sup>4</sup> (iu<sup>4</sup>), and, also, again, moreover, further.

#### Exercise (with hints)

1. The Governor is the Chancellor of our university = Governor (shêng<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.hsı<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) our (wo<sup>3</sup>.mén<sup>2</sup>) university (ta<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) Chancellor (hsiao<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>).
2. The Vice-Chancellor will address the students to-day = Vice-Chancellor (fu<sup>4</sup>.hsiao<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>) to-day (chin<sup>1</sup>.t'ien<sup>1</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) respond (對 tui<sup>4</sup>) student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.shêng<sup>1</sup>) address (chiang<sup>3</sup>.yen<sup>3</sup>).
3. The Registrar publishes the date of the examination = Registrar (chu<sup>4</sup>.ts'ê<sup>4</sup>.ch'u<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.jên<sup>4</sup>) publish (kung<sup>1</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>) examination (k'ao<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) date (jih<sup>4</sup>.ch'i<sup>2</sup>).
4. I want to see the Controller of Examinations = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) Controller of Examinations (kuan<sup>3</sup>.k'ao<sup>3</sup>.yüan<sup>2</sup>).

5. The Inspector of schools will meet the Headmasters of High schools = Inspector of schools (shih<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) meet (會 hui<sup>4</sup>) high schools (chung<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) headmaster (hsiao<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>).
6. The professor is teaching philology in the class-room = professor (chiau<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>4</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) teach (chiau<sup>4</sup>) room (shih<sup>4</sup>) explain (chiang<sup>3</sup>) philology (yü<sup>3</sup>-yen<sup>2</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>).
7. Our headmaster is an M.A. = our (wo<sup>3</sup>-mén<sup>2</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) Headmaster (hsiao<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) M.A. (wén<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>).
8. The teacher is teaching algebra = teacher (chiau<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>) explain (chiang<sup>3</sup>) algebra (tai<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>).
9. Miss Ray is an officiating teacher = Ray Miss (hsiao<sup>3</sup>-chieh<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) officiating (tai<sup>4</sup>) teacher (hsien<sup>1</sup>-shéng<sup>1</sup>).
10. Both of us will teach both prose and poetry = both of us [= we two piece (wo<sup>3</sup>-mén<sup>2</sup> liang<sup>3</sup> ko<sup>4</sup>)] will (yao<sup>4</sup>) teach (chiau<sup>1</sup>) both [= and (yu<sup>4</sup>)] prose (san<sup>3</sup>-wén<sup>2</sup>) and (yu<sup>4</sup>) poetry (shih<sup>1</sup>).
11. Rabindranath was a great poet = Rabindranath was [= is (shih<sup>4</sup>)] one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) great (ta<sup>4</sup>) poet (shih<sup>1</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup>).
12. Mrs. Naidu was a poetess = Naidu Mrs. (t'ai<sup>4</sup>-t'ai) was [= is (shih<sup>4</sup>)] one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) poetess (nū<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>1</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup>).
13. The study of physics is impossible without the knowledge of mathematics = not (pu<sup>4</sup>) knowledge (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) mathematics (shu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) impossible (pu<sup>4</sup>-k'o<sup>3</sup>-nēng<sup>2</sup>) learn (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>) physics (wu<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>).
14. The study of chemistry requires good memory = study (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>) chemistry (hua<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>) must (yao<sup>4</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) one (ti<sup>4</sup>) memory (chi<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>4</sup>).
15. The student closes the atlas and puts it back into his bag = student (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shéng<sup>1</sup>) take hold of (把 pa<sup>3</sup>) atlas (ti<sup>4</sup>-t'u<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>) close (ho<sup>2</sup>) upon (上 shang<sup>4</sup>) again (yu<sup>4</sup>) take hold of (pa<sup>3</sup>) it (t'a<sup>1</sup>) put (ko<sup>1</sup>) back (回 hui<sup>2</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) bag (p'i<sup>2</sup>-pao<sup>1</sup>) into [= inside (li<sup>3</sup>)] go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>). [ko<sup>1</sup>-hui<sup>2</sup>-ch'ü<sup>4</sup> = to put back].
16. He carries the map of India in his hand = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) hand (shou<sup>2</sup>) inside (li<sup>3</sup>) take (na<sup>2</sup>) place (着 cho<sup>2</sup>, to place, durative suffix) India (yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>4</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>4</sup>) map (ti<sup>4</sup>-t'u<sup>2</sup>). [na<sup>2</sup>-cho<sup>2</sup>, to carry].
17. After the Head of the Department had ended his speech the university students clapped their hands = Head of the Department (hsü<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-jén<sup>4</sup>) instruct (hsün<sup>4</sup>) finish (wan<sup>2</sup>)-ed after (hou<sup>4</sup>) university student (ta<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shéng<sup>1</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) clap (ku<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>3</sup>).
18. I hope that you will read botany in the vacation = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) hope (希望 hsi<sup>1</sup>-wang<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>-mén<sup>2</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) vacation (chia<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>) within (li<sup>3</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) read (k'an<sup>4</sup>, to see, to read silently) Botany (chih<sup>2</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>).
19. Dr. Meghnad Saha is a great scientist = Meghnad Saha D.Sc. (li<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-po<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) great (ta<sup>4</sup>) scientist (k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>).

### THIRTY-THIRD LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

### VOCABULARY

1. 革命 ko<sup>2</sup>-ming<sup>4</sup>, revolution; where the former means 'to remove' and the latter 'a command, Government notification'.
2. 萬歲 wan<sup>4</sup>-sui<sup>4</sup>, long live! Where the former means 'ten thousand' and the latter 'a year'.
3. 民主政體 min<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>2</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-t'i<sup>3</sup>, democracy; where min<sup>2</sup> means 'mankind, people', chu<sup>2</sup> 'a lord, a master, to act as lord', chêng<sup>4</sup> 'to rule, administration, Government', t'i<sup>3</sup> 'a class or body of persons, limbs, the trunk'. [chêng<sup>4</sup>-t'i<sup>3</sup>, system of government.]
4. ,, , , 黨 min<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Democratic party; where tang<sup>3</sup> means 'party, association'.
5. ,, 黨 min<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, People's party.
6. 工 ,, kung<sup>1</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Labour party; where kung<sup>1</sup> means 'labour'.
7. 布 ,, pu<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Bolshevik party.
8. 共和黨 kung<sup>4</sup>-ho<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Republican party; where kung<sup>4</sup> means 'all' and ho<sup>2</sup> 'peace, harmony'.
9. ,, 產 ,, kung<sup>4</sup>-ch'an<sup>3</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Communist party; where ch'an<sup>3</sup> denotes 'property'.
10. 國民 ,, kuo<sup>2</sup>-min<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Nationalist party; where kuo<sup>2</sup> means 'a nation, a country'.
11. 社會 ,, shê<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Socialist party; where shê<sup>4</sup> means 'a society' and hui<sup>4</sup> also denotes 'a society'. [shê<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>, society.]
12. 反對 ,, fan<sup>3</sup>-tui<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, Opposition party; where fan<sup>3</sup> means 'to resist' and tui<sup>4</sup> 'against, to oppose'. [fan<sup>3</sup>-tui<sup>4</sup>, to oppose.]

*N.B.—員* yüan<sup>2</sup>, an official, is used as a suffix to 'tang<sup>3</sup>' denoting the member of a party; *e.g.* kung<sup>4</sup>-ch'an<sup>3</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, a communist; shê<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, a socialist; etc.

13. 資本主義 tzü<sup>1</sup>-pēn<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, Capitalism; where tzü<sup>1</sup> means 'wealth, property' and pēn<sup>2</sup> 'a root'. [tzü<sup>1</sup>-pēn<sup>2</sup>, a capital (in trade).]

14. 法西斯蒂主義 fa<sup>4</sup>-hsí<sup>1</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, Fascism. [fa<sup>4</sup>-hsí<sup>1</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, a fascist.]

N.B.—chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup> used as a suffix similar to English '-ism'; e.g. kung<sup>4</sup>-ch'an<sup>3</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, Communism; shê<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, Socialism; etc.

15. 左派 tso<sup>3</sup>-p'ai<sup>4</sup>-, a leftist party; where tso<sup>3</sup> means 'the left side, the left hand side' and p'ai<sup>4</sup> 'a clique'.

16. 領袖 ling<sup>3</sup>-hsiu<sup>4</sup>, a leader; the former means 'to lead' and the latter 'a sleeve'.

17. 假冒 chia<sup>3</sup>-mao<sup>4</sup>, hypocrisy; where the former means 'false' and the latter 'to feign'.

18. 意思 i<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>, to mean; where the former means 'meaning' and the latter 'to think, to consider'.

19. 選舉 hsüan<sup>3</sup>-chü<sup>3</sup>, election, to elect; where hsüan<sup>3</sup> means 'to select or choose a person' and chü<sup>3</sup> 'to elect'.

20. „ „ 票 hsüan<sup>3</sup>-chü<sup>3</sup>-p'iao<sup>4</sup>, a voting paper, a ballot; where p'iao<sup>4</sup> means 'a slip of paper'.

21. „ „ 人 hsüan<sup>3</sup>-chü<sup>3</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>, a voter.

22. 投票 „ t'ou<sup>2</sup>-p'iao<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>, a voter; where t'ou<sup>2</sup> means 'to cast (as a vote)' and t'ou<sup>2</sup>-p'iao<sup>4</sup> denotes 'to vote'.

23. 箱子 hsiang<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>3</sup>, a box, a case.

24. 詭詐 kuei<sup>3</sup>-cha<sup>4</sup>-(ti<sup>4</sup>), treacherous; where both the words mean 'to cheat, to deceive'.

25. 財 ts'ai<sup>2</sup>, wealth.

26. 平等 p'ing<sup>2</sup>-tēng<sup>3</sup>, equality; where both mean 'equal'.

27. 暴動 pao<sup>4</sup>-tung<sup>4</sup> } riot, violence; where pao<sup>4</sup> means  
or „亂 pao<sup>4</sup>-luan<sup>4</sup> } 'violent', tung<sup>4</sup> 'action' and luan<sup>4</sup>  
„亂 pao<sup>4</sup>-luan<sup>4</sup> } 'rebellion'.

28. 引起 yin<sup>3</sup>-ch'i<sup>3</sup>, to lead; where yin<sup>3</sup> means 'to lead, to guide' and ch'i<sup>3</sup> 'to rise, to raise'.

29. 最後 tsui<sup>4</sup>-hou<sup>4</sup> } ultimately; where tsui<sup>4</sup> means 'very, or most, exceedingly', hou<sup>4</sup> 'afterwards',  
到底 tao<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>3</sup> } tao<sup>4</sup> 'to (a place), to reach, towards' and ti<sup>3</sup> 'below, the base, at last'.

30. 內戰 nei<sup>4</sup>-chan<sup>4</sup> } civil war; where nei<sup>4</sup> means 'within, or inside' and chan<sup>4</sup> 'to fight, to war'.  
,, 亂 nei<sup>4</sup>-luan<sup>4</sup>

31. 平定 p'ing<sup>2</sup>-ting<sup>4</sup> } to suppress; where p'ing<sup>2</sup> means 'to control', ting<sup>4</sup> 'to decide, to or fix', ch'en<sup>4</sup> 'to repress' and ya<sup>1</sup> 鎮壓 ch'en<sup>4</sup>-ya<sup>1</sup> 'to oppress, to control, to repress'.

32. 壓制 ya<sup>1</sup>-chih<sup>4</sup>, oppression; where chih<sup>4</sup> means 'to restrain'.

33. 哥哥 ko<sup>1</sup>-ko<sup>1</sup>, an elder brother.

34. 女婿 nü<sup>3</sup>-hsü<sup>4</sup> (sü<sup>4</sup>), a son-in-law; where the latter means 'a son-in-law'.

35. 公公 kung<sup>1</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>, a father-in-law (husband's father).

36. 丈人 chang<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup> } a father-in-law (wife's father);  
or 岳父 yüeh<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>4</sup> where chang<sup>4</sup> means 'senior, respectable', yüeh<sup>4</sup> 'wife's parents' and fu<sup>4</sup> 'father'.  
,, 丈 yüeh<sup>4</sup>-chang,

37. 强 ch'iang<sup>2</sup>, strong.

38. 公權 kung<sup>1</sup> ch'üan<sup>2</sup>, a civil right; where ch'üan<sup>2</sup> means 'an inherent right, authority, influence'.

39. 自由 tzü<sup>4</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>, liberty; where the former means 'self', and the latter 'self-possessed, at ease'.

40. 貧苦 p'in<sup>2</sup>-k'u<sup>3</sup> } poverty; where p'in<sup>2</sup> means 'poor', or 窮 .. ch'iung<sup>2</sup>-k'u<sup>3</sup> k'u<sup>3</sup> 'bitter, sorrow, to be in bad circumstances' and ch'iung<sup>2</sup> 'poor'.

41. 窮乏 ch'iung<sup>2</sup>-fa<sup>2</sup>, want (poverty); where the latter means 'to be in want'.

42. 繁榮 fan<sup>2</sup>-jung<sup>2</sup>, prosperity; where fan<sup>2</sup> means 'many' and jung<sup>2</sup> 'prosperous, flourishing'.

43. **增加** tsêng<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, to increase; where the former means 'to increase' and the latter 'to add'.

44. **消滅** hsiao<sup>1</sup>-mieh<sup>4</sup>, to remove, to eradicate; where the former means 'to disperse, to melt' and the latter 'to destroy, to exterminate'.

45. **攻擊** kung<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>, to attack; the former means 'to attack' and the latter 'to strike'.

46. **互** hu<sup>4</sup>, each other, mutual.

47. **定** ting<sup>4</sup>, to settle, to decide.

48. **侵** ch'in<sup>1</sup> (ts'in<sup>1</sup>), to usurp, to encroach upon.

49. **犯** fan<sup>4</sup>, to invade, to clash, to transgress, to violate.

50. **協定** hsieh<sup>2</sup>-ting<sup>4</sup>, a pact, an agreement; where the former means 'an agreement' and the latter 'to settle'.

51. **和** .. ho<sup>2</sup>-yüeh<sup>1</sup> a treaty of peace; where ho<sup>2</sup> means 'peace'.

52. **友好條約** yu<sup>3</sup>-hao<sup>3</sup>-t'iao<sup>2</sup>-yüeh<sup>1</sup>, a treaty of friendship; where yu<sup>3</sup> means 'friend' and hao<sup>3</sup> 'good'.

53. **通商** .., t'ung<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>1</sup>-t'iao<sup>2</sup>-yüeh<sup>1</sup>, a commercial treaty; where t'ung<sup>1</sup> means 'through, to go through' and shang<sup>1</sup> 'trade, commerce'.

54. **簽** ch'ien<sup>1</sup> (ts'ien<sup>1</sup>), to sign, to endorse. [ch'ien yüeh<sup>1</sup>, to sign a treaty.] chieh<sup>2</sup> 'to contract, to give a bond for.'

55. **締約** ti<sup>4</sup>-chieh<sup>2</sup>, to make or conclude (a treaty). [ti<sup>4</sup> yüeh<sup>1</sup>, to conclude a treaty.] [chieh<sup>2</sup> 'to contract.']}

56. **發生** fa<sup>1</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>, to grow, to happen; where fa<sup>1</sup> means 'to rise' and shêng<sup>1</sup>, 'to produce'.

57. **經濟** ching<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>4</sup>, economy; where the former means 'to manage, to transact' and the latter 'to aid, to relieve'.

58. **崩潰** pêng<sup>1</sup>-k'uei<sup>4</sup>, breakdown; where the former means 'to fall in ruins' and the latter 'to break (an agreement)'.

59. 向 hsiang<sup>4</sup>, to, facing towards.

60. 提出 t'i<sup>2</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup>, to make (a protest), to deliver (an ultimatum); where the former means 'to raise, to mention, to pick up, to pull up' and the latter 'out, as in (to come) out, (to go) out'.

61. 抗議 k'ang<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, a protest; where the former means 'to oppose, to resist' and the latter 'to discuss, to deliberate'.

62. 最後通牒 tsui<sup>4</sup>-hou<sup>4</sup>-t'ung<sup>1</sup>-tieh<sup>2</sup>, an ultimatum; where tieh<sup>2</sup> means 'a despatch, a warrant, a document, official instruction'.

63. 屬於 shu<sup>3</sup>-yü<sup>2</sup>, to belong to; where the former means 'to belong to' and the latter 'to, in, on, at, by, from'.

64. 瑞典 jui<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>, Sweden.

65. 緬甸 mien<sup>3</sup>-tien<sup>4</sup>, Burma.

66. 馬來 ma<sup>3</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>, Malay.

67. 曾 ts'êng<sup>2</sup>, already; a sign of the past tense.

Exercise (with hints).

1. Long live revolution (inquilab zindabad) ! = revolution (ko<sup>2</sup>-ming<sup>4</sup>) long live (wan<sup>4</sup>-sui<sup>4</sup>).
2. Long live China ! = China (chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>) long live.
3. Long live India ! = India (yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>0</sup>) long live.
4. Democracy is hypocrisy; because people vote wealth at each election = democracy (min<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-t'i<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) hypocrisy (chia<sup>3</sup>-mao<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>0</sup>); because (yin<sup>1</sup>-wei<sup>4</sup>) people (jêng<sup>2</sup>-min<sup>2</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) each (mei<sup>3</sup>) time (hui<sup>2</sup>) election (hsüan<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>) vote (t'ou<sup>2</sup>) wealth (ts'ai<sup>2</sup>).
5. Communism means equality. But communism with violence leads ultimately to civil war = communism (kung<sup>4</sup>-ch'an<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) equality (p'ing<sup>2</sup>-têng<sup>3</sup>) one (ti<sup>0</sup>). But (k'o<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup> or tan<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>) communism is (shih<sup>4</sup>) use (使用 shih<sup>3</sup>-yung<sup>4</sup>) violence (pao<sup>4</sup>-tung<sup>4</sup>) and (而 êrh<sup>2</sup>) ultimately (tsui<sup>4</sup>-hou<sup>4</sup>) lead (yin<sup>2</sup>-ch'i<sup>3</sup>) civil war (nei<sup>4</sup>-chan<sup>4</sup>).
6. What does that mean ? = that (na<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) what (shên<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>) mean (i<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>0</sup>).
7. Fascism suppresses civil rights and liberty = fascism (fa<sup>4</sup>-hsí<sup>1</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) suppress (p'ing<sup>2</sup>-ting<sup>4</sup>) civil rights (kung<sup>1</sup>-ch'üan<sup>2</sup>) and (k'en<sup>1</sup>) liberty (tzü<sup>4</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>).
8. So fascism means oppression = so (so<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup>) fascism is (shih<sup>4</sup>) oppression (ya<sup>1</sup>-chih<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>0</sup>) mean (i<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>0</sup>).

9. Socialism removes want and poverty and increases national prosperity = socialism (shē<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) remove (hsiao<sup>1</sup>-mieh<sup>4</sup>) want (ch'iung<sup>2</sup>-fa<sup>2</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) poverty (p'in<sup>2</sup>-k'u<sup>3</sup>) and (ho<sup>2</sup>) increase (tsēng<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>) national (kuo<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) prosperity (fa<sup>1</sup>-ta<sup>2</sup>).
10. Leader of the Democratic party is the leader of the opposition = democratic party (min<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>0</sup>) leader (ling<sup>3</sup>-hsiu<sup>4</sup>) just (chin<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) opposition-party (fan<sup>3</sup>-tui<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>0</sup>) leader (ling<sup>3</sup>-hsiu<sup>4</sup>).
11. Is your elder brother a communist ? = your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) elder brother (ko<sup>1</sup>-ko<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) communist (kung<sup>4</sup>-ch'an<sup>3</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>-yūan<sup>2</sup>) ma<sup>0</sup> (an interrogative particle).
12. No, he is a socialist = no (pu<sup>4</sup>), he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) socialist (shē<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>-yūan<sup>2</sup>).
13. Does your son-in-law belong to the People's party ? = your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) son-in-law (nū<sup>3</sup>-hsū<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) belong to (shu<sup>3</sup>-yū<sup>2</sup>) People's party (min<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>) ma<sup>0</sup>.
14. His father-in-law is the leader of the Republican party = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) father-in-law (chang<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Republican party (kung<sup>4</sup>-ho<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>) leader (ling<sup>3</sup>-hsiu<sup>4</sup>).
15. Her father-in-law is the leader of the Labour party = her (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) father-in-law (kung<sup>1</sup>-kung<sup>0</sup>) is labour party (kung<sup>1</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>) leader.
16. Communism and capitalism attack each other = communism capitalism (tzū<sup>1</sup>-pēn<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>) each other (hu<sup>4</sup>) mutual (hsiang<sup>1</sup>) attack (kung<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>).
17. Some days ago Egypt concluded a non-aggression pact for five years with England = ago ( 𠂊 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>) some (chi<sup>3</sup>) day (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) Egypt (ai<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>2</sup>) already (ts'ēng<sup>2</sup>) with (kēn<sup>1</sup>) England (ying<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>) settle (ting<sup>4</sup>)-ed one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) five (wu<sup>3</sup>) year (nien<sup>2</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>0</sup>) each other (hu<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) usurp (ch'in<sup>1</sup>) invade (fan<sup>4</sup>) agreement (hsieh<sup>2</sup>-ting<sup>4</sup>).
18. Malay starts a revolution = Malay (ma<sup>3</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>) grow (fa<sup>1</sup>-shēng<sup>1</sup>) revolution (ko<sup>2</sup>-ming<sup>4</sup>).
19. Japan will suffer an economic breakdown = Japan (jih<sup>4</sup>-pēn<sup>3</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>0</sup>) economy (ching<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>4</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) breakdown (pēng<sup>1</sup>-k'uei<sup>4</sup>).
20. Afghanistan has signed a treaty of friendship with India = Afghanistan (a<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>4</sup>-han<sup>4</sup>) already (ts'ēng<sup>2</sup>) with (kēn<sup>1</sup>) India (yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>0</sup>) sign (ch'ien<sup>1</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) treaty of friendship (yu<sup>2</sup>-hao<sup>3</sup>-t'iao<sup>2</sup>-yūeh<sup>1</sup>).
21. Burma has concluded a commercial treaty with China = Burma (mien<sup>3</sup>-tien<sup>4</sup>) already (ts'ēng<sup>2</sup>) with (kēn<sup>1</sup>) China (chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>) conclude (ti<sup>4</sup>-chieh<sup>2</sup>)-ed commercial treaty (t'ung<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>1</sup>-t'iao<sup>2</sup>-yūeh<sup>1</sup>).
22. Sweden has lodged a protest with Russia = Sweden (jui<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>) already (ts'ēng<sup>2</sup>) to (hsiang<sup>4</sup>) Russia (nōgo<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>) make (t'i<sup>2</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup>)-ed protest (k'ang<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>).
23. Russia has delivered an ultimatum to Persia = Russia (nōgo<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>) already (ts'ēng<sup>2</sup>) to (hsiang<sup>4</sup>) Persia (po<sup>1</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>) deliver (t'i<sup>2</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) ultimatum (tsui<sup>4</sup>-hou<sup>4</sup>-t'ung<sup>1</sup>-tieh<sup>2</sup>). [t'i<sup>2</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup> = to deliver (an ultimatum) ].

## THIRTY-FOURTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 國王 kuo<sup>2</sup>.wang<sup>2</sup>, a king; where the latter means 'a king, a ruler'.
2. 王后 wang<sup>2</sup>.hou<sup>4</sup>, a queen; where the latter means 'empress'.
3. ,, 國 wang<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>, kingdom.
4. 皇帝 huang<sup>2</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>, an emperor; where the former means 'a ruler' and the latter 'an emperor'.
5. ,, 后 huang<sup>2</sup>.hou<sup>4</sup>, an empress.
6. 帝國 ti<sup>4</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>, empire.
7. 總裁 tsung<sup>3</sup>.ts'ai<sup>2</sup>  
or  
大總統 ta<sup>4</sup>.tsung<sup>2</sup>.t'ung<sup>3</sup>
8. 副總 „ fu<sup>4</sup>.tsung<sup>2</sup>.t'ung<sup>3</sup>, Vice-President (of a country); where fu<sup>4</sup> means 'an assistant'.
9. 大學校長 ta<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.hsiao<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, President (of a college or university); where hsüeh<sup>2</sup> means 'to learn, to study', hsiao<sup>4</sup> 'a school' and chang<sup>3</sup> 'senior'.
10. 會長 hui<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, President (of an association); where the former means 'a society, an association'.
11. 大學副校長 ta<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>.hsiao<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, Vice-President (of a college or university).
12. 副會長 fu<sup>4</sup>.hui<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, Vice-President (of an association).
13. 主席 chu<sup>2</sup>.hsi<sup>2</sup> (or si<sup>2</sup>), Chairman (of a meeting or committee).

President (of a country); where tsung<sup>3</sup> means 'the chief', ts'ai<sup>2</sup> 'to regulate, to settle, to decide', ta<sup>4</sup> 'great' and t'ung<sup>3</sup> 'to govern'.

14. 中央政府 chung<sup>1</sup>-yang<sup>1</sup>.chêng<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>3</sup>, Central Government; where chung<sup>1</sup> means 'middle', yang<sup>1</sup> 'the centre', chêng<sup>4</sup> 'government' and fu<sup>3</sup> 'a prefecture, a treasury'. [chêng<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>3</sup>, government].

15. 省政府 shêng<sup>3</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>3</sup>, Provincial Government; where shêng<sup>3</sup> means 'a province, a state'.

16. 部 pu<sup>4</sup>, ministry (office of cabinet official).

17. .. 長 pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, minister (cabinet post).

18. 首相 shou<sup>3</sup>.hsiang<sup>4</sup> (siang<sup>4</sup>), Prime Minister; where shou<sup>3</sup> means 'the head, a chief' and hsiang<sup>4</sup> 'minister'.

19. 外交部 wai<sup>4</sup>-chiaoz<sup>1</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>, Ministry of Foreign affairs; where wai<sup>4</sup> means 'foreign' and chiao<sup>1</sup> 'relation'.

20. ,, ,, .. 長 wai<sup>4</sup>-chiaoz<sup>1</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Minister of Foreign Affairs.

21. 內務 .. nei<sup>4</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Home Minister; where nei<sup>4</sup> means 'inside' and wu<sup>4</sup> 'affairs'.

22. 財政 .. ts'ai<sup>2</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Minister of Finance; where ts'ai<sup>2</sup> means 'wealth'. [ts'ai<sup>2</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>, finance].

23. 教育 .. chiao<sup>1</sup>-yü<sup>0</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Education Minister; where chiao<sup>1</sup> means 'to teach', and yü<sup>0</sup> (iuh<sup>4</sup>) 'to give birth to, to bring up'; and chiao<sup>1</sup>-yü<sup>0</sup> 'education'.

24. 衛生 .. wei<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Health Minister; where wei<sup>4</sup> means 'to protect, to guard', shêng<sup>1</sup> 'life'; and wei<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup> 'health'.

25. 糧食 .. liang<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, Food Minister; where liang<sup>2</sup> means 'grain, food, rations' and shih<sup>2</sup> 'food, to eat'.

26. 大使 *ta<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>3</sup>*, an ambassador; where *ta<sup>4</sup>* means 'great' and *shih<sup>4</sup>* 'a commissioner'.

27. 大使館 *ta<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>*, embassy; where *kuan<sup>3</sup>* means 'a public office'.

28. 總領事 *tsung<sup>2</sup>-ling<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, consul-general; where *ling<sup>3</sup>* means 'to lead, to have control of, to guide', *shih<sup>4</sup>* 'an affair' and *ling<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>* 'consul'.

29. 副 „ „ *fu<sup>4</sup>-ling<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, vice-consul.

30. 署理公使 *shu<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>3</sup>*, chargé d'affaires; where *shu<sup>4</sup>* means 'acting, temporary appointment', *li<sup>3</sup>* 'to manage' and *kung<sup>1</sup>* 'public, all'.

31. 旅長 *lü<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>*, brigadier; where *lü<sup>2</sup>* means 'a brigade'.

32. 陸軍學生 *lu<sup>4</sup>-chün<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>*, cadet; where *lu<sup>4</sup>-chün* means 'army' and 'hsüeh-shêng<sup>1</sup>' 'a student'.

33. 隊 *tui<sup>4</sup>*, corps (military).

34. 國家陸軍學生隊 *kuo<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>-lu<sup>4</sup>-chün<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>-tui<sup>4</sup>*, national cadet corps (N.C.C.)

35. 指揮官 *chih<sup>3</sup>-hui<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>* or 司令 „ „ *szü<sup>1</sup>-ling<sup>4</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>* } commander; where *chih<sup>3</sup>* means 'to direct', *hui<sup>1</sup>* 'to direct', *kuan<sup>1</sup>* 'an official', *szü<sup>1</sup>* 'an officer, to control' and *ling<sup>4</sup>* 'to command'.

36. 總指揮 *tsung<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>-hui<sup>1</sup>* or „ 司令 *tsung<sup>3</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>-ling<sup>4</sup>* } commander-in-chief.

37. „ 督 *tsung<sup>3</sup>-tu<sup>1</sup>*, Viceroy or Governor-General; where *tu<sup>1</sup>* means 'a Viceroy or Governor-General'.

38. 團 *t'uan<sup>2</sup>*, corps (diplomatic), home-guard.

39. 副官 *fu<sup>4</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>*, aide-de-camp.

40. 市長 *shih<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>*, mayor; where the former means 'a market, a city, a town'.

41. 失 shih<sup>1</sup>, to lose.
42. 名譽 ming<sup>2</sup>-yü<sup>4</sup>, reputation; where the former means 'a name, reputation', and the latter 'fame'.
43. 得人心 tê<sup>2</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup>-hsin<sup>1</sup> (ti<sup>0</sup>), popular; where tê<sup>2</sup> means 'to get', jên<sup>2</sup> 'man' and hsin<sup>1</sup> 'heart'.
44. 地方 ti<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>0</sup>, area; where ti<sup>4</sup> means 'earth' and fang<sup>1</sup> 'square'.
45. 廣大 kuang<sup>3</sup>-ta<sup>4</sup>, vast; where both mean 'vast'.
46. 演說 yen<sup>3</sup>-shuo<sup>1</sup>, to make a speech; where the former means 'to perform, to exercise' and the latter 'to speak'.
47. 回話 hui<sup>2</sup> hua<sup>4</sup>, to make an answer (verbally); where the former means 'to return' and the latter 'to speak'.
48. 待 tai<sup>4</sup>, to treat (to act toward), to behave, to wait.
49. 親熱 ch'in<sup>1</sup> (or ts'in<sup>1</sup>)-jê<sup>4</sup>, cordial; where the former means 'affection, to love' and the latter 'hot, fever, earnest, to heat'.
50. 升 shêng<sup>1</sup>, to hoist (a flag).
51. 國旗 kuo<sup>2</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>, national flag; where the former means 'nation' and the latter 'a flag'.
52. 領 ling<sup>3</sup>, to draw, to receive.
53. 厚 hou<sup>4</sup>, substantial, thick, good or fat (in case of salary).
54. 薪俸 hsin<sup>1</sup>-fêng<sup>4</sup>, salary; where the former means 'fuel' and the latter 'salary, emolument'.
55. 津貼 chin<sup>1</sup> (tsin<sup>1</sup>)-t'ieh<sup>1</sup>, allowance; where the former means 'to moisten' and the latter 'to paste, to stick to.'
56. 腐敗 fu<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>, corrupt, corruption; where the former means 'corrupt, rotten' and the latter 'to ruin, to destroy, to defeat'.
57. 苦 k'u<sup>3</sup> or 痛苦 t'ung<sup>4</sup>-k'u<sup>3</sup>, suffering; where k'u<sup>3</sup> means 'bitter' and t'ung<sup>4</sup> 'pain'.

58. 召 chiao<sup>4</sup>, to call, to cause.

59. 會議 hui<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup> or 談判 t'an<sup>2</sup>-p'an<sup>4</sup>, conference, meeting, where hui<sup>4</sup> means 'to meet, meeting', i<sup>4</sup> 'to discuss', t'an<sup>2</sup> 'to chat, to converse' and p'an<sup>4</sup> 'to judge, to decide'.

60. 開幕 k'ai<sup>1</sup>-mu<sup>4</sup>, to inaugurate ; where k'ai<sup>1</sup> means 'to open' and mu<sup>4</sup> 'a curtain, a screen.'

61. 主持 chu<sup>3</sup>-ch'ih<sup>2</sup>, to preside ; where chu<sup>3</sup> means 'a lord, a master, to act as lord' and ch'ih<sup>2</sup> 'to manage'.

62. 參加 ts'an<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, to participate, participation ; where ts'an<sup>1</sup> means 'to take part in' and chia<sup>1</sup> 'to add to, to grant to'.

63. 典禮 tien<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, ceremony ; where tien<sup>2</sup> means 'a statute, a law' and li<sup>3</sup> 'ceremony'.

64. 由 yu<sup>2</sup>, from.

65. 而 êrh<sup>2</sup>, and, and yet, still, also, but.

66. 首都 shou<sup>3</sup>-tu<sup>1</sup>, the capital ; where the former means 'the head' and the latter 'the metropolis'.

67. 照 chao<sup>4</sup>, according to, to shine.

68. 意見 i<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>0</sup>, an opinion ; where the former means 'an idea, an opinion' and the latter 'to see'.

69. 饑餓 chi<sup>1</sup>-chin<sup>4</sup>, famine ; where the former means 'famine, hunger' and the latter 'a dearth'.

70. 看來 k'an<sup>4</sup>-lai<sup>0</sup>, viewpoint ; where the former means 'to see' and the latter 'to come'..

71. 情形 ch'ing<sup>2</sup>-hsing<sup>0</sup>, case (situation) ; where ch'ing<sup>2</sup> means 'circumstances' and hsing<sup>2</sup> 'form, appearance'.

72. 可是 k'o<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, but ; where the former means 'may, can, able' and the latter 'to be'.

73. 餓死 ngo<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>3</sup>, death from starvation ; where the former means 'hungry, starved' and the latter 'to die, death'.

74. 對 tui<sup>4</sup>, right.

75. 錯 ts'o<sup>4</sup>, wrong.

76. 國書 *kuo<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>*, credentials (diplomatic); where the former means 'country' and the latter 'a book'.

77. 呈遞 *ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>*, to present, to submit; where the former means 'to present to a superior, a petition' and the latter 'to hand to, to pass over'.

78. 貿易 *mao<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>*, trade; where the former means 'to trade, to barter' and the latter 'to change'.

79. 協定 *hsieh<sup>2</sup>-ting<sup>1</sup>*, agreement; where the former means 'agreement' and the latter 'to settle, to decide, to fix'.

80. 發育 *fa<sup>1</sup>-yü<sup>4</sup>*, to develop; where the former means 'to manifest, to issue' and the latter 'to give birth to, to nourish, to bring up'.

81. 覺 *chüeh<sup>2</sup>*, to perceive, to be conscious of, sense.

82. 紀律 *chi<sup>4</sup>-lü<sup>4</sup>*, discipline; where the former means 'to regulate' and the latter 'a law, a rule'.

83. 閱 *yüeh<sup>4</sup>*, to inspect.

84. 假 *chia<sup>4</sup>*, leave (of absence).

85. 本事 *pên<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>*, ability; where *pên<sup>3</sup>* means 'root' and *shih<sup>4</sup>* 'an affair'.

86. 牀 *ch'uang<sup>2</sup>*, a bed.

87. 醫病 *i<sup>1</sup>-ping<sup>4</sup>*, treatment (cure); where the former means 'to cure' and the latter 'disease'.

88. 外交關係 *wai<sup>4</sup>-chiao<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>-hsí<sup>4</sup>*, diplomatic relation; where *wai<sup>4</sup>* means 'outside, foreign', *chiao<sup>1</sup>* 'friendship', *kuan<sup>1</sup>* 'a frontier pass or gate' and *hsí<sup>4</sup>* 'to belong to, related, relation'.

89. 斷絕 *tuan<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>0</sup>* (or *tsüeh<sup>0</sup>*), to break off; where the former means 'to cut off, to sever' and the latter 'to break off'.

90. 恢復 *hui<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>0</sup>*, to restore; where *hui<sup>1</sup>* means 'to restore' and *fu<sup>4</sup>* 'to return, again.'

91. 西藏 *hsí<sup>1</sup>-tsang<sup>4</sup>*, Tibet.

92. 蘇俄 *su<sup>1</sup>-ngo<sup>2</sup>*, Soviet Russia.

93. 凡俗 *fan<sup>2</sup>-su<sup>2</sup>*, secular; where the former means 'all, common, general' and the latter 'common'.

### Exercise (with hints)

1. The king of Egypt loses the affection of the people = Egypt (ai<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>2</sup>) king (kuo<sup>2</sup>.wang<sup>2</sup>) already (i<sup>3</sup>.ching<sup>1</sup>) lose (shih<sup>1</sup>) people ( 民 min<sup>2</sup>) heart ( 心 xin<sup>1</sup>) hsin<sup>1</sup>).
2. He also loses reputation = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) lose (shih<sup>1</sup>) go (ch'u<sup>4</sup>) reputation (ming<sup>2</sup>.yü<sup>4</sup>).
3. The queen of England is very popular = England (ying<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>) queen (wang<sup>2</sup>.hou<sup>4</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) popular (tē<sup>2</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>.hsin<sup>1</sup>).
4. The area of the kingdom is small = kingdom (wang<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>) area (ti<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>0</sup>) is small (hsiao<sup>3</sup>).
5. The area of the empire is vast = empire (ti<sup>4</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>) area (ti<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>0</sup>) is vast (kuang<sup>3</sup>.ta<sup>4</sup>).
6. The emperor would neither make a speech nor make an answer = emperor (huang<sup>2</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) make a speech (yen<sup>3</sup> shuo<sup>1</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) make an answer (hui<sup>2</sup> hua<sup>4</sup>).
7. Even if the empress do not go, it does not matter = empress (huang<sup>2</sup>.hou<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) urgent (chin<sup>3</sup>.yao<sup>4</sup> or yao<sup>4</sup>.chin<sup>3</sup>).
8. The President of the Indian Republic treats everybody with cordiality = Indian Republic (yin<sup>4</sup>.tu<sup>0</sup> kung<sup>4</sup>.ho<sup>2</sup>. kuo<sup>2</sup>) president (ta<sup>4</sup>.tsung<sup>2</sup>.t'ung<sup>3</sup> or tsung<sup>3</sup>.ts'ai<sup>2</sup>) treat (tai<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) cordial (ch'in<sup>1</sup>.jē<sup>4</sup>).
9. The Vice-President of the Indian Republic will hoist the national flag to-morrow = Indian Republic vice-president (fu<sup>4</sup>.tsung<sup>2</sup>.t'ung<sup>3</sup>) to-morrow (ming<sup>2</sup>.t'ien<sup>0</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) hoist (shēng<sup>1</sup>) national flag (kuo<sup>2</sup>.ch'i<sup>2</sup>).
10. The ministers of the Central Government draw fat salaries = central government (chung<sup>1</sup>.yang<sup>1</sup>.chēng<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>3</sup>) minister (pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>) draw (ling<sup>3</sup>) fat (hou<sup>4</sup>) one (ti<sup>0</sup>) salary (hsin<sup>1</sup>.fēng<sup>4</sup>).
11. The ministers of the Provincial Government also draw allowances = provincial government (shēng<sup>3</sup>.chēng<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>3</sup>) minister (pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) draw (ling<sup>3</sup>) allowance (chin<sup>1</sup>.t'ieh<sup>1</sup>).
12. The corrupt government causes the sufferings of the masses = corrupt (fu<sup>3</sup>.pai<sup>4</sup>) government (chēng<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>3</sup>) cause (chiao<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) suffering (t'ung<sup>4</sup>.k'u<sup>3</sup>).
13. The Education Minister will preside over and the Prime Minister will inaugurate the conference = education minister (chiao<sup>1</sup>.yü<sup>0</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) preside (chu<sup>3</sup>.ch'ih<sup>2</sup>) and (érh<sup>2</sup>) prime minister (shou<sup>3</sup>.hsiang<sup>4</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) inaugurate (k'ai<sup>1</sup>.mu<sup>4</sup>) ceremony (tien<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>).
14. Russia and China will not participate in the conference = Russia (o<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) China (chung<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>) all (tou<sup>1</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) participate (ts'an<sup>1</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>) conference (hui<sup>4</sup>.i<sup>4</sup> or t'an<sup>2</sup>.p'an<sup>4</sup>).
15. The Home Minister came from the capital = home minister (nei<sup>4</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) capital (shou<sup>3</sup>.tu<sup>1</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) one (ti<sup>0</sup>).

16. According to the opinion of the Food Minister there is no famine = According to (chao<sup>4</sup>) food minister (liang<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>) opinion (i<sup>4</sup>.chien<sup>0</sup>) that (na<sup>4</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) famine (chi<sup>1</sup>.chin<sup>4</sup>). [na<sup>4</sup> mei<sup>2</sup>, there not]
17. But according to my viewpoint he is not right = but (k'o<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>) according to (chao<sup>4</sup>) I (wo<sup>3</sup>) viewpoint (k'an<sup>4</sup>.lai<sup>0</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) right (tui<sup>4</sup>).
18. He is wrong = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>), wrong (ts'o<sup>4</sup>) (liao<sup>0</sup>).
19. There are cases of death from starvation = have (yu<sup>3</sup>) death from starvation (ngo<sup>4</sup>.szü<sup>3</sup>) case (ch'ing<sup>2</sup>.hsing<sup>0</sup>).
20. The ambassador presents credentials = ambassador (ta<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>3</sup>) present (ch'êng<sup>2</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>) credentials (kuo<sup>2</sup>.shu<sup>1</sup>).
21. Where is the American embassy ? = America (mei<sup>3</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>) embassy (ta<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>.kuan<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) where (na<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) ?
22. I want to see the consul-general = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) consul-general (tsung<sup>2</sup>.ling<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>).
23. Is the vice-consul in ? = vice-consul (fu<sup>4</sup>.ling<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) home (chia<sup>1</sup>) ma<sup>3</sup> (interrogative sign) ?
24. The chargé d'affaires signed the trade agreement = chargé d'affaires (shu<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.kung<sup>1</sup>.shih<sup>3</sup>) sign (簽 ch'ien<sup>1</sup>)-ed trade agreement (mao<sup>4</sup>.i<sup>4</sup> hsieh<sup>2</sup>.ting<sup>4</sup>).
25. There is a brigadier here = here (chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>0</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) brigadier (lü<sup>2</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>).
26. The national cadet corps helps to develop a sense of discipline = national cadet corps (kuo<sup>2</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>.lu<sup>4</sup>.chün<sup>1</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.shêng<sup>0</sup>.tui<sup>4</sup>) help (帮助 pang<sup>1</sup>.chu<sup>4</sup>) develop (fa<sup>1</sup>.yü<sup>4</sup>) discipline (chi<sup>4</sup>.lü<sup>4</sup>).
27. Is the Commander-in-chief on the hill there ? = commander-in-chief (tsung<sup>2</sup>.chih<sup>3</sup>.hui<sup>1</sup> or tsung<sup>3</sup>.szü<sup>1</sup>.ling<sup>4</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) on (tsai<sup>4</sup>) hill (shan<sup>1</sup>) top (shang<sup>4</sup>) ?
28. He will inspect troops = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) inspect (yüeh<sup>4</sup>) troop (ping<sup>1</sup>).
29. The Viceroy is on leave = viceroy (tsung<sup>3</sup>.tu<sup>1</sup>) invite (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) leave (chia<sup>4</sup>).
30. The aide-de-camp asks for leave = aide-de-camp (fu<sup>4</sup>.kuan<sup>1</sup>) tell (kao<sup>4</sup>) leave (chia<sup>4</sup>).
31. The mayor is a man of ability. He is on his sick bed. He is going abroad for treatment = mayor (shih<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) ability (pêñ<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>), he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) on (tsai<sup>4</sup>) sick (ping<sup>4</sup>) bed (ch'uang<sup>2</sup>) on (shang<sup>4</sup>), he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) for (wei<sup>4</sup>) treatment (i<sup>1</sup>.ping<sup>4</sup>) out (ch'u<sup>1</sup>) ocean (yang<sup>2</sup>).
32. Soviet Russia will break off diplomatic relations with Japan = Soviet Russia (su<sup>1</sup>.o<sup>2</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) with (kêñ<sup>1</sup>) Japan (jih<sup>4</sup>.pêñ<sup>3</sup>) break off (tuan<sup>4</sup>.chüeh<sup>0</sup>) diplomatic relation (wai<sup>4</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>.kuan<sup>1</sup>.hsí<sup>4</sup>).
33. Japan will restore diplomatic relations with Tibet = Japan (jih<sup>4</sup>.pêñ<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) with (kêñ<sup>1</sup>) Tibet (hsí<sup>1</sup>.tsang<sup>4</sup>) restore (hui<sup>1</sup>.fu<sup>0</sup>) diplomatic relation (wai<sup>4</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>.kuan<sup>1</sup>.hsí<sup>4</sup>).
34. India is a secular state = India (yin<sup>4</sup>.tu<sup>0</sup>) is one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) secular (fan<sup>2</sup>.su<sup>2</sup>) state (kuo<sup>2</sup>).

## THIRTY-FIFTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 國會 *kuo<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>*, parliament; where the former means 'a nation, a country' and the latter 'an association'.
2. ,, , 議員 *kuo<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>*, a member of the parliament; where *i<sup>4</sup>* means 'to discuss, to criticize' and *yüan<sup>2</sup>* 'an official'.
3. 立法院 *li<sup>4</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>*, legislative assembly; where *li<sup>4</sup>* means 'to set up, to draw up', *fa<sup>3</sup>* 'law' and *yüan<sup>4</sup>* 'a hall'.
4. 市區 *shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'ü<sup>1</sup>*, municipality; where *shih<sup>4</sup>* means 'a market' and *ch'ü<sup>1</sup>* 'a place, a district, an area'.
5. ,, 政府 *shih<sup>4</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>3</sup>*, municipal government; where *chêng<sup>4</sup>* means 'administration, government' and *fu<sup>3</sup>* 'a prefecture'.
6. 行,, *hsing<sup>2</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>* administration; where *hsing<sup>2</sup>* means 'to do'.
7. 議長 *i<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>*, speaker (of the parliament or assembly) or chairman (of the council); where *i<sup>4</sup>* means 'to discuss, to deliberate'.
8. 議決案 *i<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>*, a resolution (formal adoption by vote); where *chüeh<sup>2</sup>* means 'to decide'.
9. 議,, *i<sup>4</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>*, a bill, a motion (proposal); where the latter means 'a case at law, legal records'.
10. 法,, *fa<sup>3</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>* act (decision of legislative body);  
or,, *fa<sup>3</sup>-ling<sup>4</sup>* order, to command'.  
where *fa<sup>3</sup>* means 'law' and *ling<sup>4</sup>* 'an

11. 提 *t'i<sup>2</sup>*, to move or propose (a resolution).
12. 附議 *fu<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>*, to second or support (a resolution); where the former means 'to append' and the latter 'to discuss, to consult'.
13. 收回 *shou<sup>1</sup>-hui<sup>2</sup>*, to withdraw (a motion); where the former means 'to receive' and the latter 'to return'.
14. 預算表 *yü<sup>4</sup>-suan<sup>4</sup>-piao<sup>3</sup>*, budget; where *yü<sup>4</sup>* means 'beforehand, to prepare, to make ready', *suan<sup>4</sup>* 'to calculate' and *piao<sup>3</sup>* 'a chart, an index'.
15. 缺點 *ch'üeh<sup>1</sup>-tein<sup>3</sup>*, a defect, a flaw; where the former means 'deficiency, defective' and the latter 'a dot, a point'.
16. 益處 *i<sup>4</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup>*, profit; where *i<sup>4</sup>* means 'profit' and *ch'u<sup>1</sup>* 'condition'.
17. 損失 *sun<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>1</sup>*, loss, deficit; where the former means 'to spoil, to injure' and the latter 'to lose'.
18. 賬目 *chang<sup>4</sup>-mu<sup>0</sup>*, an account; where *chang<sup>4</sup>* means 'an account' and *mu<sup>1</sup>* 'an index, a list'.
19. 規矩 *kuei<sup>1</sup>-chü<sup>0</sup>*, discipline, rule; where both mean 'a custom, a law'.
20. 散 *san<sup>4</sup>*, to adjourn, to disperse.
21. 重 *chung<sup>4</sup>*, heavy, weighty.
22. 稅 *shui<sup>4</sup>*, tax.
23. 抽 *ch'ou<sup>1</sup>*, to levy.
24. 付 *fu<sup>4</sup>*, to pay.
25. 事情 *shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'ing<sup>0</sup>*, an affair, a business; where *shih<sup>4</sup>* means 'an affair' and *ch'ing<sup>2</sup>* 'a case, the facts of an affair'.
26. 守 *shou<sup>3</sup>*, to maintain.

27. 正 chêng<sup>4</sup>, upright, true.

28. 阿 a<sup>4</sup>, to flatter.

29. 縣知事 hsien<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>  
or  
,, 官 hsien<sup>4</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>

30. 辭職 tz'ü<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>1</sup>, to resign, resignation; where the former means 'to dismiss, to decline' and the latter 'office, official duty'.

31. 法官 fa<sup>3</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, a judge.

32. 判決 p'an<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>2</sup>, judgment, verdict.

33.陪審員 p'ei<sup>2</sup>-shêng<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, jury; where p'ei<sup>2</sup> means 'to accompany', shêng<sup>3</sup> 'to judge, to examine' and yüan<sup>2</sup> 'an official'.

34. 樣 yang<sup>4</sup>, way, manner, sample.

35. 公平 kung<sup>1</sup>-p'ing<sup>0</sup>, fair, just; where both kung<sup>1</sup> and p'ing<sup>0</sup> mean 'fair, just'.

36. 大理院 ta<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>, the supreme court; where ta<sup>4</sup> means 'great', li<sup>3</sup> 'reason, principle' and yüan<sup>4</sup> 'a hall'.

37. 秘書 mi<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>, secretary; where the former means 'secret' and the latter 'a book, to write, writing'.

38. ,, ,, 處 mi<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-ch'u<sup>4</sup>, secretariat; where ch'u<sup>4</sup> means 'an office, a department'.

39. 繼 ts'ai<sup>2</sup>, just, just now.

40. 書記 shu<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>4</sup>, a clerk; where the latter means 'to record, a sign, a mark'.

41. 速記員 su<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, a stenographer; where su<sup>4</sup> means 'quickly'.

42. 打字,, ta<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, a typist; where ta<sup>3</sup> means 'to strike, to beat' and tzü<sup>4</sup> 'a written character'.

43. ,, , 機 ta<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>, a typewriter; where chi<sup>1</sup> means 'a machine'.

44. 抄 ch'ao<sup>1</sup>, to copy.

45. 明白 ming<sup>2</sup>-pai<sup>0</sup>, to understand; where ming<sup>2</sup> means 'bright' and pai<sup>2</sup> 'white'.

46. 懂 tung<sup>3</sup>, to understand.

47. 管理人 kuan<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup> } superintendent; where kuan<sup>2</sup> means 'to govern, to control',  
or  
監督 chien<sup>1</sup>-tu<sup>1</sup> } li<sup>3</sup> 'to manage', chien<sup>1</sup> 'to inspect' and tu<sup>1</sup> 'to superintend, to oversee'.

48. 工廠 kung<sup>1</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, a factory; where the former means 'labour, work' and the latter 'a shed, a workshop or factory, a depot'.

49. 評判員 p'ing<sup>2</sup>-p'an<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, an umpire; where p'ing<sup>2</sup> means 'to criticize, to arrange'.

50. 商人 shang<sup>1</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup>, a merchant; where shang<sup>1</sup> means 'trade or commerce, a merchant'.

51. 學問 hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-wên<sup>4</sup>, learning, knowledge; where the former means 'to learn' and the latter 'to ask'.

52. 有學問 yu<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-wên<sup>4</sup>, learned.

53. 英雄 ying<sup>1</sup>-hsüung<sup>2</sup>, a hero; where both mean 'brave, heroic'.

54. 急 chi<sup>2</sup>, impatient, hurried.

55. 才能 ts'ai<sup>2</sup>-nêng<sup>2</sup>, ability; where both mean 'ability'.

### Exercise (with hints).

1. To-morrow is Sunday, the parliament shall not meet = to-morrow (ming<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Sunday (li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-jih<sup>4</sup>) parliament (kuo<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) open (k'ai<sup>1</sup>).
2. The parliament was adjourned = parliament (kuo<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>) adjourn (san<sup>4</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>).
3. This legislative assembly has no discipline = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) legislative assembly (li<sup>4</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) discipline (kuei<sup>1</sup>-chü<sup>0</sup>).
4. This member of the parliament can not withdraw the bill = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) member of the parliament (kuo<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) withdraw (shou<sup>1</sup>-hui<sup>2</sup>) bill, (i<sup>4</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>).
5. I shall move the resolution = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) shall (yao<sup>4</sup>) move (t'i<sup>2</sup>) resolution (i<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>).
6. He will second it = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) second (fu<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>).
7. This act has many flaws = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) act (fa<sup>3</sup>-an<sup>4</sup> or fa<sup>3</sup>-ling<sup>4</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) many (hsü<sup>3</sup>-to<sup>1</sup>) flaw (ch'üeh<sup>1</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>).
8. Budget is a profit and loss account = budget (yü<sup>4</sup>-suan<sup>4</sup>-piao<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) profit loss account (i<sup>4</sup> sun<sup>3</sup> chang<sup>4</sup>).
9. The municipal government levies heavy taxes = municipal government (shih<sup>4</sup>-chēng<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>3</sup>) levy (ch'ou<sup>1</sup>) heavy (chung<sup>4</sup>) tax (shui<sup>4</sup>).
10. People can not pay taxes = people (jēn<sup>2</sup>-min<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) pay (fu<sup>4</sup>) tax (shui<sup>4</sup>).
11. We can not but tell the speaker (of the parliament) of this affair = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (件 chien<sup>4</sup>) affair (shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'ing<sup>0</sup>) we (wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) tell (kao<sup>4</sup>-su<sup>0</sup>) speaker (i<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>).
12. Administration is neither good nor bad = administration (hsing<sup>2</sup>-chēng<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) bad (huai<sup>4</sup>).
13. The speaker (of the parliament) maintains fairness without favour = speaker (i<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) upright (chēng<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) flatter (a<sup>4</sup>).
14. The magistrate tendered his resignation on the ground of illness = magistrate (hsien<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup> or hsien<sup>4</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>) because (yin<sup>1</sup>) disease (ping<sup>4</sup>) resign (tz'ü<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>1</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>).
15. To tell the jury is the same as to tell the judge = tell (kao<sup>4</sup>-su<sup>0</sup>) jury (p'ei<sup>2</sup>-shēn<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>) harmony (ho<sup>2</sup>) tell (kao<sup>4</sup>-su<sup>0</sup>) judge (fa<sup>3</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>) is shih<sup>4</sup> one (i<sup>2</sup>) way (yang<sup>4</sup>).
16. The judgment is fair = judgment (p'an<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) fair (kung<sup>1</sup>-p'ing<sup>0</sup>).

17. India has the supreme court in Delhi = India (yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>0</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) Delhi (德里 tē<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) supreme court (ta<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.yūan<sup>4</sup>).

18. The secretary has sent word saying that he will come to see me day after to-morrow = secretary (mi<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) word (hsin<sup>4</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>), he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) day after to-morrow (hou<sup>4</sup> t'ien<sup>0</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) me (wo<sup>3</sup>).

19. I never saw the secretariat before ; I have only just seen it to-day = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) from (ts'ung<sup>2</sup>) before (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) past (kuo<sup>4</sup>) secretariat (mi<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>.ch'u<sup>4</sup>), to-day (chin<sup>1</sup> t'ien<sup>0</sup>) just (ts'ai<sup>2</sup>) see (chien<sup>4</sup>) reach (到) tao<sup>4</sup>).

20. The clerk has already been writing three hours and has not yet finished = clerk (shu<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>4</sup>) already (i<sup>3</sup>-ching<sup>0</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) three (san<sup>1</sup>) dot (tien<sup>3</sup>) bell (chung<sup>1</sup>).-s (ti<sup>0</sup>) work (kung<sup>1</sup>) assist (fu<sup>1</sup>) [kung<sup>1</sup>.fu<sup>0</sup>, time spent in doing anything ; time ; work], yet (hai<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) write (hsieh<sup>3</sup>) finished (wan<sup>2</sup>). [完 wan<sup>2</sup>, to finish,— added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of finishing or completing.]

21. He can not copy it in one day = one (i<sup>4</sup>) day (t'ien<sup>1</sup>).-s (ti<sup>0</sup>) time (kung<sup>1</sup>.fu<sup>0</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) copy (ch'ao<sup>1</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) rise (ch'i<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>0</sup>). [起 ch'i<sup>3</sup>, to rise, to raise up, is joined as an auxiliary to verbs indicating motion upwards, sometimes denotes progressive action, but is more frequently used simply to express the completion of the action. It is generally followed by lai<sup>2</sup>, to come.]

22. The typist understands, but the stenographer understands better = typist (ta<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>4</sup>.yūan<sup>2</sup>) understand (ming<sup>2</sup>.pai<sup>0</sup>) but (tan<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>) stenographer (su<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>4</sup>.yūan<sup>2</sup>) more (kēng<sup>4</sup>) understand (ming<sup>2</sup>.pai<sup>0</sup>).

23. Do you understand or not ? = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) understand (tung<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) understand (tung<sup>3</sup>) ?

24. This typewriter is much better than that one = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (架 chia<sup>4</sup>, classifier of framed things) typewriter (ta<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>1</sup>) compare (pi<sup>3</sup>) that (na<sup>4</sup>) piece (chia<sup>4</sup>) typewriter (ta<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>1</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) much (to<sup>1</sup>) 了 (liao<sup>0</sup> or lo<sup>0</sup>, a final particle).

25. I want to have a clear understanding with the Superintendent about this matter = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (chien<sup>4</sup>, classifier of various things) matter (shih<sup>4</sup>), I (wo<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) before (hsien<sup>1</sup>) harmony (ho<sup>2</sup>) superintendent (kuan<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup> or chien<sup>1</sup>.tu<sup>1</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) understand (ming<sup>2</sup>.pai<sup>0</sup>).

26. There are over twenty men in the factory = at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) factory (kung<sup>1</sup>.ch'ang<sup>3</sup>) in (li<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) two (ērh<sup>4</sup>) ten (shih<sup>2</sup>) many (to<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>).

27. The umpire did not understand your language = umpire (p'ing<sup>2</sup>.p'an<sup>4</sup>.yūan<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) understand (ming<sup>2</sup>.pai<sup>0</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) word (hua<sup>4</sup>).

28. This merchant has no learning = this (chê<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) merchant (shang<sup>1</sup>.jêñ<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) learning (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.wêñ<sup>4</sup>).
29. There is nothing here that concerns the learned = this (chê<sup>4</sup>) in (li<sup>0</sup>) [chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>0</sup>, here] not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) learned (yu<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.wêñ<sup>4</sup>) man (jêñ<sup>2</sup>).-s (ti<sup>0</sup>) affair (shih<sup>4</sup>.ch'ing<sup>0</sup>).
30. The hero came, sat for a while and then went off in a hurry = hero (ying<sup>1</sup>.hsiumg<sup>2</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) sit (tso<sup>4</sup>) ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) down (hsia<sup>0</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) hurried (chi<sup>2</sup>) hurried (chi<sup>2</sup>).ly (ti<sup>0</sup>) go (tsou<sup>3</sup>).-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>).
31. I cannot compare with him in ability = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) compare (pi<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) above (shang<sup>4</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) ability (ts'ai<sup>2</sup>.nêng<sup>2</sup>).



## THIRTY-SIXTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 嬰孩 ying<sup>1</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup> a baby ; where ying<sup>1</sup> means 'a baby',  
"or especially a girl", hai<sup>2</sup> 'a child'  
娃娃 wa<sup>2</sup>-wa<sup>0</sup> and wa<sup>2</sup> 'a baby'.

2. 孫子 sun<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, a grandson (son's son).

3. „ 女 sun<sup>1</sup>-nü<sup>3</sup>, a granddaughter (son's daughter).

4. 外孫子 wai<sup>4</sup>-sun<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, a grandson (daughter's son) ;  
where wai<sup>4</sup> means 'outside, foreign'.

5. „ „ 女 wai<sup>4</sup>-sun<sup>1</sup>-nü<sup>3</sup>, a granddaughter (daughter's  
daughter).

6. „ 甥 wai<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>, a nephew (sister's son) ; where  
shêng<sup>1</sup> means 'a child of the sister'.

7. „ „ 女 wai<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>-nü<sup>3</sup>, niece (sister's daughter).

8. 姪子 chih<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, a nephew (brother's son).

9. „ 女 chih<sup>2</sup>-nü<sup>0</sup>, a niece (brother's daughter).

10. 沒有人 mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>0</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup>, nobody.

11. 誰 shui<sup>2</sup>, anybody, anyone, who, which.

12. 沒有甚麼 mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>-shên<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>, nothing.

13. 甚麼 shên<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>, anything, everything.

14. „ „ 地方 shên<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>0</sup>, anywhere.

15. 沒有 „ „ mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>0</sup>, nowhere.

16. 火把 huo<sup>3</sup>-pa<sup>0</sup>, a torch ; where huo<sup>3</sup> means 'fire' and  
pa<sup>3</sup> 'to take'.

17. 爐子 lu<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, a stove.

18. 下落 hsia<sup>4</sup>-lo<sup>4</sup>, whereabouts ; where the former means  
'below' and the latter 'a dwelling place'.

19. 可以 k'o<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup>, may (indicating possibility).
20. 鮮 hsien<sup>1</sup>, fresh.
21. 管 kuan<sup>3</sup>, to look after.
22. 不誠實 pu<sup>4</sup>-ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, dishonest; where ch'êng<sup>2</sup> means 'honest' and shih<sup>0</sup> 'sincere, true'. [ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, honest].
23. 賄 hui<sup>4</sup>, bribe, to bribe.
24. 受 shou<sup>4</sup>, to receive.
25. 機會 chi<sup>1</sup>-hui<sup>0</sup>, opportunity; where the former means 'opportunity' and the latter 'to meet'.
26. 當 tang<sup>1</sup>, when.
27. 抓 chua<sup>1</sup>, to seize.
28. 俊子 sha<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, a fool.
29. 聰明 ts'ung<sup>1</sup>-ming<sup>0</sup>, intelligent; where ts'ung<sup>1</sup> means 'clever' and ming<sup>0</sup> 'bright, intelligent'.
30. 遲 ch'ih<sup>2</sup>, late, to delay.
31. 熟 shu<sup>2</sup>, ripe, familiar, well-acquainted.
32. 閏 jun<sup>4</sup>, extra, intercalary.
33. 餉 shih<sup>2</sup>, an eclipse, to eat up slowly.
34. 過於時髦 kuo<sup>4</sup>-yü<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-mao<sup>2</sup>, ultramodern; where kuo<sup>4</sup> means 'to pass, beyond the ordinary or popular limit', yü<sup>2</sup> 'in, at, on', shih<sup>2</sup> 'time' and mao<sup>2</sup> 'eminent, excellent'.
35. 腮脂 yen<sup>1</sup>-chih<sup>0</sup>, rouge; where the former means 'rouge, cosmetic' and the latter 'cosmetic'.
36. 粉 fên<sup>3</sup>, powder.
37. 點口 tien<sup>3</sup>, to apply (rouge).
38. 白 pai<sup>2</sup>, white.

39. 厥 yen<sup>4</sup>, to dislike.

40. 康健 k'ang<sup>1</sup>-chien<sup>4</sup>, healthy; where the former means 'health, vigour' and the latter 'strong, robust'. [chien<sup>4</sup>-k'ang<sup>1</sup>, health].

41. 祝 chu<sup>4</sup>, to wish (a good luck), to bless.

42. 成功 ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>, to achieve success, to succeed; where the former means 'to succeed' and the latter 'merit, achievement'.

43. 擦 ts'a<sup>1</sup>, to rub.

44. 臉 lien<sup>3</sup>, face.

#### Exercise (with hints).

1. The baby is healthy = baby (ying<sup>1</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup> or wa<sup>2</sup>-wa<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) healthy (k'ang<sup>1</sup>-chien<sup>4</sup>).
2. I do not know when his grandson (son's son) will come back = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know (chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>0</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) grandson (sun<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) when (shêñ<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup> << = what >>-shih<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>0</sup> << time >>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) return (hui<sup>2</sup>) come (lai<sup>0</sup>).
3. When will your grandson (daughter's son) go home? = your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) grandson (wai<sup>4</sup>-sun<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) when (shêñ<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>0</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) return (hui<sup>2</sup>) home (chia<sup>1</sup>)?
4. When I shall see my granddaughter (son's daughter), I shall tell her = when (tang<sup>1</sup>) I (wo<sup>3</sup>) see (k'an<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>0</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) granddaughter (sun<sup>1</sup>-nû<sup>3</sup>) of (ti<sup>0</sup>) time (shih<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>0</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) tell (kao<sup>4</sup>-su<sup>0</sup>) her (t'a<sup>0</sup>).
5. He went out when his granddaughter (daughter's daughter) came in = when (tang<sup>1</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) granddaughter (wai<sup>4</sup>-sun<sup>1</sup>-nû<sup>3</sup>) inside (進 chin<sup>4</sup>, to enter) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) of (ti<sup>0</sup>) time (shih<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>0</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) out (ch'u<sup>1</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>0</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>).
6. His nephew (brother's son) does not know his whereabouts = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) nephew (chih<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know (chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>0</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) whereabouts (hsia<sup>4</sup>-lo<sup>4</sup>).
7. You may tell your nephew (sister's son) to come on Thursday = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) may (k'o<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup>) tell (kao<sup>4</sup>-su<sup>0</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) nephew (wai<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>) request (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) him (t'a<sup>0</sup>) or call (chiao<sup>4</sup>) him (t'a<sup>1</sup>) Thursday (li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-ssü<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).

8. Your niece (brother's daughter) and my niece (sister's daughter) are studying in the class-room = your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) niece (chih<sup>2</sup>.nū<sup>0</sup>) and (ho<sup>2</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) niece (wai<sup>4</sup>.shēng<sup>0</sup>.nū<sup>3</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) school-room (shu<sup>1</sup>.fang<sup>2</sup>, lit. book-room) inside (li<sup>3</sup>) read (k'an<sup>4</sup>) book (shu<sup>1</sup>). [To be in tsai<sup>4</sup>. . . . li<sup>3</sup>].
9. Nobody sees them = nobody (mei<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>0</sup>.jēn<sup>2</sup>) see (k'an<sup>4</sup>.chien<sup>0</sup>) them (t'a<sup>0</sup>.mēn<sup>0</sup>).
10. Anyone has a torch and a stove = anyone (shui<sup>2</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) torch (huo<sup>3</sup>.pa<sup>0</sup>) and (k'ēn<sup>1</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) stove (lu<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>).
11. But nothing is mine = but (tan<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>) nothing (mei<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>.shēn<sup>2</sup>.ma<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) mine (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>).
12. Everything is all right = everything (shēn<sup>2</sup>.ma<sup>0</sup>) matter (shih<sup>4</sup>) all (tou<sup>1</sup>) right (hao<sup>3</sup>) liao<sup>0</sup>.
13. This man can go anywhere = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) anywhere (shēn<sup>2</sup>.ma<sup>0</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>0</sup>) all (tou<sup>1</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
14. He is going nowhere = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) nowhere (mei<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>0</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
15. We want fresh milk = we (wo<sup>3</sup>.mēn<sup>0</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) new (hsin<sup>1</sup>) fresh (hsien<sup>1</sup>) of (ti<sup>0</sup>) milk (nui<sup>2</sup>.nai<sup>3</sup>).
16. That is my affair, you need not look after it = that (na<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) affair (shih<sup>4</sup>), you (ni<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) use (yung<sup>4</sup>) look after (kuan<sup>3</sup>).
17. He is a dishonest man ; he takes bribes = he (t'a) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) dishonest (pu<sup>4</sup>.ch'ēng<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>) of (ti<sup>0</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>), he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) take (shou<sup>4</sup>) bribe (hui<sup>4</sup>).
18. An intelligent man seizes opportunity, but a fool misses it = one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) intelligent (ts'ung<sup>1</sup>.ming<sup>0</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) seize (chua<sup>1</sup>) opportunity (chi<sup>1</sup>.hui<sup>0</sup>), but (k'o<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) fool (sha<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>).
19. It is too late = is (shih<sup>4</sup>) too (t'ai<sup>4</sup>) late (ch'ih<sup>2</sup>).
20. Your face seems familiar = your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) face (lien<sup>3</sup>) familiar (shu<sup>2</sup>).
21. This year is a leap year = this year (chin<sup>1</sup> nien<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) leap year (jun<sup>4</sup> nien<sup>2</sup>).
22. This year has both lunar and solar eclipses = this year (chin<sup>1</sup> nien<sup>0</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) both (月 yu<sup>4</sup>) lunar eclipse (yüeh<sup>4</sup> shih<sup>2</sup>) and (kēn<sup>1</sup>) solar eclipse (jih<sup>4</sup> shih<sup>2</sup>).
23. She is ultramodern ; she always uses rouge = she (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) ultramodern (kuo<sup>4</sup>.yū<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>.mao<sup>2</sup>) ; she (t'a<sup>1</sup>) always (ch'ang<sup>2</sup> ch'ang<sup>2</sup>) apply (tien<sup>3</sup>) rouge (yen<sup>1</sup>.chih<sup>0</sup>).

24. She also powders her face = she (t'a<sup>1</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) rub (ts'a<sup>1</sup>) powder (fēn<sup>2</sup>) on (tsai<sup>4</sup>) her (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) face (lien<sup>3</sup>).
25. Powder is not disliked for being too white = powder (fēn<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) dislike (yen<sup>4</sup>) too (t'ai<sup>4</sup>) white (pai<sup>2</sup>).
26. I wish you success = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) wish (chu<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>0</sup>) succeed (ch'ēng<sup>2</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>).
27. I wish you a happy new year = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) wish (chu<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>0</sup>) new (hsin<sup>1</sup>) year (nien<sup>2</sup>) happy (k'uai<sup>4</sup>-lo<sup>0</sup>).

## THIRTY-SEVENTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 聲音 shêng<sup>1</sup>-yin<sup>0</sup>, voice; where the former means 'a voice' and the latter 'a sound'.
2. 低 ti<sup>1</sup>, low.
3. 獎品 chiang<sup>2</sup>-p'in<sup>3</sup>, prize; where the former means 'a prize or reward' and the latter 'a thing, a kind, a class'.
4. 茅房 mao<sup>2</sup>-fang<sup>0</sup>, a lavatory; where the former means 'reeds, rushes, grasses, poor' and the latter 'a room, a house'.
5. 脏 tsang<sup>1</sup>, dirty, unclean.
6. 封 fêng<sup>1</sup>, a classifier of a package, letter, etc., indicated by 'piece'.
7. 可是 k'o<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, but.
8. 禁止 chin<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>, to prohibit, to forbid; where chin<sup>4</sup> means 'to prohibit, prohibition, to restrict, restriction' and chih<sup>3</sup> 'to stop, to desist'.
9. 抽 ch'ou<sup>1</sup>, to suck up, to smoke (tobacco).
10. 句子 chü<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, sentence. [A sentence—i<sup>2</sup> ko<sup>4</sup> chü<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>].
11. 紀律 chi<sup>4</sup>-lü<sup>4</sup>, discipline; where the former means 'a record' and the latter 'a rule, a law'.
12. 寬 k'u'an<sup>1</sup>, wide, liberal, lenient.
13. 應當 ying<sup>1</sup>-tang<sup>1</sup>, should, ought to; where both mean 'should, ought to'.

14. 託辭 t'o<sup>1</sup>-tz'u<sup>4</sup>, an excuse; where the former means 'to entrust, to depute, to request, to ask' and the latter 'to make excuses, to resign'.

15. 容 jung<sup>2</sup>, to admit, to allow.

16. 理由 li<sup>3</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>, reason; where the former means 'reason' and the latter 'cause'.

17. 胃口 wei<sup>4</sup>-k'ou<sup>0</sup>, appetite; where the former means 'the stomach' and the latter 'the mouth, an opening'.

18. 害羞 hai<sup>4</sup>-hsiu<sup>1</sup> (siu<sup>1</sup>) shy; where the former means 'to injure, to destroy' and the latter 'to feel ashamed, to blush, shame'.

19. 女孩 nü<sup>3</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup>, a girl.

20. 窗戶 ch'uang<sup>1</sup>-hu<sup>0</sup>, a window; where the former means 'a window' and latter 'a door'.

21. 賊 tsei<sup>2</sup>, a thief.

22. 強盜 ch'iang<sup>2</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>, a robber; where the former means 'strong, violent' and the latter 'to rob, to steal'.

23. 手扒手 p'a<sup>2</sup>-shou<sup>0</sup>, a pickpocket; where the former means 'to scratch' and the latter 'the hand'.

24. 偷 t'ou<sup>1</sup>, to steal.

25. 鋼筆 kang<sup>1</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>, a fountain pen; lit, a steel-pen.

26. 殺 sha<sup>1</sup>, to kill.

27. 不中用 pu<sup>4</sup>-chung<sup>1</sup>-yung<sup>4</sup>-(ti<sup>0</sup>), worthless (person).

28. 不重要 pu<sup>2</sup>-chung<sup>4</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>, negligible.

29. 值得 chih<sup>2</sup>.tē<sup>0</sup>, worth; where the former means 'value, price' and the latter 'to obtain, to gain'.

30. 同志 t'ung<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>4</sup>, a comrade, a friend; where the former means 'together, identical' and the latter 'purpose, determination, will'.

31. 送 sung<sup>4</sup>, to give to, to send, to hand over.

32. 張 chang<sup>1</sup>, a classifier of nouns, such as, paper, beds, tables, etc., indicated by 'one'.

33. 漫畫 man<sup>4</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, a cartoon; where the former means 'spreading, diffused' and the latter 'a picture, a painting'.

34. 謹防 chin<sup>3</sup>-fang<sup>2</sup>, to beware of, to guard against, to be heedful; where the former means 'to be watchful, cautious' and the latter 'to guard against'.

35. 所 suo<sup>3</sup> (suo<sup>3</sup>), that which, what.

36. 實話 shih<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, truth; where the former means 'true, real' and the latter 'words, talk'.

37. 謊 „ huang<sup>3</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, a lie, falsehood; where the former means 'to lie, lie, falsehood'.

38. 罵 ma<sup>4</sup>, to scold, to abuse, to curse.

39. 準備 chun<sup>3</sup>-pei<sup>4</sup>, ready; where the former means 'to regulate, to adjust, exact, true' and the latter 'ready, to prepare'.

40. 白天 pai<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, daytime.

41. 夜 yeh<sup>4</sup>, night.

42. 也許 yeh<sup>2</sup>-hsü<sup>3</sup>, perhaps.

43. 嗅 hsiu<sup>4</sup>, to smell.

44. 認 jēn<sup>4</sup>, to confess, to acknowledge, to recognize, to know.

45. 債 chai<sup>4</sup>, a debt.

46. 而且 êrh<sup>2</sup>-ch'ieh<sup>3</sup>, too (moreover); where the former means 'and, and yet, also' and the latter 'moreover'.

47. 厚 hou<sup>4</sup>, thick.
48. 寧 ning<sup>2</sup>, to prefer, rather, it is better.
49. 辱 ju<sup>4</sup>, disgrace, to disgrace.
50. 敢 kan<sup>3</sup>, to dare, to venture.

**Exercise (with hints).**

1. The boy speaks well = boy (hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) get (tê<sup>0</sup>) well (hao<sup>3</sup>).
2. The girl speaks in a low voice = girl (nü<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) low (ti<sup>1</sup>) voice (shêng<sup>1</sup>-yin<sup>0</sup>).
3. Speak slowly = speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) get (tê<sup>0</sup>) slow (man<sup>4</sup>).
4. His son will win the prize = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) son (êrh<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) get (tê<sup>2</sup>) prize (chiang<sup>2</sup>-p'in<sup>3</sup>).
5. The lavatory is dirty = lavatory (mao<sup>2</sup>-fang<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) dirty (tsang<sup>1</sup>).
6. I am sending a letter through him = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) request (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) him (t'a<sup>0</sup>) send (chi<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>4</sup>) piece (fêng<sup>1</sup>) letter (hsin<sup>4</sup>).
7. Smoking is prohibited (no smoking) = prohibit (chin<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>) smoke (ch'ou<sup>1</sup>) tobacco (yen<sup>1</sup>).
8. Every sentence is intelligible = sentence (chü<sup>4</sup>) sentence (chü<sup>4</sup>) understand (ming<sup>2</sup>-pai<sup>0</sup>).
9. Discipline is very lax = discipline (chi<sup>4</sup>-lü<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) very (hêng<sup>3</sup>) wide (k'uan<sup>1</sup>).
10. Public duty admits of no excuse = public (kung<sup>1</sup>) matter (shih<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) admit (jung<sup>2</sup>) excuse (t'o<sup>1</sup>-tz'u<sup>4</sup>).
11. I do not know the reason = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know (chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>0</sup>) reason (li<sup>3</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>).
12. I have no appetite = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) appetite (wei<sup>4</sup>-k'ou<sup>0</sup>).
13. She is very shy = she (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) very (hêng<sup>3</sup>) shy (hai<sup>4</sup>-hsiu<sup>1</sup>).
14. The girl shuts the window = girl (nü<sup>3</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup>) shut (關 [kuan<sup>1</sup>]) window (ch'uang<sup>1</sup>-hu<sup>0</sup>).
15. Thieves do not steal things when the moon shines forth = thief (tsei<sup>2</sup>) in (tsai<sup>4</sup>) moon (yüeh<sup>4</sup>) night (yeh<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) steal (t'ou<sup>1</sup>) thing (tung<sup>1</sup>-hsu<sup>1</sup>).
16. The robber killed his father = robber (ch'iang<sup>2</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>) kill (sha<sup>1</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) father (fu<sup>4</sup>-ch'in<sup>0</sup>).

17. A pickpocket stole away my two fountain pens = one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) pickpocket (p'a<sup>2</sup>-shou<sup>0</sup>) steal (t'ou<sup>1</sup>) walk (tsou<sup>3</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) two (liang<sup>3</sup>) piece (chih<sup>1</sup>) steel pen (kang<sup>1</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>).
18. Beware of pickpockets = beware (chin<sup>3</sup>-fang<sup>2</sup>) pickpocket (p'a<sup>2</sup>-shou<sup>0</sup>).
19. He is a worthless man; he always talks well, but never does well = he (t'a) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) worthless (pu<sup>4</sup>-chung<sup>1</sup>-yung<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>); he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) only (kuang<sup>1</sup>) talk (shuo<sup>1</sup>) but (k'o<sup>3</sup> shih<sup>0</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) do (tso<sup>4</sup>) well (hao<sup>3</sup>).
20. How much is this worth? = this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) worth (chih<sup>2</sup>-tē<sup>0</sup>) much (to<sup>1</sup>) few (shao<sup>3</sup>) money (ch'iēn<sup>2</sup>).
21. That is negligible = that (na<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) negligible (pu<sup>2</sup>-chung<sup>4</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>).
22. I have a comrade who made me a present of two cartoons = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) comrade (t'ung<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>4</sup>) give (sung<sup>4</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) two (liang<sup>3</sup>) piece (chang<sup>1</sup>) cartoon (man<sup>4</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>) give (kei<sup>3</sup>) me (wo<sup>0</sup>). [sung<sup>4</sup> kei<sup>3</sup>, to present to, to make a gift to].
23. Everything that I say is true and everything that he says is false = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) that which (so<sup>3</sup> or suo<sup>3</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>)-ing (ti<sup>0</sup>) all (tou<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) truth (shih<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) that which (so<sup>3</sup> or suo<sup>3</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>)-ing (ti<sup>0</sup>) all (tou<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) lie (huang<sup>3</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>).
24. Never tell a lie = not (pu<sup>4</sup>) tell (shuo<sup>1</sup>) lie (huang<sup>3</sup>).
25. He is scolding me without reason = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) reason (li<sup>3</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>) scold (ma<sup>4</sup>) me (wo<sup>0</sup>).
26. He is ready to go = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) ready (chun<sup>3</sup>-pei<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
27. Your younger brother says he may go to-morrow = your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) younger brother (ti<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) to-morrow (ming<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>) perhaps (yeh<sup>2</sup>-hsū<sup>3</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
28. If he go, I too may go = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) if (chia<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>3</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>) I (wo<sup>3</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) may (k'o<sup>3</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>).
29. You should help this man = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) should (ying<sup>1</sup>-tang<sup>1</sup>) help (pang<sup>1</sup>-tso<sup>4</sup>) this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>).
30. It is very hot in the daytime = daytime (pai<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) hot (jē<sup>4</sup>).
31. At night it is very cold = night (yeh<sup>4</sup>) in (li<sup>3</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) cold (lēng<sup>3</sup>).
32. He wants you badly = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) really (shih<sup>2</sup>-tsai<sup>4</sup> = real-at) think (hsiang<sup>3</sup>) you (ni<sup>0</sup>).
33. I want a tea cup = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) tea (ch'a<sup>2</sup>) cup (pei<sup>1</sup>).
34. He wants a cup of tea = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>4</sup>) cup (pei<sup>1</sup>) tea (ch'a<sup>2</sup>).

35. Are your parents still living ? = your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) parents (fu<sup>4</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>) yet (hai<sup>2</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) ma<sup>0</sup> (sign of interrogative) ?
36. They are still living = yet (hai<sup>2</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>).
37. I am smelling the flower = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) smell (hsiu<sup>4</sup>) flower (hua<sup>1</sup>).
38. The boy confessed his fault = boy (hsiao<sup>3</sup>.hai<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>) confess (jēn<sup>4</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) fault (ts'o<sup>4</sup>).
39. He acknowledged his debt = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) acknowledge (jēn<sup>4</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) debt (chai<sup>4</sup>).
40. The book is very big and very thick too = book (shu<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) big (ta<sup>4</sup>) moreover (ērh<sup>2</sup>.ch'ieh<sup>3</sup>) very (hēn<sup>3</sup>) thick (hou<sup>4</sup>).
41. She prefers death to disgrace = she (t'a<sup>1</sup>) prefer (ning<sup>2</sup>) death (死 szü<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) disgrace (ju<sup>4</sup>).
42. He will rather die than go = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) prefer (ning<sup>2</sup>) death (szü<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).
43. You dare to come = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) dare (kan<sup>3</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).

## THIRTY-EIGHTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

## VOCABULARY

1. 協 會 hsieh<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>, society; where the former means 'united, agreement, mutual help' and the latter 'a society'.
2. 花 or 費 hua<sup>1</sup> or fei<sup>4</sup>, to spend.
3. 奢 侈 shê<sup>1</sup>-ch'ih<sup>0</sup>, lavish, extravagant; where both shê<sup>1</sup> and ch'ih<sup>0</sup> mean 'extravagant, wasteful'.
4. 記 得 chi<sup>4</sup>-tê<sup>0</sup>, to remember; where chi<sup>4</sup> means 'to remember, to record, a sign' and tê<sup>0</sup> 'to get'.
5. 知 識 chih<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, knowledge.
6. 介 紹 chieh<sup>4</sup>-shao<sup>4</sup>, to introduce, introduction, to recommend, recommendation; where the former means 'to lie between' and the latter 'to connect, to join'.
7. 序 or 序 言 hsü<sup>4</sup> or hsü<sup>4</sup>-yen<sup>2</sup>, preface, introduction; where hsü<sup>4</sup> means 'preface'.
8. 經 驗 ching<sup>1</sup>-yen<sup>4</sup>, experience; where the former means 'to experience' and the latter 'to examine, to verify'.
9. 注意 chu<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>, attention; where chu<sup>4</sup> means 'to fix the mind on' and ti<sup>0</sup> 'an idea, an opinion'.
10. 獨 獨 tan<sup>1</sup>-tu<sup>2</sup>, alone; where both mean 'alone, single'.
11. 忠 告 chung<sup>1</sup>-kao<sup>4</sup>, advice; where the former means 'loyal, faithful, honest' and the latter 'to tell'.
12. 差 不 多 ch'a<sup>4</sup>-pu<sup>0</sup>-to<sup>1</sup>, almost; where ch'a<sup>4</sup> means 'to differ, discrepancy'.

13. 請求 ch'ing<sup>3</sup> (ts'ing<sup>3</sup>)-ch'iu,<sup>2</sup> an application ; where the former means 'to request, please' and the latter 'to beg, to pray, to implore'.

14. 考慮 k'ao<sup>3</sup>-lü<sup>4</sup>, to consider, consideration ; where the former means 'to examine, to test' and the latter 'anxiety, to be anxious, to plan'.

15. 繼續 chi<sup>4</sup>-hsü<sup>4</sup>(sü<sup>4</sup>), to continue ; where the former means 'to continue' and the latter 'to connect, continuous'.

16. 此 tz'ü<sup>3</sup>, this.

17. 異 i<sup>4</sup>, to differ, different, strange.

18. 供給 kung<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>0</sup>, supply ; where kung<sup>1</sup> means 'to supply, supply' and chi<sup>3</sup> 'to give'.

19. 要求 yao<sup>1</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, demand, to demand ; where the former means 'to demand, to seek for, to make an agreement'.

20. 應 ying<sup>1</sup>, to comply with, to fulfil.

21. 抄本 ch'ao<sup>1</sup>-pêñ<sup>0</sup>, a copy ; where ch'ao<sup>1</sup> means 'to copy'.

22. 附上 fu<sup>4</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>, to enclose.

23. 原因 yüan<sup>2</sup>-yin<sup>1</sup>, a cause ; where both mean 'a cause'.

24. 普通 p'u<sup>3</sup>-t'ung<sup>1</sup>, common ; where both mean 'universal, general'.

25. 常識 ch'ang<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, common sense ; where ch'ang<sup>2</sup> means 'common' and shih<sup>4</sup> 'to know, to recognise'.

26. 牌 p'ai<sup>2</sup>, a card.

27. 舒服 shu<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>2</sup>, comfortable ; where the former means 'comfortable' and the latter 'to serve, to submit, to be willing'.

28. 小心 hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hsin<sup>1</sup>, care ; and hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hsin<sup>0</sup>, careful.

29. 國歌 kuo<sup>2</sup>-ko<sup>1</sup>, national anthem; where the former means 'a nation' and the latter 'a song, to sing'.

30. .. 語 kuo<sup>2</sup>-yü<sup>3</sup>, national language; where the latter means 'language'.

31. 成 ch'êng<sup>2</sup>, percentage, per cent.

32. 提醒 t'i<sup>2</sup>-hsing<sup>3</sup>, to remind; where the former means 'to raise, to pick up, to mention' and the latter 'to wake up, to be aroused'.

33. 一同 i<sup>1</sup>-t'ung<sup>2</sup>, together.

34. 乘 ch'êng<sup>2</sup>, to multiply.

35. 除 ch'u<sup>2</sup>, to divide.

36. 饒 jao<sup>2</sup>, to spare, to forgive.

37. 名譽學位 ming<sup>2</sup>-yü<sup>4</sup> hsüeh<sup>2</sup> wei<sup>4</sup>, honorary degree (academic); where ming<sup>2</sup> means 'a name, fame', yü<sup>4</sup> 'fame' [ming<sup>2</sup>-yü<sup>4</sup>, honorary], hsüeh<sup>2</sup> 'to learn' and wei<sup>4</sup> 'a degree'.

38. 虛 hsü<sup>1</sup>, false, unreal.

39. 授 shou<sup>4</sup>, to confer.

40. 絶 chüeh<sup>2</sup>, to give up, to abandon.

41. 所有 so<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>, all.

42. 騞子 p'ien<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, a swindler, a cheater; where the former means 'to swindle, to cheat'.

43. 上當 shang<sup>4</sup> tang<sup>4</sup>, to be cheated; where tang<sup>4</sup> means 'to treat, to pawn'.

44. 爭論 chêng<sup>1</sup>-lun<sup>4</sup>, to argue; where the former means 'to wrangle, to contend' and the latter 'to argue'.

45. 同窗 t'ung<sup>2</sup>-ch'uang<sup>1</sup>, a school-mate; where the former means 'with, together' and the latter 'a window'.



46. 親戚 ch'in<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>0</sup>, a relative; where both ch'in<sup>1</sup> and ch'i<sup>0</sup> mean 'a relative'.

47. 馬上 ma<sup>3</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>, at once, without delay; where the former means 'horse' and the latter 'on'.

48. 倖運 hsing<sup>4</sup>-yün<sup>4</sup> } luck; where hsing<sup>4</sup> means 'lucky',  
 'or' } yün<sup>4</sup> 'luck' and ch'i<sup>0</sup> 'air, breath'.  
 運氣 yün<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>0</sup>

49. 棉花 mien<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>0</sup>, cotton; where mien<sup>2</sup> means 'cotton' and hua<sup>0</sup> 'a flower'.

### Exercise (with hints).

1. Man cannot live without society = man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) society (hsieh<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) live (住 chū<sup>4</sup>).
2. He is spending money lavishly = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) lavishly (shé<sup>1</sup>.ch'ih<sup>0</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>) spend (hua<sup>1</sup> or fei<sup>4</sup>) money (ch'iēn<sup>2</sup>).
3. I cannot remember it = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) remember (chi<sup>4</sup>-tē<sup>0</sup>).
4. Knowledge is power = knowledge (chih<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) power (li<sup>4</sup>).
5. He will give me a letter of introduction = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) give (kei<sup>3</sup>) me (wo<sup>0</sup>) one (i<sup>4</sup>) piece (fēng<sup>1</sup>) introduction (chieh<sup>4</sup>-shao<sup>4</sup>) letter (hsin<sup>4</sup>).
6. My professor will write the introduction of my book = my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) professor (chiao<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>4</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) write (tso<sup>4</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>) book (shu<sup>1</sup>) introduction (hsü<sup>4</sup> or hsü<sup>4</sup>-yen<sup>2</sup>).
7. He is an experienced teacher = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) experience (ching<sup>1</sup>-yen<sup>4</sup>) teacher (hsien<sup>1</sup>-shēng<sup>1</sup>).
8. Attention please ! = please (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>) attention (chu<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>0</sup>).
9. I am alone within the house = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) alone (tan<sup>1</sup>-tu<sup>2</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) -house (fang<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) inside (li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>). [li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, within.]
10. His advice is sound = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) advice (chung<sup>1</sup>-kao<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) true (shih<sup>2</sup>-tsai<sup>4</sup>).
11. The tiger is almost dead = tiger (hu<sup>3</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) almost (ch'a<sup>4</sup>-pu<sup>0</sup>-to<sup>1</sup>) dead (szü<sup>3</sup>).
12. I shall consider your application = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) shall (yao<sup>4</sup>) consider (k'ao<sup>3</sup>-lū<sup>4</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) application (ch'ing<sup>3</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>).
13. He will continue his work = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) continue (chi<sup>4</sup>-hsü<sup>4</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) work (工 作 kung<sup>1</sup>-tso<sup>4</sup>).

14. It differs from this = differ (i<sup>4</sup>) from (hu<sup>1</sup>) this (tz'u<sup>3</sup>).
15. But it agrees with this = but (tan<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>) agree (合 ho<sup>2</sup>) with (hu<sup>1</sup>) this (tz'u<sup>3</sup>).
16. Both of them are in fault = two (liang<sup>3</sup>) piece (ko<sup>0</sup>) all (tu<sup>1</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>). [pu<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, a fault.]
17. The supply is not equal to the demand = supply (kung<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>0</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) comply with (ying<sup>1</sup>) demand (yao<sup>1</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>).
18. I am enclosing a copy of it = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) enclose (fu<sup>4</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>) copy (ch'ao<sup>1</sup>-p'en<sup>0</sup>).
19. Our cause is common = our (wo<sup>3</sup>-m'en<sup>0</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) cause (yuan<sup>2</sup>-yin<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) common (p'u<sup>3</sup>-t'ung<sup>1</sup>).
20. He has no common sense = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) common sense (ch'ang<sup>2</sup> shih<sup>4</sup>).
21. The card is here = card (p'ai<sup>2</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) here (ch'e<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>0</sup>).
22. Our journey to China was comfortable = our (wo<sup>3</sup>-m'en<sup>0</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) journey (l'u<sup>3</sup>-hsing<sup>2</sup>) to (tao<sup>4</sup>) China (chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) comfortable (shu<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>2</sup>).
23. Be careful = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) require (yao<sup>4</sup>) careful (hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hsin<sup>0</sup>).
24. When the national anthem is sung, we should stand up = national anthem (kuo<sup>2</sup>-ko<sup>1</sup>) suffer (pei<sup>4</sup>) sing (ch'ang<sup>4</sup>)-ing (ti<sup>0</sup>) time (shih<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>0</sup>) we (wo<sup>3</sup>-m'en<sup>0</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) stand (chan<sup>4</sup>) rise (起 ch'i<sup>0</sup>) come (lai<sup>0</sup>).
25. We should learn the national language = we (wo<sup>3</sup>-m'en<sup>0</sup>) should (ying<sup>1</sup>-kai<sup>1</sup> 應該) learn (hsueh<sup>2</sup>) national language (kuo<sup>2</sup> yu<sup>3</sup>).
26. There is seventeen per cent success = there is (yu<sup>3</sup>) seventeen (shih<sup>2</sup>-ch'i<sup>1</sup>) percentage (ch'eng<sup>2</sup>) success (ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>).
27. Please remind me = please (ch'ing<sup>2</sup>) you (ni<sup>0</sup>) remind (t'i<sup>2</sup>-hsing<sup>3</sup>) me (wo<sup>0</sup>).
28. They go together = they (t'a<sup>1</sup>-m'en<sup>0</sup>) together (i<sup>1</sup>-t'ung<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'u<sup>4</sup>).
29. Multiply six by nine and divide by four = six (liu<sup>4</sup>) multiply (ch'eng<sup>2</sup>) nine (chiu<sup>3</sup>) and (ho<sup>2</sup>) divide (ch'u<sup>2</sup>) four (ssu<sup>4</sup>).
30. Please spare him = please (ch'ing<sup>2</sup>) you (ni<sup>0</sup>) spare (jao<sup>2</sup>) him (t'a<sup>0</sup>).
31. His honorary degree (academic) is well deserved = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) honorary degree (ming<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>4</sup> hsueh<sup>2</sup> wei<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) false (hsu<sup>1</sup>) confer (shou<sup>4</sup>).
32. He gave up all hope = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) give up (chueh<sup>2</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) all (so<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>) hope (hsu<sup>1</sup>-wang<sup>4</sup>).
33. I was cheated by a cheater = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) top (shang<sup>4</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) cheater (p'ien<sup>4</sup>-tz'u<sup>0</sup>) of (ti<sup>0</sup>) treat (tang<sup>4</sup>). [shang<sup>4</sup> tang<sup>4</sup>, to be cheated.]
34. Don't argue = not (pu<sup>2</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) argue (ch'eng<sup>1</sup>-lun<sup>4</sup>).

35. My school-mate will come within a week = my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) school-mate (t'ung<sup>2</sup>-ch'uang<sup>1</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) week (li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>) inside (li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).
36. His relative will go without delay = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) relative (ch'in<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>0</sup>) without delay (ma<sup>3</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).
37. His luck is very favourable = his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) luck (hsing<sup>4</sup>-yün<sup>4</sup> or yün<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) very (hén<sup>2</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>).
38. Egyptian cotton is good = Egypt (ai<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>2</sup>)-'s (ti<sup>0</sup>) cotton (mien<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>).

---

## THIRTY-NINTH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation.*

### 短句

tuan<sup>3</sup>-chiü<sup>4</sup>  
[short] [sentence]  
phrases

### 和

ho<sup>2</sup>  
and

### 成論

ch'êng<sup>2</sup>-yü<sup>3</sup>  
[perfect] [language]  
idioms

1. 破 p'o<sup>4</sup>, to break.
2. 打破 ta<sup>3</sup> (to strike)-p'o<sup>4</sup>, to smash, to break.
3. 犯法 fan<sup>4</sup> (to violate) fa<sup>3</sup> (law), to break the law.
4. 中途下車 chung<sup>1</sup> (middle) t'u<sup>2</sup> (a road) hsia<sup>4</sup> (below) ch'ê<sup>1</sup> (a cart), to break the journey.
5. 背約 pei<sup>4</sup> (to turn the back on) yüeh<sup>1</sup> (an agreement), to break a promise.
6. 失信 shih<sup>1</sup> (to lose) hsin<sup>4</sup> (a pledge), to break a promise.
7. 得 tê<sup>2</sup>, to get.
8. 生氣 shêng<sup>1</sup> (to produce) ch'i<sup>4</sup> (breath), to get angry.
9. 走開 tsou<sup>3</sup> (to walk) k'ai<sup>0</sup> (to open), to get away.
10. 下來 hsia<sup>4</sup> (below) lai<sup>0</sup> (to come), to get down.
11. 進,, chin<sup>4</sup> (to enter) lai<sup>0</sup>, to get in.
12. 出,, ch'u<sup>1</sup> (out) lai<sup>0</sup>, to get out.
13. 上,, shang<sup>4</sup> (above) lai<sup>0</sup>, to get up.
14. 起,, ch'i<sup>3</sup> (to rise) lai<sup>0</sup>, to get up (from a lying or sitting position).
15. ,, 牀 ch'i<sup>3</sup> ch'uang<sup>2</sup> (bed), to get up from bed.
16. 上車 shang<sup>4</sup> ch'ê<sup>1</sup>, to get into a vehicle.
17. 下,, hsia<sup>4</sup> ch'ê<sup>1</sup>, to get out of a vehicle.

18. 預備 yü<sup>4</sup> (to prepare) pei<sup>4</sup> (to prepare), to get ready.
19. 保 pao<sup>3</sup>, to protect, to preserve.
20. 存 ts'un<sup>2</sup>, to keep.
21. 保存 pao<sup>3</sup> ts'un<sup>2</sup>, to keep (to preserve).
22. 留 liu<sup>2</sup>, to keep (to detain).
23. 摺 ko<sup>1</sup>, to keep (to place).
24. 履行 lü<sup>3</sup> (to walk) hsing<sup>2</sup> (to walk), to keep (to carry out, as a promise 應許 or 答應 ying<sup>1</sup>-hsü<sup>3</sup> or ta<sup>2</sup>-ying<sup>0</sup>; where ying<sup>1</sup> means 'ought, should, right, proper', hsü<sup>3</sup> 'to promise', and ta<sup>2</sup> 'to reply').
25. 守秘密 shou<sup>3</sup> (to keep) mi<sup>4</sup> (secret) mi<sup>0</sup> (secret), to keep a secret.
26. 記在心裏 chi<sup>4</sup> (to remember) tsai<sup>4</sup> (in) hsin<sup>1</sup> (heart) li<sup>0</sup> (inside), to keep in mind.
27. 製 chih<sup>4</sup>, to make.
28. 印度製 yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>0</sup> chih<sup>4</sup>, Indian make (goods <huo<sup>4</sup>> 物 huo<sup>4</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>; where the former means 'goods, commodities' and the latter 'matter, goods').
29. 中國 „ chung<sup>1</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup> chih<sup>4</sup>, Chinese make (goods).
30. 交 chiao<sup>1</sup>, to have intercourse with, intimacy, friendship.
31. „ 朋友 chiao<sup>1</sup> p'êng<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>0</sup>, to make friends.
32. „ 友 chiao<sup>1</sup> yu<sup>3</sup>, to make friends with.
33. 定主意 ting<sup>1</sup> (to fix, to settle) chu<sup>3</sup> (a lord) i<sup>0</sup> (an opinion), to make up one's mind.
34. 趕快 kan<sup>3</sup> (as soon as) k'uai<sup>4</sup> (quickly), to make haste.
35. 婿和 kou<sup>4</sup> (to wed, love) ho<sup>2</sup> (peace), to make peace.

36. 開 戰 k'ai<sup>1</sup> (to open) chan<sup>4</sup> (to fight), to make war.

37. .. 玩 笑 k'ai<sup>1</sup> wan<sup>2</sup> (to find pleasure in)-hsiao<sup>4</sup> (to laugh), to make fun of. [wan<sup>2</sup>-hsiao<sup>4</sup>, fun.]

38. .. 張 k'ai<sup>1</sup> chang<sup>1</sup> (to open), to open (as a business  
商 業 shang<sup>1</sup>-ye<sup>4</sup>; where the former means  
'trade' and the latter 'business').

39. 打 開 ta<sup>3</sup> (to strike) k'ai<sup>0</sup>, to open (as a book, shu<sup>1</sup> or  
a box 盒 子 ho<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>).

40. 折 .. ch'ai<sup>1</sup> (to break open) k'ai<sup>0</sup>, to open (as a letter  
hsin<sup>4</sup> or a package 包 pao<sup>1</sup>).

41. 摒 ko<sup>1</sup> or 放 fang<sup>4</sup>, to put.

42. .. 下 ko<sup>1</sup> hsia<sup>0</sup>      }  
      or                      } to put down.  
放 .. fang<sup>4</sup> hsia<sup>0</sup>      }

43. 戴 上 tai<sup>4</sup> shang<sup>0</sup>, to put on (as hat or eyeglasses).

44. 穿 .. ch'uan<sup>1</sup> shang<sup>0</sup>, to put on (as clothes, socks, etc.).

45. 關 kuan<sup>1</sup> or 閉 pi<sup>4</sup> or 掩 yen<sup>3</sup>, to shut, to close.

46. .. 門 kuan<sup>1</sup> mén<sup>2</sup>, to shut the door.

47. 閉 口 pi<sup>4</sup> k'ou<sup>3</sup>, to shut the mouth.

48. .. 上 眼 睛 pi<sup>4</sup> shang<sup>0</sup> yen<sup>3</sup>-ching<sup>1</sup>, to shut the eyes.

49. 掩 .. 耳 朵 yen<sup>3</sup> shang<sup>0</sup> êrh<sup>3</sup>-to<sup>0</sup>, to shut the ears.

50. 拿 na<sup>2</sup>, to take.

51. 吃 藥 ch'ih<sup>1</sup> (to eat) yao<sup>4</sup>, to take medicine.

52. 當 心 tang<sup>1</sup> (to undertake) hsin<sup>1</sup> (heart), to take care.

53. 脫 帽 t'o<sup>1</sup> mao<sup>4</sup> (hat), to take off the hat.

54. .. 鞋 t'o<sup>1</sup> hsieh<sup>2</sup>, to take off the shoes.

55. 戒 酒 chieh<sup>4</sup> (to guard against) chiu<sup>3</sup> (wine), to abstain  
from wine.

## FORTIETH LESSON

*The small figures after a word refer to intonation*

<b>格言</b> ko <sup>2</sup> -yen <sup>2</sup> [wise] [saying] proverb	<b>或</b> huo <sup>4</sup> or	<b>俗語</b> su <sup>2</sup> -yü <sup>3</sup> [common] [saying] proverb
<b>1. 王法</b> wang <sup>2</sup> royal	<b>無</b> wu <sup>2</sup> without	<b>親</b> ch'in <sup>1</sup> to attend to in person
The law is no respecter of persons.		
<b>2. 小孔不補</b> hsiao <sup>2</sup> k'ung <sup>3</sup> small hole	<b>大孔叫苦</b> pu <sup>4</sup> pu <sup>3</sup> ta <sup>4</sup> k'ung <sup>3</sup> chiao <sup>4</sup> k'u <sup>3</sup> not patch big hole cause bitter	
A stitch in time saves nine.		
<b>3. 需事</b> hsü <sup>1</sup> procrastinate	<b>之</b> chih <sup>1</sup> affair	<b>賊也</b> tsei <sup>2</sup> yeh <sup>3</sup> thief indeed
Procrastination is the thief of time.		
<b>4. 賊不改</b> tsei <sup>2</sup> thief	<b>性</b> pu <sup>4</sup> not	<b>改</b> kai <sup>3</sup> change
A thief cannot change his nature.		
Cf. চোরা না শেখেন ধর্ম কাশিনো ।		
<b>5. 賊出關</b> tsei <sup>2</sup> thief	<b>門</b> ch'u <sup>1</sup> out	<b>關</b> kuan <sup>1</sup> shut
To lock the doors after the thieves have already gone.		
Cf. চোরে গতে কিমু সাবধানম् ।		
<b>6. 同行</b> tung <sup>2</sup> same	<b>必</b> hang <sup>2</sup> trade	<b>妬</b> pi <sup>4</sup> certainly
Two of a trade never agree.		

7.	有	志	者	事	竟	成
	yu <sup>3</sup>	chih <sup>4</sup>	chê <sup>3</sup>	shih <sup>4</sup>	ching <sup>4</sup>	ch'êng <sup>2</sup>
	there is	will	that	affair	at last	succeed

Where there is a will, there is a way.

8.	既	往	不	咎
	chi <sup>4</sup>	wang <sup>3</sup>	pu <sup>2</sup>	chiu <sup>4</sup>
	already	gone	not	blame

Let bygones be bygones.

Cf. गतस्य शोचना नास्ति ।

9.	濟	火	以	油
	chi <sup>4</sup>	huo <sup>3</sup>	i <sup>3</sup>	yu <sup>2</sup>
	help	fire	with	oil

To pour oil on flames.

10.	集	少	成	多
	chi <sup>2</sup>	shao <sup>3</sup>	ch'êng <sup>2</sup>	to <sup>1</sup>
	gather together	little	become	much

Many a little, makes a mickle.

11.	七	顛	八	倒
	ch'i <sup>1</sup>	tien <sup>1</sup>	pa <sup>1</sup>	tao <sup>4</sup>
	seven	upset	eight	invert

At sixes and sevens.

12.	近	朱	者	赤	近	墨
	chin <sup>4</sup>	chu <sup>1</sup>	chê <sup>3</sup>	ch'ih <sup>4</sup>	chin <sup>4</sup>	mê <sup>4</sup>
	approach	vermilion	he who	read	approach	ink
	者	黑				
	chê <sup>3</sup>	hei <sup>1</sup>				
	he who	black				

He who handles vermillion will be reddened and he who touches ink will be blackened.

A man is known by the company he keeps.

Cf. संसर्गंजा दोषा गुणा भवन्ति ।

13.	近	煤	者	黑
	chin <sup>4</sup>	mei <sup>2</sup>	chê <sup>3</sup>	hei <sup>1</sup>
	approach	coal	he who	black

He who uses coal gets black.

14.	樂	極	生	悲
	lo <sup>4</sup>	chi <sup>2</sup>	shêng <sup>1</sup>	pei <sup>1</sup>
	joy	extreme	produce	sadness

Extreme joy gives rise to sadness.

After sweetmeat comes sour sauce.

Cf. यत् हासि तत् कास्त् वले गोक्ते वाम शर्मा ।

15.	<k'ai <sup>1</sup> >	口	不	如	緘	口	穩
		k'ai <sup>1</sup>	k'ou <sup>3</sup>	pu <sup>4</sup>	ju <sup>2</sup>	chien <sup>1</sup>	k'ou <sup>3</sup> wên <sup>3</sup>
		open	mouth	not	if	close	mouth firm

It is safer to keep silence than to speak.

Cf. मौनं हि शोभनम् ।

16.	孤	樹	不	成	林
	ku <sup>1</sup>	shu <sup>4</sup>	pu <sup>4</sup>	ch'êng <sup>2</sup>	lin <sup>2</sup>
	alone	tree	not	become	forest

One tree does not make a forest.

17.	快	馬	一	鞭	<k'uai <sup>4</sup> >	人	一	言
	k'uai <sup>4</sup>	ma <sup>3</sup>	i <sup>2</sup>	pien <sup>4</sup>	k'uai <sup>4</sup>	jêng <sup>2</sup>	i <sup>1</sup>	yen <sup>2</sup>
	fast	horse	one	whip	sharp	man	one	word

A fast horse only needs one touch of the whip—an intelligent man only needs a hint.

18.	人	不	知	己	過
	jêng <sup>2</sup>	pu <sup>4</sup>	chih <sup>1</sup>	chi <sup>3</sup>	kuo <sup>4</sup>
	man	not	know	self	fault

A man is unconscious of his own faults.

Cf. आत्मचिद्रं न जानाति परचिद्रं पदे पदे ।

19. 人 算 不 如 天 <suan<sup>4</sup>>

jēn<sup>2</sup> suan<sup>4</sup> pu<sup>4</sup> ju<sup>2</sup> t'ien<sup>1</sup> suan<sup>4</sup>  
man calculation not equal to God plan

Human calculations are not equal to God's plans.

20. 由 儉 入 奢 易

yu<sup>2</sup> chien<sup>3</sup> ju<sup>4</sup> shē<sup>1</sup> i<sup>4</sup>  
from frugality enter extravagance easy

To go from frugality to extravagance is easy.

21. 由 <shē<sup>1</sup>> 入 儉 難

yu<sup>2</sup> shē<sup>1</sup> ju<sup>4</sup> chien<sup>3</sup> nan<sup>2</sup>  
from extravagance enter frugality difficult

To go from extravagance to frugality is difficult.

22. 盲 人 騎 瞎 馬

mang<sup>2</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup> ch'i<sup>2</sup> hsia<sup>1</sup> ma<sup>3</sup>  
blind man ride blind horse

A blind man riding a blind horse (i.e. imminent danger).

23. 不 可 貌 相

pu<sup>4</sup> k'o<sup>3</sup> mao<sup>4</sup> hsiang<sup>4</sup>  
not may appearance look at

Do not judge a person by his looks. Cf. All that glitters, is not gold.

24. 瞞 目

man<sup>2</sup> mu<sup>4</sup>  
to deceive eyes

To throw dust in the eyes.

25. 魚 之 失 水

yü<sup>2</sup> chih<sup>1</sup> shih<sup>1</sup> shui<sup>3</sup>  
fish arrive lose water

A fish out of water.

26.	青	天	霹	靂
	ch'ing <sup>1</sup>	t'ien <sup>1</sup>	p'i <sup>4</sup>	li <sup>4</sup>
	blue	sky	crash of thunder	clap of thunder [p'i <sup>4</sup> -li <sup>4</sup> , sound of thunder]

A bolt from the blue.

27.	耳	屬	于	垣
	êrh <sup>3</sup>	shu <sup>3</sup>	yü <sup>2</sup>	yüan <sup>2</sup>
	ear	belong	to	wall

Walls have ears.

28.	善	始	善	終
	shan <sup>4</sup>	shih <sup>3</sup>	shan <sup>4</sup>	chung <sup>1</sup>
	good	beginning	good	ending

Good beginning makes a good ending.

29.	上	行	下	效
	shang <sup>4</sup>	hsing <sup>2</sup>	hsia <sup>4</sup>	hsiao <sup>4</sup>
	superior	doing	inferior	imitate

The doings of superiors are imitated by inferiors.

Cf. महाजनो येन गतः स पन्थाः ।

30.	是	則	是	非	則	非
	shih <sup>4</sup>	tsê <sup>2</sup>	shih <sup>4</sup>	fei <sup>1</sup>	tsê <sup>2</sup>	fei <sup>1</sup>
	right	then	right	wrong	then	wrong

Right is right and wrong is wrong.

31.	熟	能	生	巧
	shu <sup>2</sup>	nêng <sup>2</sup>	shêng <sup>1</sup>	ch'iao <sup>3</sup>
	ripe	power	produce	clever

Practice makes perfect.

32.	走	魚	<shih <sup>4</sup> >	大	的
	tsou <sup>4</sup>	yü <sup>2</sup>	shih <sup>4</sup>	ta <sup>4</sup>	ti <sup>9</sup>
	go	fish	is	large	one

The fish that gets away is always the largest.

33.	人	心	不	足
	jēn <sup>2</sup> man	hsin <sup>1</sup> heart	pu <sup>4</sup> not	tsu <sup>2</sup> satisfied

The heart of man is never satisfied.

34.	貧	病	相	連
	p'in <sup>2</sup> poverty	ping <sup>4</sup> disease	hsiang <sup>1</sup> mutual	lien <sup>2</sup> connect

Poverty and disease are closely associated.

35.	冰	生	于	水	而	寒	于	水
	ping <sup>1</sup> ice	shēng <sup>1</sup> produce	yü <sup>2</sup> from	shui <sup>3</sup> water	êrh <sup>2</sup> but	han <sup>2</sup> cold	yü <sup>2</sup> than	shui <sup>3</sup> water

Ice is produced from water but it is colder than water (i.e. the pupil excels his tutor).

36.	飛	蛾	赴	火
	fei <sup>1</sup> flying	o <sup>2</sup> moth	fu <sup>4</sup> go to	huo <sup>3</sup> fire

The flying moth approaches the flame.

37.	不	是	兒	戲
	pu <sup>2</sup> not	shih <sup>4</sup> is	êrh <sup>2</sup> child	hsia <sup>4</sup> play

It is not child's-play.

Cf. ইহা ছেলেখেলা নয়।

38.	知	子	莫	如	父
	chih <sup>1</sup> know	tzū <sup>3</sup> son	mo <sup>4</sup> not	ju <sup>2</sup> like	fu <sup>4</sup> father

No one knows a son like his father.

39.	謀	事	在	人	成	事	在	天
	mou <sup>2</sup> devise	shih <sup>4</sup> matter	tsai <sup>4</sup> in	jēn <sup>2</sup> man	ch'êng <sup>2</sup> become	shih <sup>4</sup> matter	tsai <sup>4</sup> in	t'ien <sup>1</sup> God

Man proposes but God disposes.

40.	覆	水	難	收
	fu <sup>2</sup>	shui <sup>3</sup>	nan <sup>2</sup>	shou <sup>1</sup>
	overturn	water	difficult	gather together

Spilt water cannot be gathered.

41.	女	牛	外	向
	nü <sup>3</sup>	shéng <sup>1</sup>	wai <sup>4</sup>	hsiang <sup>4</sup>
	woman	born	outside	facing towards

A woman is born with an outward tendency (i.e. she leaves the house of her father after marriage).

42.	自	私	心	焚	和
	tzü <sup>4</sup>	szü <sup>1</sup>	hsin <sup>1</sup>	fén <sup>2</sup>	ho <sup>2</sup>
	self	selfish	heart	burn	peace

[tzü<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>-, selfish ; tzü<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>-hsin<sup>1</sup>, selfishness]

Selfishness destroys peace and harmony.

43.	耳	視
	êrh <sup>3</sup>	shih <sup>4</sup>
	ear	to see

To see with the ear.

Cf. राजा कर्णाभ्यां पश्यति ।

44.	言	多	必	失
	yen <sup>2</sup>	to <sup>1</sup>	pi <sup>4</sup>	shih <sup>1</sup>
	talk	much	certainly	error

Much talk leads to error.

45.	言	不	及	行
	yen <sup>2</sup>	pu <sup>4</sup>	chi <sup>2</sup>	hsing <sup>2</sup>
	word	not	to reach to	action

Theory is not equal to practice.

46.	一	人	難	如	千	人	意
	i <sup>1</sup>	jên <sup>2</sup>	nan <sup>2</sup>	ju <sup>2</sup>	ch'ien <sup>1</sup>	jên <sup>2</sup>	i <sup>4</sup>
	one	man	difficult	like	many	man	wish

One cannot please everybody.

47.	一	人	作	事	一	人	當
	i <sup>1</sup>	jēn <sup>2</sup>	tso <sup>4</sup>	shih <sup>4</sup>	i <sup>1</sup>	jēn <sup>2</sup>	tang <sup>1</sup>
	one	man	to do	affair	one	man	must

A man must bear the consequences of his own acts.

Cf. দেখি এই চৰাচৰে যে যেমন কৰ্ম কৰে মে তেমন ফল পায় তাৰ।

48.	人	各	有	短
	jēn <sup>2</sup>	ko <sup>4</sup>	yu <sup>3</sup>	tuan <sup>3</sup>
	man	every	has	short

Everyone has shortcomings.

49.	說	來	說	去
	shuo <sup>1</sup>	lai <sup>2</sup>	shuo <sup>1</sup>	ch'ü <sup>4</sup>
	speak	come	speak	go

To beat about the bush (i.e. to talk about a matter without coming to the point or to repeat over and over again).

50.	禍	從	口	生
	huo <sup>4</sup>	ts'ung <sup>2</sup>	k'ou <sup>3</sup>	shēng <sup>1</sup>
	calamity	through	mouth	produce

Calamities come through the mouth (either through carelessness in diet causing sickness or through carelessness and maliciousness in speech).

51.	禍	不	單	行
	huo <sup>4</sup>	pu <sup>4</sup>	tan <sup>1</sup>	hsing <sup>2</sup>
	misfortune	not	alone	walk

Misfortune never comes singly.

52.	<chien <sup>3</sup> >	則	固
	chien <sup>3</sup>	tsê <sup>2</sup>	ku <sup>4</sup>
	parsimony	lead to	meanness

Parsimony leads to meanness.

53.	先	<fa <sup>1</sup> >	制	人
	hsien <sup>1</sup>	fa <sup>1</sup>	chih <sup>4</sup>	jēn <sup>2</sup>
	first	to manifest	to rule	man

He who makes the first start, rules others.

54.	舊	瓶	貯	新	酒
	chiu <sup>4</sup>	p'ing <sup>2</sup>	chu <sup>3</sup>	hsin <sup>1</sup>	chiu <sup>3</sup>
	old	bottle	to hoard	new	wine

New wine in old bottles.

55.	.	債	息	日	重
		chai <sup>4</sup>	hsi <sup>2</sup>	jih <sup>4</sup>	chung <sup>4</sup>
		debt	interest	day	heavy

Debt and interest daily increase.

## APPENDIX I

### [附錄 fu<sup>4</sup> (an appendix) lu<sup>4</sup> (to record)]

#### CLASSIFIERS OR NUMERATIVES

In Chinese each noun generally has a fixed classifier, though a few nouns have two or more. Classifiers are only used when a definite number is spoken of and hence they are also known as numeratives. It is quite impossible to fix any rule for the use of classifiers. Concrete nouns in general take a classifier. But nouns having the sense of time, space or quantity, such as day, year, inch, mile, ounce, catty, etc., do not take any classifier.

**個** ko<sup>4</sup>, one, a single one, a unit, may be called a general classifier. It is generally used with those nouns that have no special classifier and may be used with almost any noun as a substitute for the special classifier. As it gives an idea of individuality only, it is used most extensively. It is the only classifier that can be applied to an abstract noun. Other classifiers have been illustrated in their proper places.

#### Various uses of ko<sup>4</sup>:

一個人 i<sup>2</sup> ko<sup>4</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, a man; but ko<sup>4</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, an individual.

“ “ 一個 i<sup>2</sup> ko<sup>4</sup> i<sup>2</sup> ko<sup>4</sup>, one by one.

wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup> chung<sup>1</sup> (中) ti<sup>0</sup> i<sup>2</sup> ko<sup>4</sup>, one of us.

ko<sup>4</sup> ko<sup>4</sup> tou<sup>1</sup> (都 all) yu<sup>3</sup> (有), each or every one possesses it.

ko<sup>4</sup> ko<sup>4</sup> ju<sup>2</sup> (如 like) tz'ü<sup>3</sup> (此 this), all are like this.

**這** ché<sup>4</sup>, this, and **那** na<sup>4</sup>, that, when used as pronouns, are generally followed by the classifier ko<sup>4</sup> which is neutral in tone; but when used as pronominal adjectives, it is sometimes omitted without any change of meaning, e.g.

**那個** is 甚麼 na<sup>4</sup> ko<sup>0</sup> shih<sup>4</sup> shēn<sup>2</sup> ma<sup>0</sup>, what is that?

**這** “ “ “ “ ché<sup>4</sup> ko<sup>0</sup> shih<sup>4</sup> shēn<sup>2</sup> ma<sup>0</sup>, what is this?

ché<sup>4</sup> ko<sup>0</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, this man; or ché<sup>4</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, this man.

na<sup>4</sup> ko<sup>0</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, that man; or na<sup>4</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, that man.

ko<sup>4</sup> is never used after **此** tz'ü<sup>3</sup>, this; e.g. **此人** tz'ü<sup>3</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>, this man.

Note the uses of the following classifiers:

1. 份 fēn<sup>4</sup>, a lot: 一份報紙 i<sup>2</sup> fēn<sup>4</sup> pao<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>, a copy of newspaper.
2. 張 chang<sup>1</sup>, copy: „ 張紙 i<sup>4</sup> chang<sup>1</sup> chih<sup>3</sup>, a piece of paper.
3. 件 chien<sup>4</sup>, item: „ 件好新聞 i<sup>2</sup> chien<sup>4</sup> hao<sup>3</sup> hsin<sup>1</sup>-wēn<sup>2</sup>, a piece of good news.
4. 枝 chih<sup>1</sup>, as of pen,  
arrow, flower, etc. } „ 枝筆 i<sup>4</sup> chih<sup>1</sup> pi<sup>3</sup>, a piece of pen.
5. 幅 fu<sup>2</sup>, as of pic-  
ture, maps and  
things having  
breadth } „ 幅畫 i<sup>1</sup> fu<sup>2</sup> hua<sup>4</sup>, a piece of painting.
6. 根 kēn<sup>1</sup>, as of rope „ 樑繩子 i<sup>4</sup> kēn<sup>1</sup> shēng<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, a piece  
or string: of string.
7. 塊 k'uai<sup>4</sup>, piece: „ 塊布 i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> pu<sup>4</sup>, a piece of cloth.
8. 片 p'ien<sup>4</sup>, slice: „ „ 鐵 i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> t'ieh<sup>3</sup>, a piece of iron.
9. 首 shou<sup>3</sup>, as of  
poems, plays, etc. } „ 地 i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> ti<sup>4</sup>, a piece of land.
10. 首 shou<sup>3</sup>, as of  
poems, plays, etc. } „ 肉 i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> jou<sup>4</sup>, a piece of meat.
11. 首 shou<sup>3</sup>, as of  
poems, plays, etc. } „ 石頭 i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> shih<sup>2</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, a piece  
of stone.
12. 本 pēn<sup>3</sup>, copy: „ 本書 i<sup>4</sup> pēn<sup>3</sup> shu<sup>1</sup>, a copy of book.
13. 片 p'ien<sup>4</sup>, slice: „ 片麵包 i<sup>2</sup> p'ien<sup>4</sup> mien<sup>4</sup>-pao<sup>1</sup>, a piece of bread.
14. 首 shou<sup>3</sup>, as of  
poems, plays, etc. } „ 首詩 i<sup>4</sup> shou<sup>3</sup> shih<sup>1</sup>, a piece of poetry.

們 mēn<sup>2</sup>

It is the sign of the plural, generally added to personal pronouns, but sometimes to other words denoting persons. It is never added to words

denoting things. It is neutral in tone; thus:

我 wo<sup>3</sup>, I

你 ni<sup>3</sup>, thou, you

他 t'a<sup>1</sup>, he

人 jēn<sup>2</sup>, man

兄弟 hsiung<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, brother 兄弟 ,, hsiung<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup>, brothers.

But the singular and plural of nouns are in general alike; e.g. wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup> shih<sup>4</sup> p'ēng<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>0</sup>, we were friends.

### The enclitics 子 tzü<sup>3</sup> and 兒 érh<sup>2</sup>

Both of these characters, meaning 'son', are used after words in the formation of nouns. Some words take one and some take the other, while many take either of them. There are some nouns which take neither of them. tzü<sup>3</sup> is much more used in the formation of nouns than érh<sup>2</sup> which has in most cases more or less of a diminutive sense. Both of them are neutral in tone. Thus, 樣子 yang<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, an example.

In the following cases the pronunciation of érh<sup>2</sup> is modified for the sake of euphony:

(a) When it is used after the syllables ending in -ü, -ü, -i, -ih and -eh, it becomes -ér and the vowels in the third and fourth tones are more open, almost like -ar; e.g.

tzü<sup>4</sup> (字) -érh<sup>0</sup> = tsér<sup>4</sup> = tsar<sup>4</sup>, a character, a letter.

nü<sup>3</sup> (女) -érh<sup>0</sup> = nüer<sup>3</sup> = nüar<sup>3</sup>, daughter.

p'i<sup>2</sup> (皮) -érh<sup>0</sup> = p'ér<sup>2</sup>, skin.

chih<sup>1</sup> (枝) -érh<sup>0</sup> = chér<sup>1</sup>, a branch.

yeh<sup>2</sup> (椰) -érh<sup>0</sup> = yér, cocoanut.

(b) When it is used after the syllables ending in -a, -o, -ə, -u, -ao and -ou, it becomes only -r; e.g.

na<sup>4</sup> (那) -érh<sup>0</sup> = nar<sup>4</sup>, there (érh<sup>2</sup> is used here forming an adverb of place).

tso<sup>2</sup> (昨) -érh<sup>0</sup> = tsar<sup>2</sup>, yesterday (adverb of time).

chē<sup>4</sup> (這) -érh<sup>0</sup> = chér<sup>4</sup>, here (adverb of place).

chu<sup>2</sup> (軸) -érh<sup>0</sup> = chur<sup>2</sup>, a pivot, a catch.

tao<sup>1</sup> (刀) -érh<sup>0</sup> = taor<sup>1</sup>, a knife.

t'ou<sup>2</sup> (頭) -érh<sup>0</sup> = t'our<sup>2</sup>, the head of an organization.

(c) When it is used after the finals ending in -i or -n, both -i and -n are totally dropped (with -ien becoming -iar instead of -ier or -iér) ; e.g.

hai<sup>2</sup> (孩) -érh<sup>0</sup> = har<sup>2</sup>, a child.

— < k'uai<sup>4</sup> = piece > i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup>.érh<sup>0</sup> = i<sup>2</sup> k'uar<sup>4</sup>, all together, in a lump.

.. 點 i<sup>4</sup> tien<sup>3</sup>.érh<sup>0</sup> = i<sup>4</sup> tiar<sup>3</sup>, a dot, a little, slightly.

chin<sup>1</sup> (今) -érh<sup>0</sup> = chiér<sup>1</sup>, today (adverb of time).

*Note.* —érh<sup>2</sup> is also used in forming adverbs of time and place ; as, 今 < érh<sup>2</sup> > 是初二明 < érh<sup>2</sup> > 是初三 [chiér<sup>1</sup> (today) shih<sup>4</sup> (is) ch'u<sup>1</sup> (beginning) érh<sup>4</sup> (two) ming-ér<sup>2</sup> (tomorrow) shih<sup>4</sup> ch'u<sup>1</sup> san<sup>1</sup>] today is the second, tomorrow will be the third.

我害了怕這 < érh<sup>2</sup> > 藏那 < érh<sup>2</sup> > 躲 [wo<sup>3</sup> (I) hai<sup>4</sup> (fearful) liao<sup>3</sup> p'a<sup>4</sup> (to fear) chér<sup>4</sup> (here) ts'ang<sup>2</sup> (hide) nar<sup>4</sup> (there) to<sup>3</sup> (hide)] I was afraid and hid myself here and there.

érh<sup>2</sup> is also used in a diminutive sense ; e.g.

刀 < érh<sup>0</sup> > taor<sup>1</sup>, a knife, but

.. 子 tao<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, a large knife or a sword.

初 ch'u<sup>1</sup> and 號 hao<sup>4</sup>

初 ch'u<sup>1</sup>, meaning 'beginning' is applied to the first ten days of the month and 號 hao<sup>4</sup>, meaning 'a sign, a number' to the remaining days of the month ; e.g.

初四 ch'u<sup>1</sup> ssü<sup>4</sup>, the fourth day of the month.

正月 .. chêng<sup>1</sup>.yüeh<sup>4</sup> ch'u<sup>1</sup> ssü<sup>4</sup>, January fourth.

二十號 érh<sup>4</sup> shih<sup>2</sup> hao<sup>4</sup>, the twentieth day of the month.

正 .. .. chêng<sup>1</sup>.yüeh<sup>4</sup> érh<sup>4</sup> shih<sup>2</sup> hao<sup>4</sup>, January twentieth.

十二 .. shih<sup>2</sup> érh<sup>4</sup> hao<sup>4</sup>, the twelfth day of the month.

#### Chinese expression of time

The minute or fraction of hour is indicated by 分 fén<sup>1</sup>.

The hour or o'clock is indicated by 點 tien<sup>3</sup> or 點鐘 tien<sup>3</sup> chung<sup>1</sup>.

The general term for time is 時 候 shih<sup>2</sup> hou<sup>0</sup>.

Examples—

Three o'clock:— 三點鐘 san<sup>1</sup> tien<sup>2</sup> chung<sup>1</sup>.

Half past three:— .. .. 平鐘 san<sup>1</sup> tien<sup>2</sup> pan<sup>4</sup> chung<sup>1</sup>.

Quarter after three:— .. .. 一刻 san<sup>1</sup> tien<sup>2</sup> i<sup>2</sup> k'o<sup>4</sup>.

Quarter to three:— 二 .. 三 .. ērh<sup>4</sup> tien<sup>2</sup> san<sup>1</sup> k'o<sup>4</sup>.

Fifteen minutes past three:— 三 <tien<sup>2</sup>> 十五分 san<sup>1</sup> tien<sup>2</sup> shih<sup>2</sup> wu<sup>3</sup> fēn<sup>1</sup>.

Five after three:— .. .. 五分 san<sup>1</sup> tien<sup>2</sup> wu<sup>3</sup> fēn<sup>1</sup>.

Ten after three:— .. .. 十 .. san<sup>1</sup> tien<sup>2</sup> shih<sup>2</sup> fēn<sup>1</sup>.

的 ti<sup>4</sup> and 得 tē<sup>2</sup>

ti<sup>4</sup> is the common sign of the genitive case. But when two genitives follow each other, the genitive sign of the preceding one is often omitted and the genitive is implied by the mere juxtaposition of the words; as—

我 <ti<sup>4</sup>> 鋪蓋 wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup> p'u<sup>1</sup> (to spread out) kai<sup>4</sup> (to cover, a cover) [p'u<sup>1</sup>.kai<sup>4</sup>, bedding], my bedding.

wo<sup>3</sup> p'ēng<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>0</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup> p'u<sup>1</sup>.kai<sup>4</sup>, my friend's bedding.

Adjectives are sometimes formed by adding ti<sup>4</sup> to the end of nouns; as—

小心, hsiao<sup>3</sup> (small) hsin<sup>0</sup> (hsin<sup>1</sup>, heart), care; but

.. .. <ti<sup>4</sup>> hsiao<sup>3</sup> hsin<sup>0</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, careful.

不同 pu<sup>4</sup> t'ung<sup>2</sup>, difference; but

.. .. <ti<sup>4</sup>> pu<sup>4</sup> t'ung<sup>2</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, different.

Adverbs are sometimes formed by adding ti<sup>4</sup> as a suffix and tē<sup>2</sup> as a prefix to adjectives; as—

<ni<sup>3</sup>> <man<sup>4</sup>.man<sup>1</sup>> <ti<sup>4</sup>> 說他就聽 <ti<sup>4</sup>> 清楚 [ni<sup>3</sup> (you) man<sup>4</sup> (slow) man<sup>1</sup> (slow) ti<sup>0</sup> shuo<sup>1</sup> (to speak) t'a<sup>1</sup> (he) chiu<sup>4</sup> (then) t'ing<sup>1</sup> (to hear) ti<sup>4</sup> ch'ing<sup>1</sup> (clear, distinct) ch'u<sup>0</sup> (ch'u<sup>3</sup>, clear, distinct; ch'ing<sup>1</sup> ch'u<sup>0</sup>, distinct)] if you speak slowly, he will hear distinctly.

hao<sup>3</sup>, good, well (adj.); but tē<sup>0</sup> hao<sup>3</sup>, well (adv.); well said, shuo<sup>1</sup> tē<sup>0</sup> hao<sup>3</sup>, well done, tso<sup>4</sup> tē<sup>0</sup> hao<sup>3</sup>.

When ti<sup>4</sup> follows a verb, it gives it the sense of a verbal noun or corresponds to a relative clause; thus

nū<sup>3</sup>.tzū<sup>0</sup> (girl) tsou<sup>3</sup> (to go) ti<sup>0</sup> hēn<sup>3</sup> (very) k'uai<sup>4</sup> (fast), the girl goes very fast; literally 'girl's going is very quick'.

**小孩子說** <ti<sup>4</sup>> **有理** [hsiao<sup>3</sup>.hai<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup> (boy) shuo<sup>1</sup> (to speak) ti<sup>0</sup> yu<sup>2</sup> li<sup>3</sup> (reason) (yu<sup>3</sup>, to have; yu<sup>2</sup> li<sup>3</sup>, reasonable)] what the boy says is reasonable.

<chê<sup>4</sup>> <ko<sup>4</sup>> **字繙大** <ti<sup>4</sup>> **對** [chê<sup>4</sup> (this) ko<sup>0</sup> (piece) tzü<sup>4</sup> (word) fan<sup>1</sup> (to translate) ti<sup>0</sup> ta<sup>4</sup> (very) tui<sup>4</sup> (right)] this word is translated quite right; literally, 'this word's translation is quite right'.

Note.—tê<sup>2</sup> 'to get, very' may also be substituted for ti<sup>4</sup> without any appreciable change of meaning. Such substitution is more available in the South than in the North; as—

**病** <tê<sup>2</sup>> or <ti<sup>4</sup>> ping<sup>4</sup> (disease) tê<sup>0</sup> or ti<sup>0</sup>, sick.

<tê<sup>2</sup>> or <ti<sup>4</sup>> **清楚** tê<sup>2</sup> or ti<sup>4</sup> ch'ing<sup>1</sup>.ch'u<sup>0</sup>, distinctly.

When ti<sup>4</sup> is added to a verb and its object, it indicates the agent:—

**管事** kuan<sup>3</sup> (to control) shih<sup>4</sup> (affair), but

.. .. <ti<sup>4</sup>> kuan<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, the manager.

.. .. **不在家** 他不能作主 kuan<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup> pu<sup>2</sup> (not) tsai<sup>4</sup> (at) chia<sup>1</sup> (home), t'a<sup>1</sup> (he) pu<sup>4</sup> (not) nêng<sup>2</sup> (can) tso<sup>4</sup> (to do) chu<sup>3</sup> (a lord), the manager is not at home; he cannot take the responsibility.

**送信** sung<sup>4</sup> (to escort, to hand over) hsin<sup>4</sup> (a letter), but

.. .. <ti<sup>4</sup>> sung<sup>4</sup>.hsin<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, the letter-carrier (postman).

sung<sup>4</sup>.hsin<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup> lai<sup>2</sup> (to come) liao<sup>0</sup> (-ed) mei<sup>2</sup> (not) yu<sup>3</sup> (have), has the letter-carrier (postman) come?

**念書** nien<sup>4</sup> (to read aloud) shu<sup>1</sup> (book), but

.. .. <ti<sup>4</sup>> nien<sup>4</sup>.shu<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, literary man,

**生意** shêng<sup>1</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>, business, but

.. .. <ti<sup>4</sup>> shêng<sup>1</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, businessman.

t'a<sup>1</sup>.mén<sup>0</sup> (they) ti<sup>4</sup>.hsiung<sup>1</sup> (弟 兄 brother) ch'i<sup>1</sup> (七 seven) ko<sup>4</sup> (piece), yu<sup>3</sup> (have) san<sup>1</sup> (three) ko<sup>4</sup> (piece) tso<sup>4</sup> (to do) shêng<sup>1</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, of the seven brothers, three are businessmen.

When ti<sup>4</sup> is added to a material noun, it turns it into a descriptive adjective; as

**勺銀** <ti<sup>4</sup>> pao<sup>1</sup> (to plate) yin<sup>2</sup> (silver) ti<sup>0</sup>, silver-plated.

.. .. **金** pao<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>1</sup> (gold) ti<sup>0</sup>, gold-plated.

財主 <ti<sup>4</sup>> 茶壺都是 <pao<sup>1</sup>> 銀 <ti<sup>4</sup>>，國王  
也有 <pao<sup>1</sup>> 金 <ti<sup>4</sup>> [ts'ai<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>1</sup> (rich man)-'s (ti<sup>0</sup>) eh'a<sup>2</sup> (tea)  
hu<sup>2</sup> (pot) tou<sup>1</sup> (all) shih<sup>4</sup> (is) pao<sup>1</sup> yin<sup>2</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>, kuo<sup>2</sup>.wang<sup>2</sup> (king) yeh<sup>3</sup> (also) yu<sup>3</sup>  
(have) pao<sup>1</sup> chin<sup>1</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>] rich men's tea-pots are all silver-plated, some of the  
kings have theirs plated with gold.

### 第 ti<sup>4</sup>

When it is used before numerals, it forms the ordinal numbers; thus  
第一 ti<sup>4</sup> i<sup>1</sup>, first.

.. 二 ti<sup>4</sup> érh<sup>4</sup>, second.

.. 五號 ti<sup>4</sup> wo<sup>3</sup> hao<sup>4</sup>, number five.

.. 十二頁 ti<sup>4</sup> shih<sup>2</sup> érh<sup>4</sup> yeh<sup>4</sup>, page twelve; but

十二頁 shih<sup>2</sup> érh<sup>4</sup> yeh<sup>4</sup>, twelve pages.

### 自己 tzü<sup>4</sup> (self) chi<sup>3</sup> (self)

These two together form the Reflexive pronoun. Both tzü<sup>4</sup> and chi<sup>3</sup> are also used alone in the same sense. When thus used tzü<sup>4</sup> precedes the verb with which it is joined, whereas chi<sup>3</sup> follows it. Sometimes **自家** tzü<sup>4</sup> chia<sup>1</sup> (home, family) are also used together in the same sense. Thus,

t'a<sup>1</sup> tzü<sup>4</sup> chi<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>0</sup> ch'ien<sup>2</sup> (錢 money) shih<sup>4</sup> (is) kou<sup>4</sup> (彀 enough) liao<sup>0</sup>,  
his own money is enough.

**先正自己後正人** [hsien<sup>1</sup> (first) chéng<sup>4</sup> (correct) tzü<sup>4</sup> chi<sup>3</sup>  
hou<sup>4</sup> (afterwards) chéng<sup>4</sup> jēn<sup>2</sup>] correct yourself before you correct others.

<ni<sup>3</sup>> **若** <shih<sup>4</sup>, to be> <tzü<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>3</sup>> **不願去我** <pu<sup>4</sup>>

**打發** <ni<sup>3</sup>> <ch'u<sup>1</sup>> [ni<sup>3</sup> (you) jo<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup> (if) tzü<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>3</sup> (self) pu<sup>2</sup> (not)  
yüan<sup>4</sup> (wish) ch'u<sup>4</sup> (to go) wo<sup>3</sup> pu<sup>4</sup> (not) ta<sup>3</sup> fa<sup>1</sup> (ta<sup>3</sup> fa<sup>1</sup>, to send) ni<sup>3</sup> (you)  
away (ch'u<sup>1</sup>)] if you do not go yourself, I shall not send you away.

**愛人如己** [ai<sup>4</sup> (to love) jēn<sup>2</sup> ju<sup>2</sup> (as, like) chi<sup>3</sup>] love others as  
yourself.

**自己** <pu<sup>4</sup>> **知道自己** <ti<sup>4</sup>> **毛病** [tzü<sup>4</sup> chi<sup>3</sup> pu<sup>4</sup> chih<sup>1</sup>  
tao<sup>0</sup> (chih<sup>1</sup> tao<sup>0</sup>, to know) tzü<sup>4</sup> chi<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>0</sup> mao<sup>2</sup> ping<sup>4</sup> (mao<sup>2</sup> ping<sup>4</sup>, a fault, a  
defect)] one does not know one's own fault.

<pu<sup>4</sup>> **關** <ni<sup>3</sup>> <ti<sup>4</sup>> **事是我自** <chi<sup>3</sup>> <ti<sup>4</sup>>  
**錯** [pu<sup>4</sup> kuan<sup>1</sup> (to connect, connected with) ni<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>0</sup> (your) shih<sup>4</sup> (affair) shih<sup>4</sup>  
(to be) wo<sup>3</sup> (I) tzü<sup>4</sup> chi<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>0</sup> ts'o<sup>4</sup> (mistake)] you are not responsible; it was my  
own mistake.

## 當 tang<sup>1</sup> or tang<sup>4</sup>

This character has two tones. In the first tone it denotes 'ought' and in the fourth tone it denotes 'to pawn'. Besides these two senses, it has other uses also:

### 1. In the first tone in the sense of 'should, ought' :—

He ought to do just as he said he would = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) what (tsēn<sup>3</sup> < 怎 > ma<sup>0</sup>) speak (說 shuo<sup>1</sup>, to speak)-ing (ti<sup>0</sup>) just (chiu<sup>4</sup>, then) should (tang<sup>1</sup>) what (tsēn<sup>3</sup> ma<sup>0</sup>) do (tso<sup>4</sup>).

Sometimes tang<sup>1</sup> is preceded by ying<sup>1</sup> (應 ying<sup>1</sup>, should) in the same sense :—

you should follow his example = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) should (ying<sup>1</sup>-tang<sup>1</sup>) learn (hsüeh<sup>2</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) example (樣 yang<sup>4</sup>, an example; yang<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, an example).

### 2. It denotes 'to serve in any capacity' ; as

One man cannot serve in two capacities = one (i<sup>1</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nēng<sup>2</sup>) serve (tang<sup>1</sup>) two (érh<sup>4</sup>) capacity (役 i<sup>4</sup>, to serve as a servant).

### 3. Face to face, in the presence of :—

If you have anything to say, you should say it face to face = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) speak (話 hua<sup>4</sup>, to speak) should (應該 ying<sup>1</sup> kai<sup>1</sup>, should ought) in the presence of (tang<sup>1</sup>) face (面 mien<sup>4</sup>, face and tang<sup>1</sup> mien<sup>4</sup>, face to face, in the presence of, before the face) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>).

### 4. At that time :—

Even at that time my father was suffering from fever = that (na<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) space or point of time (當 < érh<sup>2</sup> > tang<sup>1</sup> érh<sup>2</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) father (fu<sup>4</sup>-ch'in<sup>0</sup>) body (身 shēn<sup>1</sup>) on (shang<sup>4</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) fever (jē<sup>4</sup>).

### 1. In the fourth tone it means 'to pawn' :—

Tomorrow he should go to the town to pawn a pawn, but he has no time (leisure) = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) tomorrow (ming<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>) should (kai<sup>1</sup>) enter (進 chin<sup>4</sup>, to enter) town (ch'ēng<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'ū<sup>4</sup>) to pawn (tang<sup>4</sup>) thing (tung<sup>1</sup>-hsı<sup>0</sup>) but (tan<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) leisure (工夫 kung<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>1</sup>, time, i.e. leisure).

2. To suppose or consider :—

I suppose, he cannot speak Mandarin = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) suppose (tang<sup>4</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) can (hui<sup>4</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) Mandarin ( 官 話 kuan<sup>1</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, lit. official language).

3. The same :—

It is not possible to go and come back the same day = same (tang<sup>4</sup>) day (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nêng<sup>2</sup>) return (hui<sup>2</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>).

4. To regard as :—

He treats me as guest = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) take (na<sup>2</sup>) me (wo<sup>0</sup>) regard as (tang<sup>4</sup>) guest (k'o<sup>4</sup>) treat ( 待 tait<sup>4</sup>, to treat, to behave).

5. To deceive :—

You have been deceived by him = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) on (shang<sup>3</sup>, above) ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) deceive (tang<sup>4</sup>) [shang<sup>3</sup>-tang<sup>4</sup>, to deceive; shang<sup>3</sup> liao<sup>0</sup> tang<sup>4</sup>, to be deceived].

### REDUPLICATION

1. A noun is repeated in a distributive sense :—

Everybody says so, but you do not know whether it is true or false = everybody ((jên<sup>2</sup> jên<sup>2</sup>) all (tou<sup>1</sup>) so (chê<sup>4</sup> < this >-ma<sup>0</sup>, thus, so) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know (chih<sup>1</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) true ( 真 chên<sup>1</sup>, true, real) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) false ( 假 chia<sup>3</sup>, false).

2. Adjectives are often repeated for the sake of emphasis. Adjectives thus repeated generally become adverbs and are often followed by ti<sup>0</sup> (-s, -ing, -ly, one) :—

(i) The earth is round = earth (ti<sup>4</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) round ( 圓 yüen<sup>2</sup>) round (yüen<sup>2</sup>) one (ti<sup>0</sup>).

(ii) I am going home quickly and stay seven or eight days and then return = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) quickly (k'uai<sup>4</sup>.k'uai<sup>1</sup> <-ti<sup>0</sup>>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>) home (chia<sup>1</sup>) stop ( 住 ch'u<sup>4</sup>, to stop, to dwell) seven (ch'i<sup>1</sup>) eight (pa<sup>1</sup>) day (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) return (hui<sup>2</sup>) come (lai<sup>0</sup>).

(iii) The elder brother is constantly quarrelling with his younger brother = elder brother (ko<sup>1</sup>-ko<sup>0</sup>) constantly ( 常常 ch'ang<sup>2</sup> ch'ang<sup>2</sup>) with ( 和 ho<sup>2</sup>) his (t'a<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) younger brother (ti<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) quarrel [ta<sup>3</sup> (to strike)-架 chia<sup>4</sup> (to support), to quarrel, to fight].

(iv) Tomorrow my son wants to start early = tomorrow (ming<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) son (érh<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) early (早 早 tsao<sup>3</sup> tsao<sup>3</sup> <-ti<sup>0</sup>>) to start a journey [動 身 tung<sup>4</sup> (to start)-shēn<sup>1</sup> (the body), to start a journey].

(v) What he says is plainly contrary to reason = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) talk (hua<sup>4</sup>) plainly (明 明 ming<sup>2</sup> ming<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) close (合 ho<sup>2</sup>, to close) reason [情 理 ch'ing<sup>2</sup> (circumstances)-li<sup>3</sup> (reason), reason].

(vi) Do not disturb the baby, let him sleep quietly = do not (別 pieh<sup>2</sup>, do not) disturb [驚 動 ching<sup>1</sup> (to frighten)-tung<sup>4</sup> (to move), to disturb] baby (wa<sup>2</sup>-wa<sup>0</sup>) let (chiao<sup>4</sup>, to allow, to call) him (t'a<sup>0</sup>) quietly (安 安 an<sup>1</sup> an<sup>1</sup>) soundly (穩 < wēn<sup>3</sup> > wēn<sup>2</sup> wēn<sup>3</sup> <-ti<sup>0</sup>>) sleep (睡 shui<sup>4</sup>, to sleep) pa<sup>4</sup> (罷 a final particle).

(vii) Their reports are contradictory = their (t'a<sup>1</sup>-mēn-ti<sup>0</sup>) report (hua<sup>4</sup>, to speak, speech) contradictory [紛 紛 fēn<sup>1</sup> (confused)-fēn<sup>1</sup> <-pu<sup>4</sup> (not)-i<sup>1</sup> (one) > i.e. fēn<sup>1</sup>-fēn<sup>1</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>, contradictory, confused].

(viii) They frequently make a mistake in this matter = they (t'a<sup>1</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup>) frequently (往 往 wang<sup>2</sup> wang<sup>3</sup>) see (k'an<sup>4</sup>, to see) make a mistake (錯 ts'o<sup>4</sup>, to make a mistake) this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (chien<sup>4</sup>) matter (shih<sup>4</sup>, an affair).

(ix) The man has no great income—no more than barely enough to meet expenses = man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) great (ta<sup>4</sup>) income [進 項 chin<sup>4</sup> (to advance)-hsiang<sup>4</sup> (money, funds), income] also (yēh<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) pass over (過 kuo<sup>4</sup>, to pass over, to exceed) barely (僅 僅 chin<sup>2</sup>-chin<sup>3</sup> <-ti<sup>0</sup>>) enough (彀 kou<sup>4</sup>) expense (花 費 hua<sup>1</sup>-fei<sup>4</sup>, expense).

3. Verbs are also repeated partly for the sake of emphasis and partly due to specialize the action expressed. In some case i<sup>1</sup> (one) is inserted between the words, by which the second verb becomes a verbal noun ; e.g. k'an<sup>4</sup> (to see) i<sup>0</sup> (one) k'an<sup>0</sup> (to see), to look a look, i.e. to take a look.

(i) Thank you, Mr. Wang, for taking all this trouble = thank you (謝 謝 hsieh<sup>4</sup> hsieh<sup>0</sup>, thank you !) Wang Mr. (hsien<sup>1</sup>-shēng<sup>0</sup>) this (chē<sup>4</sup>) kind (樣 yang<sup>4</sup>, a kind, a sort) take trouble [費 心, fei<sup>4</sup> (to waste)-hsin<sup>1</sup>, to take trouble].

(ii) He and I are not on good terms ; he has come to take a look at the state of the affair = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) and (ho<sup>2</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) agreeable [合 式

ho<sup>2</sup> (to agree)-shih<sup>4</sup> (a pattern), suitable, agreeable] ; he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>) to take a look (k'an<sup>4</sup> k'an<sup>0</sup>) affair (shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'ing<sup>2</sup>, an affair, business)-'s (-ti<sup>0</sup>) state [ 情形 ch'ing<sup>2</sup> (circumstances)-hsing<sup>0</sup> (hsing<sup>2</sup>, form)].

#### OPTATIVE FORMS

願 yüan<sup>4</sup>, so wish—may, would that, I hope, I wish.

但願 tan<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>, a formula which expresses desire—oh that ! I trust, may, would that.

I wish you a safe journey = I wish (yüan<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) journey (lu<sup>4</sup>, road, path) peaceful (平安 p'ing<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>1</sup>).

I trust you will all sympathize with us = I trust (tan<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup>) all (tu<sup>1</sup>) sympathize with [ 豈 懈 t'i<sup>3</sup> (to show consideration)-hsü<sup>4</sup> or sü<sup>4</sup> (sympathy, pity), to sympathize with, to pity] us (wo<sup>3</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup>).

Miscellaneous words, phrases, and constructions.

#### 1. 若是 jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, if.

(i) If this man does not speak the truth, you ought to do just as you said you would = if (jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) this (chē<sup>4</sup>) piece (ko<sup>4</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>) truth [ 實話 shih<sup>2</sup> (real, true)-hua<sup>4</sup>, truth, fact] you (ni<sup>3</sup>) what (tsēn<sup>3</sup> < 怎 > -ma<sup>0</sup>) speak (shuo<sup>1</sup>)-ing (ti<sup>0</sup>) just (chiu<sup>4</sup>, when used before an active verb and referring to past time, it means just, then, at once) ought (tang<sup>1</sup>) what (tsēn<sup>3</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>) do (tso<sup>4</sup>).

(ii) If you go, he will also go = if (jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>), he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) also (yeh<sup>3</sup>) will (yao<sup>4</sup>, to want) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).

(iii) If there is nothing to prevent, my father will return in three days = if (jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) affair (shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'ing<sup>2</sup>) prevent [ 耽誤 tan<sup>1</sup> (to delay)-wu<sup>4</sup> (to delay), to prevent] three (san<sup>1</sup>) day (t'ien<sup>1</sup>) my (wo<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>) father (fu<sup>4</sup>-ch'in<sup>0</sup>) will (chiu<sup>4</sup>, then) return (hui<sup>2</sup>) come (lai<sup>0</sup>).

(iv) If you really said these things, you certainly have no conscience = if (jo<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) really (chēn<sup>1</sup>, true, real) say (shuo<sup>1</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) these (chē<sup>4</sup>-sieh<sup>0</sup>) talk (hua<sup>4</sup>), you (ni<sup>3</sup>) certainly ( 實 shih<sup>2</sup>, real, certainly) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) conscience [ 良心 liang<sup>2</sup> (good, natural)-hsin<sup>1</sup> (heart), conscience].

(v) If it is not Mr. Banerjee, then it must be Mr. Mukherjee = if (jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Banerjee Mr. (hsien<sup>1</sup>-shēng<sup>0</sup>) then (chiu<sup>4</sup>) must ( 必 pi<sup>4</sup>, must, certainly) is (shih<sup>4</sup>) Mukherjee Mr. (hsien<sup>1</sup>-shēng<sup>0</sup>). [Note. If..... then must :—jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>..... chiu<sup>4</sup> pi<sup>4</sup>].

If you do good, you will of course receive good = if (jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) do (行 hsing<sup>2</sup>, to do) because (wei<sup>4</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup>), of course [自能 tzü<sup>4</sup> (self, from)-nêng<sup>2</sup> (able, can), of course necessarily] get (得 tê<sup>2</sup>, to get) good (hao<sup>3</sup>) ti<sup>0</sup>. [Note. If.....of course, necessarily:—jo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>.....tzü<sup>4</sup> ni<sup>3</sup> ng<sup>2</sup>].

2. 究竟 chiu<sup>1</sup>-ching<sup>4</sup>, after all, in the end, finally; where both mean 'after all, in the end, finally'.

3. 差不多 ch'a<sup>4</sup> pu<sup>4</sup> to<sup>1</sup>, almost, about.

After all the English language is now current almost all over the world = after all (chiu<sup>1</sup>-ching<sup>4</sup>) now (如今 ju<sup>2</sup>-chin<sup>1</sup>) English language (英文 ying<sup>1</sup> wén<sup>2</sup>) almost (ch'a<sup>4</sup> pu<sup>4</sup> to<sup>1</sup>) current [通行 t'ung<sup>1</sup> (through, all, the whole)-hsing<sup>2</sup> (to walk, to travel), everywhere current] whole world (天下 t'ien<sup>1</sup>-hsia<sup>4</sup>).

4. 一共 i<sup>2</sup> kung<sup>4</sup>, in all, altogether.

India has in all four hundred millions of people = India (yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>0</sup>) in all (i<sup>2</sup> kung<sup>4</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) four (ssü<sup>4</sup>) hundred million (萬萬 wan<sup>4</sup> wan<sup>4</sup>) man (jén<sup>2</sup>).

---

有 yu<sup>3</sup>, to have.

It is sometimes used before a noun to give it the adjectival sense. Thus—

名 ming<sup>2</sup>, fame; but yu<sup>3</sup> ming<sup>2</sup>, famous.

勢力 shih<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>0</sup>, influence; where shih<sup>4</sup> means 'influence, power' and li<sup>4</sup> 'power'; but yu<sup>3</sup> shih<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>0</sup>, influential.

Two negatives—pu<sup>4</sup> and mei<sup>2</sup>.

Beginners at first find a difficulty in distinguishing between the two negatives pu<sup>4</sup> and mei<sup>2</sup>. Only experience will enable them to decide without hesitation which of the two should be used in particular cases. Much difficulty of selection will be removed if it be borne in mind that pu<sup>4</sup> is never used with 'to have' and mei<sup>2</sup> with 'to be', further, that mei<sup>2</sup> is generally used in connection with past action. Thus:

Don't go = not (pu<sup>2</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).

I do not know = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) know (chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>0</sup>).

It will not do = not (pu<sup>4</sup>) able ( 可 能 k'o<sup>2</sup>.i<sup>3</sup>, to be able, can).

No, I cannot do it = no (pu<sup>4</sup>), I (wo<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) can (nêng<sup>2</sup>) do (tso<sup>4</sup>).

He is not going = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).

The following peculiarities in the use of mei<sup>2</sup> should be noted :—

(a) He has gone = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>2</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>).

(b) He has not gone = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>).

(c) Dinner is ready = food (fan<sup>4</sup>) ready (hao<sup>3</sup>, good) liao<sup>0</sup>.

(d) Dinner is not yet ready = food (fan<sup>4</sup>) yet (hai<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) ready (hao<sup>3</sup>).

(e) Not yet = yet (hai<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>).

(f) Pu<sup>4</sup> and mei<sup>2</sup> in Interrogative sentences :—

(g) Will it do ? = able (k'o<sup>2</sup>.i<sup>3</sup>) not (pu<sup>4</sup>) able (k'o<sup>2</sup>.i<sup>3</sup>).

(h) Do you want it ? = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>).

(i) Has he come ? = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) come (lai<sup>2</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>).

(j) Have you got any money ? = you (ni<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) money (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>) not (mei<sup>2</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>).

*Note.*—Between two verbs pu<sup>4</sup> makes an interrogative.

#### INTERJECTIONS.

啊 a<sup>1</sup>, Oh ! ah !—expresses a sudden occurrence of thought, coupled sometimes with joy and sometimes with grief. Thus :

Oh ! you have just thought of it = Oh ! (a<sup>1</sup>) you (ni<sup>3</sup>) think of (hsiang<sup>2</sup>.ch'i<sup>3</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>; where hsiang<sup>3</sup>, to think, ch'i<sup>3</sup>, to rise and lai<sup>2</sup>, to come) la<sup>0</sup> (a final particle).

Ah ! Has he already gone ? My idea was to go again and earnestly entreat him = ah ! (a<sup>1</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) already (i<sup>3</sup>.ching<sup>1</sup>) go (tsou<sup>3</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>) ma<sup>0</sup> ( 嘴 ma<sup>4</sup>, an interrogative particle), my (wo<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) idea ( 意思 i<sup>4</sup>.szü<sup>1</sup> or ssü<sup>1</sup>, an idea) also (hai<sup>2</sup>, yet, also) was (shih<sup>4</sup>) earnestly ( 苦苦 k'u<sup>3</sup>.k'u<sup>3</sup> <-ti<sup>0</sup>>, earnestly, urgently; k'u<sup>3</sup> means 'urgent, unpleasant, bitter, painful) go (ch'ü<sup>4</sup>) entreat ( 哀告 ai<sup>1</sup>.kao<sup>4</sup>, to entreat, to beseech; ai<sup>1</sup> means 'to beseech' and kao<sup>4</sup> 'to tell') him (t'a<sup>0</sup>).

嗚 呼 wu<sup>1</sup> hu<sup>1</sup>, alas !—expresses grief. Thus :

Alas ! your father died = alas (wu<sup>1</sup> hu<sup>1</sup>) your (ni<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>) father (fu<sup>4</sup>.ch'in<sup>0</sup>) die ( 死亡 szü<sup>3</sup>.wang<sup>2</sup>)-ed (liao<sup>0</sup>).

好 呀 hao<sup>3</sup> ya<sup>1</sup>, hurrah !—expresses joy. Thus :

Hurrah ! he is still living = hurrah ! (hao<sup>3</sup> ya<sup>1</sup>) he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) yet (hia<sup>2</sup>) at (tsai<sup>4</sup>).

There are certain phrases which are used like Interjections to express some strong feeling or emotion :—

Welcome ! = joy (歡 huan<sup>1</sup>) welcome (迎 ying<sup>2</sup>, to welcome).

Good-bye ! = again (再 tsai<sup>4</sup>) see (見 chien<sup>4</sup>) or again (tsai<sup>4</sup>) meet (會 hui<sup>4</sup>).

Farewell ! = tsai<sup>4</sup> chien<sup>4</sup> or tsai<sup>4</sup> hui<sup>4</sup>.

There are certain moods of verbs and parts of speech which can be used in an Interjectional sense :—

What, interj.—to<sup>1</sup> (多) ma<sup>0</sup> ; but what, pron. and adj.—shēn<sup>2</sup> ma<sup>0</sup>.

What a good man ! = what (to<sup>1</sup> ma<sup>0</sup>) good (hao<sup>3</sup> ti<sup>0</sup>) man (jēn<sup>2</sup>).

## APPENDIX II

Weights [重量 chung<sup>4</sup> (heavy) liang<sup>4</sup> (measure) or 輕重 ch'ing<sup>1</sup> (light) chung<sup>4</sup>] and measures [度量 tu<sup>4</sup> (measure) liang<sup>4</sup>]:

Length [長度 ch'ang<sup>2</sup> (long) tu<sup>4</sup>] measure:—

寸 ts'un<sup>4</sup> (inch).

尺 ch'ih<sup>3</sup> (foot).

丈 chang<sup>4</sup> (about 10 feet).

引 yin<sup>3</sup> (about 109 feet).

里 li<sup>3</sup> (about 1,890 feet), corresponding to English 'mile'.

Area [面積 mien<sup>4</sup> (surface) chi<sup>10</sup> (chi<sup>1</sup>, to amass)] measure:—

分 fēn<sup>1</sup> (one-tenth of an inch).

畝 mou<sup>3</sup> (acre).

頃 ch'ing<sup>3</sup> (100 mou<sup>3</sup>).

Capacity [容量 jung<sup>2</sup> (capacity) liang<sup>4</sup>] measure:—

升 shēng<sup>1</sup> (a pint).

斗 tou<sup>3</sup> (bushel; about 2 gallons).

石 shih<sup>2</sup> (about 26 gallons).

Weight measure:—

分 fēn<sup>1</sup> (one-hundredth part of a tael or ounce; about 4 grains).

錢 ch'ien<sup>2</sup> (about 0.1102 ounce).

兩 liang<sup>3</sup> (tael or about 1 ounce).

斤 chin<sup>1</sup> (catty or about 1 pound).

擔 tan<sup>4</sup> (picul or about 110 pounds).

Money ( 錢 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>)

The expressions regarding money are given below:

錢 ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, money or dollar.

洋 .. yang<sup>2</sup> ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, dollar (foreign).

圓 yüan<sup>2</sup> (silver coin, like Indian rupee) = 10 chio<sup>2</sup> or mao<sup>2</sup>.

角 chio<sup>2</sup>, generally known as 毛 mao<sup>2</sup> (silver coin, like Indian anna-piece) = 10 fēn<sup>1</sup>.

分 fēn<sup>1</sup> (copper coin, like Indian pice).

The classifier for money is k'uai<sup>4</sup>; thus:

i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, one dollar.

i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> pan<sup>4</sup> ( 半 ) ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, one dollar and a half.

I have \$5.05 = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) five (wu<sup>3</sup>) classifier (k'uai<sup>4</sup>) zero (ling<sup>2</sup>) five (wu<sup>3</sup>) cent (fēn<sup>1</sup>) dollar (yang<sup>2</sup> ch'ien<sup>2</sup>).

He has \$1.15 = he (t'a<sup>1</sup>) has (yu<sup>3</sup>) one (i<sup>2</sup>) classifier (k'uai<sup>4</sup>) one (i<sup>1</sup>) ten cents (mao<sup>2</sup>) five (wu<sup>3</sup>) cent (fēn<sup>1</sup>) money (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>).

Do you want money? = want (yao<sup>4</sup>) money (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>) not (pu<sup>2</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>)?

I do not want money = not (pu<sup>2</sup>) want (yao<sup>4</sup>) money (ch'ien<sup>2</sup>).

I have some = I (wo<sup>3</sup>) have (yu<sup>3</sup>) some (— 些 i<sup>4</sup> hsieh<sup>1</sup>).

The gold dollar is unknown and all moneys are of silver unless the classifier for copper cash, which is ko<sup>4</sup>, is used.

## CONCORDANCE TO WORDS

The black-faced figures that follow the page numbers indicate  
the numerical order of the word on the page.

### A

1. Abandon, *v.*—chüeh<sup>2</sup>, 143, 4. ✓ 2
2. Ability, *n.*—nêng<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>4</sup>, 18, 1-2; pêng<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>, 120, 85; ts'ai<sup>2</sup>.nêng<sup>2</sup>, 126, 55.
3. Able, *adj.*—hui<sup>4</sup>, 18, 3; k'o<sup>3</sup>.nêng<sup>2</sup>, 18, 10.
4. Above, *n., adj., adv., prep.*—shang<sup>4</sup>, 9, 33.
5. Abuse, *v.*—ma<sup>4</sup>, 137, 38.
6. Accept, *v.*—chich<sup>1</sup>.shou<sup>4</sup>, 18, 13-14; chieh<sup>1</sup>, 48, 32.
7. According to, *adv.*—an<sup>4</sup>.cho<sup>2</sup>, 27, 30-31; an<sup>4</sup>.chao<sup>4</sup>, 61, 62; chao<sup>4</sup>, 119, 67.
8. Account, *n.*—chang<sup>4</sup>.mu<sup>0</sup>, 124, 18.
9. Achieve (success), *v.*—ch'êng<sup>2</sup>.kung<sup>1</sup>, 132, 42.
10. Acknowledge, *v.*—ta<sup>2</sup>.fu<sup>0</sup>, 18, 15-16; jên<sup>4</sup>, 137, 44.
11. Act (decision of the legislative body), *n.*—fa<sup>3</sup>.an<sup>4</sup>; fa<sup>3</sup>.ling<sup>4</sup>, 123, 10.
12. Acting (officiating), *adj.*—tai<sup>4</sup>, 107, 77.
13. Actor, *n.*—hsü<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 78, 10.
14. Add, *v.*—chia<sup>1</sup>, 4, 17.
15. Address (place where a person may be communicated with), *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>3</sup>, 47, 11; (lecture or to lecture), *n.*, *v.*—chiang<sup>2</sup>.yen<sup>3</sup>; yen<sup>3</sup>.shuo<sup>1</sup>, 103, 12.
16. Adjourn, *v.*—san<sup>4</sup>, 124, 24. ✓
17. Administration, *n.*—hsing<sup>2</sup>.chêng<sup>4</sup>, 123, 6.
18. Admit, *v.*—jung<sup>2</sup>, 136, 15.
19. Advice, *n.*—chung<sup>1</sup>.kao<sup>4</sup>, 141, 11.
20. Advise, *v.*—hsün<sup>4</sup>, 107, 73.
21. Aeroplane, *n.*—fei<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>1</sup>, 48, 22.
22. Affair, *n.*—shih<sup>4</sup>.ch'ing<sup>0</sup>, 124, 25.
23. Affection, *n.*—ai<sup>4</sup>, 19, 36.
24. Afghanistan, *n.*—a<sup>1</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>.han<sup>4</sup>, 51, 10.
25. Africa, *n.*—fei<sup>1</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup>, 99, 23.
26. After, *adv.*—hou<sup>4</sup>, 29, 10.
27. Afterwards, *adv.*—hou<sup>4</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>, 29, 11.
28. Again, *adv.*—tsai<sup>4</sup>, 27, 44; yu<sup>4</sup>, 57, 21; 107, 78.
29. Age, *n.*—sui<sup>4</sup>, 40, 13.
30. Aged, *adj.*—lao<sup>3</sup>, 20, 8.
31. Ago, *adv.*—ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, 29, 9.
32. Agreement, *n.*—hsieh<sup>2</sup>.ting<sup>4</sup>, 112, 50; 120, 79.
33. Aide-de-camp, *n.*—fu<sup>4</sup>.kuan<sup>1</sup>, 117, 39.
34. Air (atmosphere), *n.*—k'ung<sup>1</sup>.ch'i<sup>4</sup>, 57, 2.

35. Air-force, *n.*—k'ung<sup>1</sup>.chün<sup>1</sup>, 67, 18.
36. Alarm-clock, *n.*—hsing<sup>3</sup>.chung<sup>1</sup>, 71, 34.
37. Algebra, *n.*—tai<sup>4</sup>.shu<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 104, 37.
38. All, *adj.*—t'ung<sup>2</sup>.t'ung<sup>0</sup>, 6, 28; so<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>3</sup>, 100, 35; 107, 68; 143, 41; t'ung<sup>2</sup>, 107, 75.
39. Allowance (subsidy), *n.*—chin<sup>1</sup>.t'ieh<sup>1</sup>, 118, 55.
40. Almond, *n.*—hsing<sup>4</sup>.érh<sup>0</sup>, 93, 14.
41. Almost, *adv.*—ch'a<sup>4</sup>.pu<sup>0</sup>.to<sup>1</sup>, 141, 12.
42. Alone, *adv.*—tan<sup>1</sup>.tu<sup>2</sup>, 141, 10.
43. Already, *adv.*—i<sup>3</sup>.ching<sup>0</sup>, 12, 1.
44. Also, *adv.*—yeh<sup>3</sup>, 25, 23; yu<sup>4</sup>, 107, 78.
45. Alter, *v.*—pien<sup>4</sup>, 18, 18; kai<sup>3</sup>, 45, 51.
46. Although, *conj.*—sui<sup>1</sup>.jan<sup>2</sup>, 30, 25.
47. Altogether, *adv.*—i<sup>2</sup>.kung<sup>4</sup>, 64, 30.
48. Always, *adv.*—shih<sup>2</sup>.ch'ang<sup>2</sup>; ch'ang<sup>2</sup>.ch'ang<sup>2</sup>, 86, 39.
49. Ambassador, *n.*—ta<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>3</sup>, 117, 26.
50. America, *n.*—mei<sup>3</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>, 51, 8.
51. And, *conj.*—kén<sup>1</sup>, 18, 25; t'ung<sup>2</sup>, 29, 3; ho<sup>2</sup>, 29, 4; i<sup>4</sup>, 72, 45; yu<sup>4</sup>, 107, 78; érh<sup>2</sup>, 119, 65.
52. Animal, *n.*—tung<sup>4</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup>, 88, 1; (domestic) chin<sup>1</sup>.ch'u<sup>4</sup>, 88, 3.
53. Answer, *v.*—ta<sup>2</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>, 18, 15-16.
54. Ant, *n.*—ma<sup>2</sup>.i<sup>3</sup>, 89, 26.
55. Anthropology, *n.*—jén<sup>2</sup>.lei<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 49.
56. Anybody, *n.*—shui<sup>2</sup>, 130, 11.
57. Anyone, *n.*—shui<sup>2</sup>, 130, 11.
58. Anything, *n.*—shén<sup>2</sup>.ma<sup>0</sup>, 130, 13.
59. Anywhere, *adv.*—shén<sup>2</sup>.ma<sup>0</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>.tang<sup>0</sup>, 130, 14.
60. Appetite, *n.*—wei<sup>4</sup>.k'ou<sup>0</sup>, 136, 17.
61. Apple, *n.*—p'in<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>3</sup>, 93, 3.
62. Application, *n.*—ch'ing<sup>3</sup>.ch'u<sup>2</sup>, 142, 13.
63. Apply (rouge), *v.*—tien<sup>3</sup>, 131, 37.
64. Apricot, *n.*—hsing<sup>4</sup>.érh<sup>0</sup>, 93, 14.
65. April, *n.*—ssü<sup>4</sup>.yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 16.
66. Arabia, *n.*—a<sup>1</sup>.la<sup>3</sup>.pai<sup>3</sup>, 51, 13.
67. Area, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>0</sup>, 118, 44.
68. Argue, *v.*—chêng<sup>1</sup>.lun<sup>4</sup>, 143, 44.
69. Arise, *v.*—chan<sup>4</sup>.ch'i<sup>0</sup>.lai<sup>0</sup>, 100, 44.
70. Arithmetic, *n.*—suan<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 104, 36.
71. Army, *n.*—lu<sup>4</sup>.chün<sup>1</sup>, 67, 16.
72. Arouse, *v.*—hsing<sup>3</sup>, 71, 32.
73. Arrive, *v.*—tao<sup>4</sup>, 18, 17.
74. Arts, *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 103, 15.
75. Ashtray, *n.*—yen<sup>1</sup>.hui<sup>1</sup>.tien<sup>2</sup>, 68, 34.

76. As, *conj.*—ju<sup>2</sup>, 4, 19.  
 77. Asia, *n.*—ya<sup>3</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup>, 99, 22.  
 78. Ask, *v.*—wén<sup>4</sup>, 9, 32.  
 79. Asleep, *adj.*—shui<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>, 71, 29.  
 80. Ass, *n.*—lù<sup>2</sup>, 88, 10.  
 81. Astrology, *n.*—t'ien<sup>1</sup>-wén<sup>2</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 106, 55.  
 82. Astronomy, *n.*—t'ien<sup>1</sup>-wén<sup>2</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 106, 55.  
 83. At, *prep.*—tsai<sup>4</sup>, 6, 29; 29, 1.  
 84. Atlas, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-t'u<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>1</sup>, 106, 57.  
 85. At once, *adv.*—ma<sup>3</sup>-shang<sup>4</sup>, 144, 47.  
 86. At present, *adv.*—hsien<sup>4</sup>-tsai<sup>4</sup>, 45, 56.  
 87. Attack, *n.v.*—kung<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>, 112, 45.  
 88. Attention, *n.*—chu<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>0</sup>, 141, 9.  
 89. August, *n.*—pa<sup>2</sup>-yueh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 20.  
 90. Aunt, *n.*—ku<sup>1</sup>-mu<sup>3</sup>; shu<sup>2</sup>-mu<sup>3</sup>, 3, 24.  
 91. Australia, *n.*—ao<sup>4</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup>, 99, 24.  
 92. Author, *n.*—chu<sup>4</sup>-tsai<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>, 64, 16.  
 93. Autumn, *n.*—ch'iu<sup>1</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 10.  
 94. Awake, *v.*—hsing<sup>3</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>, 71, 33.  
 95. Awaken, *v.*—chia<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>3</sup>, 100, 45.

## B

96. Baby, *n.*—ying<sup>1</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup>; wa<sup>2</sup>-wa<sup>0</sup>, 130, 1.  
 97. Bachelor, *n.*—kuan<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>1</sup>, 95, 38; kuan<sup>1</sup>-kun<sup>4</sup>, 95, 39.  
 98. Bachelor of Arts (B.A.), *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 25.  
 99. Bachelor of Engineering (B.E.), *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>-ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 34.  
 100. Bachelor of Law (LL.B.), *n.*—fa<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 27.  
 101. Bachelor of Medicine (M.B.), *n.*—i<sup>1</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 28.  
 102. Bachelor of Science (B.Sc.), *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 26.  
 103. Bad, *adj.*—huai<sup>4</sup>, 20, 2.  
 104. Bag (leather), *n.*—p'i<sup>2</sup>-pao<sup>1</sup>, 53, 2; 107, 71.  
 105. Baggage, *n.*—hsing<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, 66, 12.  
 106. Ball (round mass), *n.*—ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, 68, 39.  
 107. Bamboo, *n.*—chu<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 94, 28.  
 108. Banana, *n.*—hsiang<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, 93, 1.  
 109. Bank (financial establishment), *n.*—yin<sup>2</sup>-hang<sup>2</sup>, 43, 10.  
 110. Barber, *n.*—li<sup>2</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>-chiang<sup>4</sup>, 71, 16.  
 111. Barber-shop, *n.*—li<sup>2</sup>-fa<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 71, 17.  
 112. Bark (as a dog), *v.*—chia<sup>4</sup>, 90, 53.  
 113. Base (to found), *v.*—kēn<sup>1</sup>-chu<sup>4</sup>, 99, 20.  
 114. Basket-ball, *n.*—lan<sup>2</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, 68, 40.  
 115. Bathe, *v.*—hsii<sup>2</sup>-tsao<sup>3</sup>, 12, 29.  
 116. Bath-room, *n.*—yü<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 70, 2.  
 117. Be, *v.*—shih<sup>4</sup>, 2, 10.  
 118. Bear (animal)—hsiuung<sup>2</sup>, 88, 11.  
 119. Beast (wild), *n.*—yeh<sup>3</sup>-shou<sup>4</sup>, 88, 2.  
 120. Beat, *v.*—ta<sup>3</sup>, 54, 19.  
 121. Beautiful, *adj.*—mei<sup>3</sup>; p'iao<sup>1</sup>-liang<sup>4</sup>, 20, 4-5.  
 122. Because, *conj.*—yin<sup>1</sup>-wei<sup>4</sup>, 30, 24.  
 123. Beckon, *v.*—chao<sup>1</sup>, 95, 55.  
 124. Become, *v.*—pien<sup>4</sup>, 18, 18.  
 125. Bed, *n.*—ch'uang<sup>2</sup>, 120, 86.  
 126. Bed-room, *n.*—wo<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 70, 1.  
 127. Bee, *n.*—mi<sup>4</sup>-fēng<sup>1</sup>, 93, 12.

128. Before, *adv. conj.*—ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, 29, 9; t'ou<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, 29, 14-15.  
 129. Bog, *v.*—ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, 12, 31.  
 130. Begin, *v.*—k'ai<sup>1</sup>, 19, 38; k'ai<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>3</sup>, 91, 60.  
 131. Behave, *v.*—tai<sup>4</sup>, 86, 37; 118, 48.  
 132. Behind, *adv. prep.*—hou<sup>4</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 29, 12-13.  
 133. Bell, *n.*—chung<sup>1</sup>, 27, 25.  
 134. Belong to, *v.*—shu<sup>3</sup>-yü<sup>2</sup>, 113, 63.  
 135. Beloved, *adj.*—ch'in<sup>1</sup>-ai<sup>4</sup>, 20, 20-21.  
 136. Below, *adv. prep.*—hsia<sup>4</sup>, 9, 34.  
 137. Belt (leather), *n.*—p'i<sup>2</sup>-tai<sup>4</sup>, 45, 36-37.  
 138. Beware of, *v.*—chin<sup>3</sup>-fang<sup>2</sup>, 137, 34.  
 139. Bible, *n.*—shêng<sup>4</sup>-ching<sup>1</sup>; shêng<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>, 98, 11.  
 140. Bicycle, *n.*—chia<sup>3</sup>-t'a<sup>4</sup>-ch'êl<sup>1</sup>, 85, 23.  
 141. Big, *adj.*—ta<sup>4</sup>, 11, 20.  
 142. Bill (parliamentary), *n.*—i<sup>4</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>, 123, 9.  
 143. Biology, *n.*—shêng<sup>1</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 41.  
 144. Bird, *n.*—miao<sup>3</sup>, 89, 35.  
 145. Biscuit, *n.*—ping<sup>3</sup>-kan<sup>1</sup>, 94, 20.  
 146. Bite, *v.*—yao<sup>3</sup>, 90, 54.  
 147. Bitter, *adj.*—k'u<sup>3</sup>, 95, 47.  
 148. Black, *adj.*—hei<sup>1</sup> (mostly *pron.* hei<sup>1</sup>), 31, 60.  
 149. Bless, *v.*—chu<sup>4</sup>, 132, 41.  
 150. Blind, *adj.*—hsia<sup>1</sup>, 20, 14.  
 151. Blindly, *adv.*—hu<sup>2</sup>, 41, 31.  
 152. Blotting paper, *n.*—hsî<sup>1</sup>-mo<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>, 80, 5.  
 153. Blow (as the wind), *v.*—kua<sup>1</sup>, 57, 16.  
 154. Blow away, *v.*—kua<sup>1</sup>-san<sup>4</sup>, 57, 16-17.  
 155. Blue, *adj.*—lan<sup>2</sup>, 31, 64.  
 156. Boar, *n.*—yeh<sup>3</sup>-chu<sup>1</sup>, 88, 12.  
 157. Board (wood), *n.*—pan<sup>3</sup>, 31, 55.  
 158. Boat, *n.*—hsiao<sup>3</sup>-ch'uan<sup>2</sup>, 48, 25.  
 159. Body, *n.*—shén<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 34, 1.  
 160. Bolshevik party, *n.*—pu<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 7.  
 161. Bomb, *n.*—cha<sup>4</sup>-tan<sup>4</sup>, 67, 28.  
 162. Book, *n.*—shu<sup>1</sup>, 11, 9.  
 163. Book-case, *n.*—shu<sup>1</sup>-kuei<sup>4</sup>, 64, 20.  
 164. Book-shelf, *n.*—shu<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>, 64, 19.  
 165. Borrow, *v.*—chieh<sup>4</sup> (tsieh<sup>4</sup>), 19, 35.  
 166. Borrowing slip (book-ticket), *n.*—chieh<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-tan<sup>1</sup>, 64, 22.  
 167. Botany, *n.*—chih<sup>2</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 46.  
 168. Bottle, *n.*—p'ing<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 37, 41.  
 169. Box, *n.*—hsiang<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 110, 23.  
 170. Boy, *n.*—hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hai<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 3, 14.  
 171. Branch (of a tree), *n.*—chih<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 94, 31.  
 172. Brave, *adj.*—yung<sup>3</sup>, 20, 27.  
 173. Bray, *v.*—ming<sup>2</sup>, 90, 55.  
 174. Bread, *n.*—mien<sup>4</sup>-pao<sup>1</sup>, 36, 3-4.  
 175. Break, *v.*—p'o<sup>4</sup>, 147, 1; ta<sup>3</sup>-p'o<sup>4</sup>, 147, 2.  
 176. Breakdown, *n.*—pêng<sup>1</sup>-k'uei<sup>4</sup>, 112, 58.  
 177. Breakfast, *n.*—tsao<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>, 84, 12; tsao<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>, 84, 13.  
 178. Break off, *v.*—tuan<sup>4</sup>-chueh<sup>0</sup>, 120, 89.  
 179. Bribe, *n. v.*—hui<sup>4</sup>, 131, 23.

180. Bridge, *n.*—ch'iao<sup>2</sup>, 85, 31.  
 181. Brigadier, *n.*—lü<sup>2</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 117, 31.  
 182. Bright, *adj.*—liang<sup>4</sup>, 83, 18.  
 183. Brightness, *n.*—liang<sup>4</sup>, 83, 18.  
 184. Bring, *v.*—na<sup>2</sup>...lai<sup>0</sup>, 8, 8; tai<sup>4</sup>, 12, 30.  
 185. Broad, *adj.*—k'uo<sup>4</sup>, 20, 12.  
 186. Brother, *n.*—hsien<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup> (or ti<sup>4</sup>.hsien<sup>1</sup>), 3, 18.  
 187. Brush, *n.*—shua<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 70, 10.  
 188. Buddhism, *n.*—fo<sup>2</sup>.chia<sup>4</sup>, 98, 6.  
 189. Budget, *n.*—yü<sup>4</sup>.suan<sup>4</sup>.piao<sup>3</sup>, 124, 14.  
 190. Buffalo, *n.*—shui<sup>3</sup>.niu<sup>2</sup>, 88, 14.  
 191. Bug, *n.*—ch'ou<sup>4</sup>.ch'ung<sup>2</sup>, 89, 29.  
 192. Bull, *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>.niu<sup>2</sup>, 88, 15.  
 193. Bullet, *n.*—ch'iang<sup>1</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>, 67, 22; tzü<sup>3</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>, 67, 23.  
 194. Burma, *n.*—mien<sup>3</sup>.tien<sup>4</sup>, 113, 65.  
 195. Bus, *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>.kung<sup>4</sup>.ch'i<sup>4</sup>.ch'ü<sup>1</sup>, 48, 21.  
 196. Business (affair), *n.*—shih<sup>4</sup>.ch'ing<sup>0</sup>, 74, 4.  
 197. Busy, *adj.*—mang<sup>2</sup>, 20, 28.  
 198. But, *conj.*—tan<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>, 30, 34; k'o<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>, 119, 72; 135, 7.  
 199. Butter, *n.*—niu<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>2</sup>, 36, 5-6.  
 200. Buy, *v.*—mai<sup>3</sup>, 8, 19.

### C

201. Cabbage, *n.*—pai<sup>2</sup>.ts'ai<sup>4</sup>, 36, 19.  
 202. Cadet, *n.*—lu<sup>4</sup>.chün<sup>1</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.shéng<sup>0</sup>, 117, 32.  
 203. Cake, *n.*—ping<sup>3</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 36, 14.  
 204. Calamity, *n.*—huo<sup>4</sup>, 157, 50.  
 205. Calculate, *v.*—suan<sup>4</sup>, 153, 19.  
 206. Calculation, *n.*—suan<sup>4</sup>, 153, 19.  
 207. Call (by voice), *v.*—chia<sup>4</sup>, 8, 16; 119, 58; (by beckon) chao<sup>1</sup>, 95, 55.  
 208. Camera, *n.*—chao<sup>4</sup>.hsiang<sup>4</sup>.chil<sup>1</sup>, 84, 17.  
 209. Can (to be able), *v.*—nêng<sup>2</sup>, 18, 1; hui<sup>4</sup>, 18, 3.  
 210. Cap, *n.*—mao<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 45, 35.  
 211. Capital (city), *n.*—shou<sup>3</sup>.tu<sup>1</sup>, 119, 66.  
 212. Capitalism, *n.*—tzü<sup>1</sup>.pén<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>, 110, 13.  
 213. Card, *n.*—p'ai<sup>2</sup>, 142, 26.  
 214. Care, *n.*—hsiao<sup>3</sup>.hsin<sup>1</sup>, 142, 28.  
 215. Careful, *adj.*—hsiao<sup>3</sup>.hsin<sup>0</sup>, 142, 28.  
 216. Carry (to bring or take along), *v.*—tai<sup>4</sup>, 12, 30.  
 217. Cart, *n.*—ch'ü<sup>1</sup>, 48, 16.  
 218. Cartoon, *n.*—man<sup>4</sup>.hua<sup>4</sup>, 137, 33.  
 219. Cartridge, *n.*—ch'iang<sup>1</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>, 67, 22; tzü<sup>3</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>, 67, 23.  
 220. Case, *n.*—(box) hsiang<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 110, 23; (situation) ch'ing<sup>2</sup>.hsing<sup>0</sup>, 119, 71; (legal) an<sup>4</sup>.chien<sup>4</sup>, 66, 8.  
 221. Cat, *n.*—mao<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 89, 18.  
 222. Catalogue (of books), *n.*—shu<sup>1</sup>.mu<sup>4</sup>, 64, 18.  
 223. Cause, *n.*—yüan<sup>2</sup>.yin<sup>1</sup>, 142, 23. *v.*—chia<sup>4</sup>, 119, 58.  
 224. Central Government, *n.*—chung<sup>1</sup>.yang<sup>1</sup>.chéng<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>3</sup>, 116, 14.  
 225. Ceremony, *n.*—tien<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>, 119, 63.  
 226. Certainly, *adv.*—i<sup>2</sup>.ting<sup>4</sup>, 31, 43.  
 227. Ceylon, *n.* (hsi<sup>2</sup>.lan<sup>2</sup>)—shih<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>, 51, 9.

228. Chair, *n.*—i<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 31, 54.  
 229. Chairman (of the Council), *n.*—i<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 123, 7; (of a meeting or committee) chü<sup>2</sup>.hsü<sup>2</sup>, 115, 13.  
 230. Chalk, *n.*—fén<sup>2</sup>.pi<sup>3</sup>, 11, 23.  
 231. Chancellor (of a university), *n.*—hsiao<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 102, 2.  
 232. Change, *v.*—pien<sup>4</sup>, 18, 18; kai<sup>3</sup>, 45, 51; huan<sup>4</sup>, 76, 39; pien<sup>4</sup>.hua<sup>4</sup>, 76, 40.  
 233. Chapter (of a book), *n.*—chang<sup>1</sup>.53, 6.  
 234. Character (written symbol) *n.*—tzü<sup>4</sup>, 11, 10.  
 235. Chargé d'affaires, *n.*—shu<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.kung<sup>1</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>, 117, 30.  
 236. Cheap (low in price), *adj.*—p'ien<sup>2</sup>.i<sup>0</sup>, 20, 22-23.  
 237. Cheated (to be)—shang<sup>4</sup>.tang<sup>4</sup>, 143, 43.  
 238. Cheater, *n.*—p'ien<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 143, 42.  
 239. Chemistry, *n.*—hua<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 40.  
 240. Chest (of body), *n.*—hsien<sup>1</sup>, 34, 17.  
 241. Chicken, *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>, 37, 28.  
 242. Chilly, *adj.*—lêng<sup>3</sup>, 25, 21; ch'i<sup>1</sup>, 25, 22.  
 243. China, *n.*—chung<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>, 51, 2.  
 244. Chinese (language), *n.* (chung<sup>1</sup>.wén<sup>2</sup>)—hua<sup>2</sup>.wén<sup>2</sup>, 63, 8.  
 245. Chocolate, *n.*—chu<sup>1</sup>.ku<sup>3</sup>.li<sup>4</sup>, 94, 21.  
 246. Cholera, *n.*—huo<sup>4</sup>.luan<sup>4</sup>, 60, 30-31.  
 247. Chopsticks, *n.*—k'uai<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 94, 35.  
 248. Christianity, *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>.tu<sup>1</sup>.chiao<sup>4</sup>; yeh<sup>1</sup>.su<sup>1</sup>.chiao<sup>4</sup>, 98, 4.  
 249. Christmas, *n.*—yeh<sup>1</sup>.su<sup>1</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>, 98, 5.  
 250. Church, *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>.pai<sup>4</sup>.t'ang<sup>2</sup>, 98, 14.  
 251. Cigarette, *n.*—yen<sup>1</sup>, 68, 33.  
 252. Cinema, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>.ying<sup>3</sup>, 78, 4.  
 253. City, *n.*—ch'êng<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 51, 19.  
 254. Civil right, *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>.ch'üan<sup>2</sup>, 111, 38.  
 255. Civil war, *n.*—nei<sup>4</sup>.chan<sup>4</sup>; nei<sup>4</sup>.luan<sup>4</sup>, 111, 30.  
 256. Civilization, *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>.hua<sup>4</sup>, 99, 27.  
 257. Civilized, *adj.*—wén<sup>2</sup>.ming<sup>2</sup>, 99, 28.  
 258. Clap (hands), *v.*—ku<sup>2</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 107, 76.  
 259. Clash, *v.*—fan<sup>4</sup>, 112, 49.  
 260. Class-room, *n.*—chia<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 53, 1.  
 261. Clear, *adj.*—(not muddy) ch'ing<sup>1</sup>, 20, 17; (distinct) ch'u<sup>3</sup>, 20, 18; (uncloody) ch'ing<sup>2</sup>, 57, 14; (light and bright) liang<sup>4</sup>, 83, 18.  
 262. Clerk, *n.*—shu<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>4</sup>, 125, 40.  
 263. Climate, *n.*—ch'i<sup>4</sup>.hou<sup>4</sup>, 24, 14-15.  
 264. Clock, *n.*—chung<sup>1</sup>, 27, 25.  
 265. Close (to shut), *v.*—ho<sup>2</sup>, 19, 37; 107, 69.  
 266. Cloth, *n.*—pu<sup>4</sup>, 44, 26.  
 267. Clothes, *n.*—i<sup>1</sup>.shang<sup>0</sup>, 44, 24-25; 70, 9.  
 268. Cloud, *n.*—yün<sup>2</sup>.ts'ai<sup>3</sup>, 57, 4.  
 269. Coal, *n.*—mei<sup>2</sup>, 75, 16; 152, 13.  
 270. Coat, *n.*—kua<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 44, 32.  
 271. Coffee, *n.*—k'a<sup>1</sup>.fei<sup>1</sup>, 36, 10-11.  
 272. Coin, *n.*—yin<sup>2</sup>.chio<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 43, 15.  
 273. Cold, *adj.*—lêng<sup>3</sup>, 25, 21; ch'i<sup>1</sup>, 25, 22.  
 274. Colleague, *n.*—t'ung<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 41, 25-26.

275. Colour, *n.*—sō<sup>4</sup> (shai<sup>3</sup>), 31, 58; yen<sup>2</sup> -sō<sup>4</sup> (shai<sup>3</sup>), 67, 32.

276. Comb, *n.*—shu<sup>1</sup>-tzū<sup>0</sup>, 71, 21; *v.*—shu<sup>1</sup>; to comb hair, shu<sup>1</sup> t'ou<sup>2</sup>.

277. Come, *v.*—lai<sup>2</sup>, 8, 2; to come to, tao<sup>4</sup>...lai<sup>0</sup>.

278. Comfortable, *adj.*—shu<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>2</sup>, 142, 27.

279. Commander, *n.*—chih<sup>3</sup>-hui<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>; szü<sup>1</sup>-ling<sup>4</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, 117, 35.

280. Commander-in-chief, *n.*—tsung<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>-hui<sup>1</sup>; tsung<sup>3</sup>-szü<sup>1</sup>-ling<sup>4</sup>, 117, 36.

281. Commercial treaty, *n.*—t'ung<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>1</sup>.t'iao<sup>2</sup>-yüeh<sup>1</sup>, 112, 53.

282. Commissioner of police, *n.*—ching<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>-tsung<sup>3</sup>-chien<sup>1</sup>, 66, 5.

283. Common, *adj.*—p'u<sup>3</sup>.t'ung<sup>1</sup>, 99, 30; 142, 24.

284. Common sense, *n.*—ch'ang<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 142, 25.

285. Communism, *n.*—kung<sup>4</sup>-ch'an<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, 110, 14, note.

286. Communist party, *n.*—kung<sup>4</sup>-ch'an<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 9.

287. Compare, *v.*—pi<sup>3</sup>, 21, 2.

288. Compel, *v.*—ch'iang<sup>3</sup>, 90, 52.

289. Complete, *adj.*—ch'uan<sup>2</sup>, 54, 29; man<sup>3</sup>, 57, 15; *v.*—wan<sup>2</sup>, 18, 24; 54, 25; 72, 41.

290. Comply with, *v.*—ying<sup>1</sup>, 142, 20.

291. Comrade, *n.*—t'ung<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>4</sup>, 137, 30.

292. Conclude (treaty), *v.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>2</sup>, 112, 55.

293. Confer, *v.*—shou<sup>4</sup>, 143, 39.

294. Conference, *n.*—hui<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>; t'an<sup>2</sup>-p'an<sup>4</sup>, 119, 59.

295. Confess, *v.*—jēn<sup>4</sup>, 137, 44.

296. Confucianism, *n.*—k'ung<sup>3</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>; ju<sup>2</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, 98, 7.

297. Conscious of, *adj.*—chüeh<sup>2</sup>, 120, 81.

298. Consider, *v.*—k'ao<sup>3</sup>-lü<sup>4</sup>, 142, 14.

299. Consideration, *n.*—k'ao<sup>3</sup>-lü<sup>4</sup>, 142, 14.

300. Constable, *n.*—ching<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 66, 3.

301. Consul-general, *n.*—tsung<sup>2</sup>-ling<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 117, 28.

302. Continent, *n.*—ta<sup>4</sup>-chou<sup>1</sup>; ta<sup>4</sup>-lu<sup>1</sup>, 99, 21.

303. Continue, *v.*—chi<sup>4</sup>-hsü<sup>4</sup>, 142, 15.

304. Controller of Examinations, *n.*—kuan<sup>2</sup>-k'ao<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, 102, 5.

305. Convenient, *adj.*—fang<sup>1</sup>-pien<sup>4</sup>, 45, 52-53.

306. Copper, *n.*—t'ung<sup>2</sup>, 43, 4.

307. Copy, *n.*—ch'ao<sup>1</sup>-pén<sup>0</sup>, 142, 21; *v.*—ch'ao<sup>1</sup>, 126, 44.

308. Cordial, *adj.*—ch'in<sup>1</sup>-jō<sup>4</sup>, 118, 49.

309. Corps, *n.*—(military) tui<sup>4</sup>, 117, 33; (diplomatic) t'uan<sup>2</sup>, 117, 38.

310. Corrupt, *adj.*—fu<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>, 118, 56.

311. Corruption, *n.*—fu<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>, 118, 56.

312. Costly, *adj.*—kuei<sup>4</sup>, 20, 19.

313. Cotton, *n.*—mien<sup>2</sup>, 75, 17; mien<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>0</sup>, 144, 49.

314. Cotton mill, *n.*—sha<sup>1</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, 95, 43.

315. Cough, *n.* *v.*—k'e<sup>2</sup> (k'o<sup>2</sup>)-sou<sup>0</sup>, 60, 29.

316. Count, *v.*—suan<sup>4</sup>, 45, 55.

317. Country, *n.*—(nation) kuo<sup>2</sup>, 51, 2; (rural area) hsiang<sup>1</sup>-hsia<sup>0</sup>, 51, 20.

318. Couple (pair), *n.*—shuang<sup>1</sup>, 95, 36.

319. Court (law), *n.*—fa<sup>3</sup>.t'ang<sup>2</sup>, 66, 7.

320. Cow, *n.*—niu<sup>2</sup>, 88, 7.

321. Cream, *n.*—niu<sup>2</sup>-nai<sup>3</sup>.p'i<sup>2</sup>, 36, 9.

322. Create, *v.*—ch'uang<sup>4</sup>-tsao<sup>4</sup>, 100, 41.

323. Credentials (diplomatic), *n.*—kuo<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>, 120, 76.

324. Crocodile, *n.*—o<sup>4</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>, 89, 34.

325. Crow, *n.*—wu<sup>1</sup>-ya<sup>1</sup>, 89, 37.

326. Cuckoo, *n.*—shih<sup>1</sup>-chiu<sup>1</sup>, 90, 40.

327. Culture, *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, 99, 27.

328. Cup, *n.*—pei<sup>1</sup>-tzū<sup>0</sup>, 37, 36.

329. Currency note, *n.*—ch'ao<sup>1</sup>.p'iao<sup>4</sup>, 43, 13-14.

330. Curry, *n.*—k'a<sup>1</sup>-li<sup>4</sup>, 36, 16.

331. Curse, *v.*—ma<sup>4</sup>, 137, 38.

332. Custom house, *n.*—hai<sup>3</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, 66, 11.

333. Cut, *v.*—k'an<sup>3</sup>, 44, 33.

334. Cut out (as clothes), *v.*—ts'ai<sup>2</sup>, 45, 42.

**D**

335. Dance, *v.*—t'iao<sup>4</sup>-wu<sup>3</sup>, 18, 19-20.

336. Dare, *v.*—kan<sup>3</sup>, 138, 50.

337. Dark, *adj.*—hun<sup>1</sup>, 57, 13.

338. Date, *n.*—(fruit), tsao<sup>3</sup>-tzū<sup>0</sup>, 93, 13; (specified time), jih<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>, 106, 63.

339. Daughter, *n.*—nū<sup>3</sup>-érh<sup>0</sup>, 3, 13.

340. Day, *n.*—t'ien<sup>1</sup>, 24, 3; jih<sup>4</sup>-tzū<sup>0</sup>, 24, 17.

341. Day after tomorrow, *n.*—hou<sup>4</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 5.

342. Day time, *n.*—pai<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 137, 40.

343. Dear, *adj.*—(costly) kuei<sup>4</sup>, 20, 19; (beloved) ch'in<sup>1</sup>-ai<sup>4</sup>, 20, 20-21.

344. Death, *n.*—szü<sup>3</sup>-wang<sup>2</sup>, 90, 57.

345. Death from starvation, *n.*—ngo<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>3</sup>, 119, 73.

346. Debt, *n.*—chai<sup>4</sup>, 137, 45.

347. December, *n.*—shih<sup>2</sup>-érh<sup>4</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 27, 24.

348. Decide, *v.*—ting<sup>4</sup>, 112, 47.

349. Deer, *n.*—lu<sup>4</sup>, 88, 13.

350. Defect, *n.*—ch'ueh<sup>1</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>, 124, 15.

351. Deficit, *n.*—sun<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>1</sup>, 124, 17.

352. Delay, *v.*—ch'ih<sup>2</sup>, 131, 30.

353. Deliver (ultimatum), *v.*—t'i<sup>2</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup>, 113, 60.

354. Demand, *n.* *v.*—yao<sup>1</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, 142, 19.

355. Democracy, *n.*—min<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-chéng<sup>4</sup>-t'i<sup>3</sup>, 109, 3.

356. Democratic Party, *n.*—min<sup>2</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 4.

357. Destroy, *v.*—mieh<sup>4</sup>, 18, 11; p'o<sup>4</sup>-huai<sup>4</sup>; hui<sup>3</sup>-huai<sup>4</sup>, 90, 51.

358. Detective, *n.*—pao<sup>4</sup>-t'an<sup>4</sup>, 66, 6.

359. Develop, *v.*—fa<sup>1</sup>-yi<sup>4</sup>, 120, 80.

360. Dew, *n.*—lu<sup>4</sup>, 57, 12.

361. Diamond, *n.*—chin<sup>1</sup>-kang<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>, 43, 8.

362. Diarrhoea, *n.*—pai<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>4</sup>, 60, 33.

363. Dictionary, *n.*—tzū<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>, 54, 17.

364. Die, *v.*—szü<sup>3</sup>-wang<sup>2</sup>, 90, 57.

365. Difficult, *v.*—i<sup>4</sup>, 142, 17.

366. Different, *adj.*—i<sup>4</sup>, 142, 17.

367. Difficult, *adj.*—chien<sup>1</sup>-nan<sup>2</sup>, 21, 31-32.

368. Diminish, *v.*—chien<sup>3</sup>, 4, 18.

369. Diphtheria, *n.*—pai<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>2</sup>, 60, 34.

370. Diplomatic relation, *n.*—wai<sup>4</sup>.chiao<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>-hsia<sup>4</sup>, 120, 88.

371. Dirty, *adj.*—tsang<sup>1</sup>, 135, 5.

372. Discipline, *n.*—chi<sup>4</sup>.liu<sup>1</sup>, 120, 82; 135, 11; kuei<sup>1</sup>.chü<sup>0</sup>, 124, 19.

373. Disease, *n.*—ping<sup>1</sup>, 59, 2; chi<sup>2</sup>.ping<sup>4</sup>, 59, 1-2.

374. Disgrace, *n. v.*—ju<sup>1</sup>, 138, 49.

375. Dishonest, *adj.*—pu<sup>4</sup>.ch'eng<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>, 131, 22.

376. Dislike, *v.*—yen<sup>1</sup>, 132, 39.

377. Disperse, *v.*—san<sup>4</sup>, 124, 20.

378. Distant, *adj.*—ytian<sup>3</sup>, 21, 38.

379. Distinct, *adj.*—ch'u<sup>3</sup>, 20, 18.

380. District, *n.*—hsien<sup>4</sup>, 51, 18.

381. Divide, *v.*—fen<sup>1</sup>, 4, 15; ch'u<sup>2</sup>, 143, 35.

382. Division (military unit), *n.*—shih<sup>1</sup>, 67, 19.

383. Do, *v.*—tso<sup>4</sup>, 8, 6; 12, 32.

384. Doctor, *n.*—(medical) i<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>0</sup>, 59, 4-5; tai<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>0</sup>, 59, 6-7; (academic) po<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 103, 22.

385. Doctor of Divinity (D.D.), *n.*—shén<sup>2</sup>.k'o<sup>1</sup>.po<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 33.

386. Doctor of Law (LL.D.), *n.*—fa<sup>3</sup>.k'o<sup>1</sup>.po<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 31.

387. Doctor of Literature (D.Litt.), *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>.k'o<sup>1</sup>.po<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 103, 23.

388. Doctor of Medicine (M.D.), *n.*—i<sup>1</sup>.k'o<sup>1</sup>.po<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 32.

389. Doctor of Philosophy (Ph.D.), *n.*—chê<sup>2</sup>.k'o<sup>1</sup>.po<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 103, 22.

390. Doctor of Science (D.Sc.), *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>.k'o<sup>1</sup>.po<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 30.

391. Doctrine, *n.*—tao<sup>4</sup>, 63, 12.

392. Dog, *n.*—kou<sup>3</sup>, 88, 16.

393. Dollar, *n.*—yang<sup>2</sup>.ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, 44, 16; one dollar, i<sup>2</sup>.k'uai<sup>4</sup>.ch'ien<sup>2</sup>.

394. Door, *n.*—mén<sup>2</sup>, 19, 39.

395. Dot, *n.*—tien<sup>3</sup>, 27, 27.

396. Down, *adv.*—hsia<sup>4</sup>, 9, 34.

397. Drag, *v.*—la<sup>1</sup>, 83, 20.

398. Drama, *n.*—hsia<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>4</sup>, 78, 7; hsi<sup>4</sup>.ch'u<sup>3</sup>, 78, 8.

399. Dramatist, *n.*—hsia<sup>4</sup>.ch'u<sup>3</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>, 78, 9.

400. Draw (to get), *v.*—ling<sup>3</sup>, 118, 52.

401. Dream, *n.*—mung<sup>4</sup> (mêng<sup>4</sup>), 11, 6; *v.*—tso<sup>4</sup> mung<sup>4</sup> (mêng<sup>4</sup>), 12, 33.

402. Drink, *v.*—yin<sup>3</sup>, 8, 10; 38, 58; ho<sup>1</sup>, 38, 58.

403. Driver, *n.*—k'ai<sup>1</sup>.ch'ê<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, 48, 20.

404. Dry (not wet), *adj.*—kan<sup>1</sup>, 81; 14; *v.* kan<sup>1</sup>, 81, 14.

405. Duck, *n.*—ya<sup>1</sup>, 37, 32.

406. During, *prep.*—tang<sup>4</sup>, 29, 21.

407. Duster, *n.*—mo<sup>3</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>, 53, 8.

408. Dwell, *v.*—chu<sup>4</sup>, 51, 22.

409. Dysentery, *n.*—li<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>0</sup>, 60, 32.

410. Each, *adj.*—ko<sup>4</sup>, 21, 39; mei<sup>3</sup>, 71, 26; 100, 39; each man, mei<sup>3</sup>i<sup>2</sup>ko<sup>4</sup>jén<sup>2</sup>.

411. Ear, *n.*—érh<sup>3</sup>.to<sup>0</sup>, 34, 10-11.

412. Earth, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>, 74, 1.

413. East, *n.*—tung<sup>1</sup>, 84, 1; eastern region, tung<sup>1</sup>.fang<sup>1</sup>, 84, 1.

414. Easy, *adj.*—yung<sup>2</sup> (pron. jung<sup>2</sup>).i<sup>0</sup>, 21, 29-30.

415. Eat, *v.*—ch'i<sup>1</sup> (ch'ih<sup>1</sup>), 8, 9.

416. Eclipse, *n.*—shih<sup>2</sup>, 131, 33.

417. Economics, *n.*—ching<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 106, 51.

418. Economy, *n.*—ching<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>4</sup>, 112, 57.

419. Education, *n.*—chiao<sup>4</sup>.yü<sup>0</sup>, 116, 23.

420. Education Minister, *n.*—chiao<sup>4</sup>.yü<sup>0</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 116, 23.

421. Egg, *n.*—tan<sup>4</sup>.luan<sup>3</sup>, 37, 26-27.

422. Egg (hen's), *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>, 37, 29.

423. Egypt, *n.*—ai<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>2</sup>, 51, 14.

424. Eight, *n. adj.*—pa<sup>1</sup>, 4, 8.

425. Elder brother, *n.*—ko<sup>1</sup>.ko<sup>0</sup>, 111, 33.

426. Elder sister, *n.*—chie<sup>2</sup> (chieh<sup>3</sup>).chie<sup>0</sup> (chieh<sup>0</sup>), 3, 20.

427. Elect, *v.*—hsüan<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>, 110, 19.

428. Election, *n.*—hsüan<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>, 110, 19.

429. Electric fan, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>.shan<sup>4</sup>, 82, 9.

430. Electric lift, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>.t'i<sup>1</sup>, 82, 5.

431. Electric light bulb, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>.têng<sup>1</sup>.p'ao<sup>4</sup>, 82, 10.

432. Electricity, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>, 47, 12.

433. Elephant, *n.*—hsiang<sup>4</sup>, 88, 8.

434. Embassy, *n.*—ta<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>.kuan<sup>3</sup>, 117, 27.

435. Emperor, *n.*—huang<sup>2</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>, 115, 4.

436. Empire, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.kuo<sup>2</sup>, 115, 6.

437. Empress, *n.*—huang<sup>2</sup>.hou<sup>4</sup>, 115, 5.

438. Enclose, *v.*—fu<sup>4</sup>.shang<sup>4</sup>, 142, 22.

439. Encroach upon, *v.*—ch'in<sup>1</sup>, 112, 48.

440. Endorse (to sign one's name), *v.*—ch'ien<sup>1</sup>, 64, 28; 112, 54.

441. Enemy, *n.*—ti<sup>2</sup>.jén<sup>2</sup>, 74, 13.

442. Energy, *n.*—nêng<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>4</sup>, 18, 1-2.

443. England, *n.*—ying<sup>1</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>, 51, 5.

444. English (language), *n.*—ying<sup>1</sup>.wén<sup>2</sup>, 63, 7.

445. Enjoy, *v.*—hsiang<sup>3</sup>, 71, 31.

446. Enlarge (as photograph), *v.*—fang<sup>4</sup>.ta<sup>4</sup>, 85, 20.

447. Enter, *v.*—chin<sup>4</sup>, 64, 24.

448. Entertain, *v.*—tai<sup>4</sup>, 86, 37.

449. Envelope, *n.*—fêng<sup>1</sup>.t'ao<sup>4</sup>, 47, 10.

450. Epidemic, *adj.*—liu<sup>2</sup>.hsing<sup>2</sup>, 60, 37-38.

451. Epidemics, *n.*—wén<sup>1</sup>.ping<sup>4</sup>, 60, 44.

452. Equal, *adj.*—p'ing<sup>2</sup>.têng<sup>3</sup>, 110, 26.

453. Equality, *n.*—p'ing<sup>2</sup>.têng<sup>3</sup>, 110, 26.

454. Eraser, *n.*—ts'a<sup>1</sup>.tzu<sup>0</sup>, 80, 7.

455. Escape, *v.*—t'ao<sup>2</sup>.tsou<sup>3</sup>, 18, 21-22.

456. Essay, *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>.chang<sup>0</sup>, 63, 6; an essay, i<sup>1</sup>.p'ien<sup>1</sup> wén<sup>2</sup>.chang<sup>0</sup>, 63, 6.

457. Et cetera (etc.)—têng<sup>3</sup>.têng<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, 61, 64.

458. Europe, *n.*—ou<sup>1</sup>.chou<sup>1</sup>, 99, 25.

459. Even, *adj.*—shuang<sup>1</sup>, 95, 36.

460. Evening, *n.*—wan<sup>3</sup>, 27, 42.

461. Every, *adj.*—ko<sup>4</sup>, 21, 39; mei<sup>3</sup>, 71, 26; 100, 39.

462. Everybody, *n.*—ko<sup>4</sup> jén<sup>2</sup>, 85, 30.

463. Everyday, *n.*—t'ien<sup>1</sup>.t'ien<sup>1</sup>, 24, 7; mei<sup>3</sup>.t'ien<sup>1</sup>, 71, 27.

464. Examination, *n.*—k'ao<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 63, 1.

465. Examination (oral), *n.*—k'ou<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 63, 3.

466. Examination (written), *n.*—pi<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 63, 2.

467. Examination paper, *n.*—chuan<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 63, 5.

468. Examine (to inspect), *v.*—chien<sup>3</sup>.ch'a<sup>2</sup>, 67, 14.

## E

410. Each, *adj.*—ko<sup>4</sup>, 21, 39; mei<sup>3</sup>, 71, 26; 100, 39; each man, mei<sup>3</sup>i<sup>2</sup>ko<sup>4</sup>jén<sup>2</sup>.

411. Ear, *n.*—érh<sup>3</sup>.to<sup>0</sup>, 34, 10-11.

412. Earth, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>, 74, 1.

413. East, *n.*—tung<sup>1</sup>, 84, 1; eastern region, tung<sup>1</sup>.fang<sup>1</sup>, 84, 1.

414. Easy, *adj.*—yung<sup>2</sup> (pron. jung<sup>2</sup>).i<sup>0</sup>, 21, 29-30.

469. Except, *conj.*—ch'u<sup>2</sup> liao<sup>0</sup>, 29, 19.  
 470. Exchange, *v.*—huan<sup>4</sup>, 76, 39.  
 471. Excuse, *n.*—t'o<sup>1</sup>.tz'u<sup>4</sup>, 136, 14.  
 472. Exercise book, *n.*—p'en<sup>3</sup>.tz'u<sup>0</sup>, 53, 3.  
 473. Experience, *n.*—ching<sup>1</sup>.yen<sup>4</sup>, 141, 8.  
 474. Extra, *adj.*—jun<sup>4</sup>, 131, 32.  
 475. Extravagant, *adj.*—shé<sup>1</sup>.ch'i<sup>0</sup>, 141, 3.  
 476. Eye, *n.*—yen<sup>3</sup>.ching<sup>0</sup>, 34, 7-8.

F

477. Face, *n.*—mien<sup>4</sup>, 34, 4; mien<sup>4</sup>.k'ung<sup>3</sup>, 34, 4-5; lien<sup>3</sup>, 70, 7; 132, 44.  
 478. Factory, *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>.ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, 126, 48.  
 479. Fair (just), *adj.*—kung<sup>1</sup>.p'ing<sup>0</sup>, 125, 35.  
 480. Fair (weather), *adj.*—ch'ing<sup>2</sup>, 57, 14.  
 481. Fall, *v.*—to<sup>4</sup>, 79, 17; 91, 62; tieh<sup>4</sup>, 91, 61.  
 482. False, *adj.*—fei<sup>1</sup>, 21, 36; hsü<sup>1</sup>, 143, 38.  
 483. Fame, *n.*—ming<sup>2</sup>, 40, 17; famous, *adj.*—yu<sup>3</sup> (to have) ming<sup>2</sup>.  
 484. Familiar, *adj.*—shu<sup>2</sup>, 131, 31.  
 485. Family, *n.*—chia<sup>1</sup>, 11, 7.  
 486. Famine, *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>.chin<sup>4</sup>, 119, 69.  
 487. Far, *adj.*—yuan<sup>3</sup>, 21, 38.  
 488. Farmer, *n.*—nung<sup>2</sup>.fu<sup>1</sup>, 95, 40.  
 489. Fascism, *n.*—fa<sup>4</sup>.hsü<sup>1</sup>.szü<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>, 110, 14.  
 490. Fat (of animals), *n. adj.*—fei<sup>2</sup>, 75, 28.  
 491. Fat (salary), *adj.*—hou<sup>4</sup>, 118, 53.  
 492. Father, *n.*—fu<sup>4</sup>.ch'in<sup>0</sup>, 3, 4.  
 493. Father-in-Law, *n.*—(husband's father) kung<sup>1</sup>.kung<sup>0</sup>, 111, 35; (wife's father) chang<sup>4</sup>.jén<sup>0</sup>; yüeh<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>; yüeh<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>4</sup>, 111, 36.  
 494. Fear, *v.*—p'a<sup>4</sup>, 100, 43.  
 495. February, *n.*—érh<sup>4</sup> yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 14.  
 496. Feel, *v.*—(the pulse) hao<sup>4</sup>, 61, 53; (with the hand) mo<sup>2</sup>, 61, 55.  
 497. Fertile, *adj.*—fei<sup>2</sup>, 75, 28.  
 498. Fever, *n.*—jé<sup>4</sup>, 60, 26; shao<sup>1</sup>, 60, 27.  
 499. Few, *adj.*—(some) hsieh<sup>1</sup> (sieh<sup>1</sup>), 6, 9; (several) chi<sup>3</sup>, 6, 25; (not many) shao<sup>3</sup>, 6, 21; 45, 57.  
 500. Fill (to insert with writing), *v.*—t'ien<sup>2</sup>, 64, 26.  
 501. Film, *n.*—(cinema) p'ien<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 78, 16; (photographic) juan<sup>3</sup>.p'ien<sup>4</sup>, 85, 18.  
 502. Finance, *n.*—ts'ai<sup>2</sup>.ch'eng<sup>4</sup>, 116, 22.  
 503. Find, *v.*—chao<sup>3</sup>, 18, 23; 72, 42.  
 504. Finger, *n.*—shou<sup>2</sup>.chih<sup>3</sup>, 34, 19.  
 505. Finish, *v.*—wan<sup>2</sup>, 18, 24; 54, 25; 72, 41; 107, 74.  
 506. Fire, *n.*—huo<sup>3</sup>, 37, 44.  
 507. First (in order), *adj.*—ti<sup>4</sup> i<sup>1</sup>, 4.  
 508. First class, *n.*—t'ou<sup>2</sup>.t'eng<sup>3</sup>, 78, 13.  
 509. First floor, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.i<sup>1</sup>.ts'eng<sup>2</sup>.lou<sup>2</sup>, 82, 1.  
 510. First tone, *n.*—yin<sup>1</sup>.p'ing<sup>2</sup>, 53, 11.  
 511. Fish, *n.*—yu<sup>2</sup>, 37, 24.  
 512. Five, *n. adj.*—wu<sup>3</sup>, 4, 5.  
 513. Flag, *n.*—ch'i<sup>2</sup>, 67, 31.  
 514. Flatter, *v.*—a<sup>4</sup>, 125, 28.  
 515. Flaw, *n.*—ch'ueh<sup>1</sup>.tien<sup>3</sup>, 124, 15.  
 516. Flour, *n.*—mien<sup>4</sup>, 36, 3.  
 517. Flower, *n.*—hua<sup>1</sup>, 31, 56.

518. Fly, *v.*—fei<sup>1</sup>, 91, 63.  
 519. Fog, *n.*—wu<sup>4</sup>, 57, 11.  
 520. Follow, *v.*—kēn<sup>1</sup>, 18, 25.  
 521. Fond of, *adj.*—hai<sup>3</sup>.huan<sup>1</sup>, 68, 46.  
 522. Food (meals), *n.*—fan<sup>4</sup>, 36, 1.  
 523. Food Minister, *n.*—liang<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>2</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 116, 25.  
 524. Fool, *n.*—sha<sup>3</sup>.tz'u<sup>0</sup>, 131, 28.  
 525. Foolish, *adj.*—ch'un<sup>3</sup>, 75, 20.  
 526. Foot (terminal part of leg), *n.*—chiao<sup>3</sup>, 34, 20.  
 527. Football, *n.*—tsu<sup>2</sup>.ch'i<sup>0</sup>, 68, 42.  
 528. For, *prep.*—kei<sup>3</sup>, 29, 6; t'i<sup>4</sup>, 29, 7; tai<sup>4</sup>, 29, 8; wei<sup>4</sup>, 6, 23; 29, 22.  
 529. Forbid, *v.*—chin<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>3</sup>, 135, 8.  
 530. Force, *n.*—li<sup>4</sup>, 18, 2; *v.*—ch'iang<sup>3</sup>, 90, 52.  
 531. Forget, *v.*—wang<sup>4</sup>.chi<sup>0</sup>, 18, 26-27.  
 532. Forgive, *v.*—jao<sup>2</sup>, 143, 36.  
 533. Fork, *n.*—ch'a<sup>1</sup>.tz'u<sup>0</sup>, 94, 33.  
 534. Fort, *n.*—p'ao<sup>4</sup>.t'ai<sup>2</sup>, 67, 30.  
 535. Fountain pen, *n.*—tz'u<sup>4</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>.shui<sup>2</sup>.pi<sup>3</sup>, 80, 3; kang<sup>1</sup>.pi<sup>3</sup>, 136, 25.  
 536. Four, *n. adj.*—szü<sup>4</sup> (ssü<sup>4</sup>), 4, 4.  
 537. Fourth tone, *n.*—ch'u<sup>4</sup>.shéng<sup>1</sup>, 53, 14.  
 538. Fowl, *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>, 37, 28.  
 539. Fox, *n.*—hu<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>0</sup>, 89, 21.  
 540. France, *n.*—fa<sup>4</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>, 51, 6.  
 541. Fresh, *adj.*—hsien<sup>1</sup>, 131, 20.  
 542. Friday, *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>.pai<sup>4</sup>.wu<sup>3</sup>; hsing<sup>1</sup>.ch'i<sup>2</sup>.wu<sup>3</sup>, 26, 11.  
 543. Friend, *n.*—p'êng<sup>2</sup>.yu<sup>0</sup>, 3, 29.  
 544. Frog, *n.*—ha<sup>2</sup>.ma<sup>0</sup>, 89, 24.  
 545. From, *prep.*—ts'ung<sup>2</sup>, 29, 18; yu<sup>2</sup>, 81, 15; 119, 64.  
 546. Front, *adj.*—ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, 31, 51; *adv.*—ch'ien<sup>2</sup>.t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 31, 51-52.  
 547. Frugality, *n.*—chien<sup>3</sup>, 153, 20-21.  
 548. Fruit, *n.*—kuo<sup>3</sup>.tz'u<sup>0</sup>, 38, 55.  
 549. Fuel, *n.*—ch'ai<sup>2</sup>, 37, 46.  
 550. Fulfil, *v.*—ying<sup>1</sup>, 142, 20.  
 551. Full, *adj.*—man<sup>3</sup>, 57, 15.  
 552. Further, *adj. adv.*—yu<sup>4</sup>, 107, 78.  
 553. Future, *n. adj.*—chiang<sup>1</sup>.lai<sup>2</sup>, 27, 38-39.

G

554. Garden, *n.*—yuan<sup>2</sup>, 31, 57.  
 555. Garlic, *n.*—suan<sup>4</sup>, 93, 16.  
 556. Genuine, *adj.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.tao<sup>4</sup>, 54, 28.  
 557. Geography, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 43.  
 558. Geology, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 44.  
 559. Geometry, *n.*—chi<sup>3</sup>.ho<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 38.  
 560. Germany, *n.*—tê<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>0</sup>, 51, 7.  
 561. Get, *v.*—tê<sup>2</sup>, 147, 7.  
 562. Ginger, *n.*—chiang<sup>1</sup>, 94, 17.  
 563. Girl, *n.*—nû<sup>3</sup>.tz'u<sup>0</sup>, 3, 17; nû<sup>3</sup>.hai<sup>2</sup>, 136, 19.  
 564. Give, *v.*—kei<sup>3</sup>, 9, 37; (to present to) sung<sup>4</sup>, 137, 31; (trouble to) lao<sup>2</sup>, 41, 32.  
 565. Go, *v.*—ch'u<sup>4</sup>, 8, 1; yu<sup>2</sup>, 72, 35.  
 566. God, *n.*—t'ien<sup>1</sup>; shén<sup>2</sup>, 99, 15.  
 567. Goddess, *n.*—nû<sup>3</sup>.shén<sup>2</sup>, 99, 16.  
 568. Gold, *n.*—chin<sup>1</sup>, 43, 1.

569. Good, *adj.*—hao<sup>3</sup>, 20, 1; (salary) hou<sup>4</sup>, 118, 53.  
 570. Good-looking, *adj.*—p'iao<sup>1</sup>.liang<sup>2</sup>, 20, 4-5.  
 571. Goose, *n.*—o<sup>2</sup>, 37, 31.  
 572. Governor, *n.*—shéng<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.hsí<sup>2</sup>, 102, 1.  
 573. Governor-General, *n.*—tsung<sup>3</sup>.tu<sup>1</sup>, 117, 37.  
 574. Grammar, *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>.fa<sup>3</sup>, 63, 9.  
 575. Gramophone, *n.*—hua<sup>4</sup>.hsia<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 78, 1.  
 576. Granddaughter, *n.*—(son's daughter) sun<sup>1</sup>.nü<sup>3</sup>, 130, 3; (daughter's daughter) wai<sup>4</sup>.sun<sup>1</sup>.nü<sup>3</sup>, 130, 5.  
 577. Grandfather, *n.*—(on father's side) tsu<sup>3</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>, 3, 27; (on mother's side) wai<sup>4</sup>.tsu<sup>3</sup>.fu<sup>4</sup>.  
 578. Grandmother, *n.*—(on father's side) tsu<sup>2</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>, 3, 28; (on mother's side) wai<sup>4</sup>.tsu<sup>2</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>.  
 579. Grandson, *n.*—(son's son) sun<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 130, 2; (daughter's son) wai<sup>4</sup>.sun<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 130, 5.  
 580. Grape, *n.*—p'u<sup>2</sup>.t'ao<sup>0</sup>, 93, 2.  
 581. Grass, *n.*—ts'ao<sup>3</sup>, 24, 19.  
 582. Great, *adj.*—ta<sup>4</sup>, 11, 14; 20, 3.  
 583. Green, *n.* *adj.*—ch'ing<sup>1</sup> (ts'ing<sup>1</sup>), 31, 62; 95, 50.  
 584. Ground, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>, 82, 4.  
 585. Ground floor, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>.hsia<sup>4</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>.i<sup>1</sup>.ts'ōng<sup>2</sup>, (lou<sup>2</sup>.hsia<sup>4</sup>), 82, 4.  
 586. Grow, *v.*—shéng<sup>1</sup>; fa<sup>1</sup>.shéng<sup>1</sup>, 112, 56.  
 587. Guest, *n.*—k'ê<sup>4</sup> (k'o<sup>4</sup>), 85, 28.  
 588. Guide, *v.*—tai<sup>4</sup>, 100, 42.  
 589. Gum (dental), *n.*—ya<sup>2</sup>.ch'uang<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 70, 13.  
 590. Gun, *n.*—ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, 67, 21.

## H

591. Hail, *n.*—pao<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 57, 8.  
 592. Hair, *n.*—(on head) t'ou<sup>2</sup>.fa<sup>0</sup>, 34, 3.  
 593. Hair-clipper, *n.*—t'ui<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 71, 19.  
 594. Half, *n.*—pan<sup>4</sup>, 4, 16.  
 595. Hall (large room), *n.*—t'ang<sup>2</sup>, 11, 11.  
 596. Hand, *n.*—(human) shou<sup>3</sup>, 34, 18.  
 597. Hand over, *v.*—ti<sup>4</sup>, 48, 31; sung<sup>4</sup>, 137, 31.  
 598. Hang (to suspend), *v.*—tiao<sup>4</sup>, 86, 38.  
 599. Happen, *v.*—fa<sup>1</sup>.shéng<sup>1</sup>, 112, 56.  
 600. Happy, *adj.*—k'uai<sup>4</sup>.lo<sup>0</sup>, 100, 37.  
 601. Hard, *adj.*—chien<sup>4</sup>.lao<sup>2</sup>, 75, 22; ying<sup>4</sup>, 75, 23.  
 602. Hardly (scarcely), *adv.*—han<sup>3</sup>, 91, 65.  
 603. Hare, *n.*—t'u<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 89, 23.  
 604. Hat, *n.*—mao<sup>4</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 45, 35.  
 605. Hate, *v.*—hêng<sup>4</sup>, 18, 28.  
 606. Have, *v.*—yu<sup>3</sup>, 2, 11.  
 607. Hawk, *n.*—chun<sup>3</sup>, 90, 39.  
 608. He, *pron.*—t'al<sup>1</sup>, 1, 4.  
 609. Head, *n.*—t'ou<sup>2</sup>, 34, 2.  
 610. Headache, *n.*—t'ou<sup>2</sup>.t'êng<sup>2</sup>, 60, 25.  
 611. Head of the Department, *n.*—hsü<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>3</sup>.jên<sup>4</sup>, 63, 11.  
 612. Head master (of a school), *n.*—hsiao<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 102, 2.  
 613. Health, *n.*—chien<sup>4</sup>.k'ang<sup>1</sup>, 132, 40.

614. Health Minister, *n.*—wei<sup>4</sup>.shéng<sup>1</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 116, 24.  
 615. Healthy, *adj.*—k'ang<sup>1</sup>.chien<sup>4</sup>, 132, 40.  
 616. Hear, *v.*—t'ing<sup>1</sup>, 18, 29.  
 617. Heart, *n.*—hsin<sup>1</sup>, 23, 1.  
 618. Heaven, *n.*—t'ien<sup>1</sup>, 24, 3.  
 619. Heavy, *adj.*—chung<sup>4</sup>, 124, 21.  
 620. Help, *v.*—pang<sup>1</sup>, 19, 30; pang<sup>1</sup>.tso<sup>4</sup>, 19, 30-31.  
 621. Here, *adv.*—chê<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>0</sup>, 6, 7.  
 622. Hero, *n.*—ying<sup>1</sup>.hsüng<sup>2</sup>, 126, 53.  
 623. High, *adj.*—kao<sup>1</sup>, 20, 11.  
 624. High school, *n.*—chung<sup>1</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 102, 7.  
 625. Himself, *pron.*—t'al<sup>1</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>.chi<sup>3</sup>, 1, 9.  
 626. Hinduism, *n.*—yin<sup>4</sup>.tu<sup>0</sup>.chiso<sup>4</sup>, 98, 2.  
 627. His, *pron.*—t'al<sup>1</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, 1, 8.  
 628. History, *n.*—shih<sup>3</sup>, 63, 10; li<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>3</sup>, 106, 54.  
 629. Hit, *v.*—ta<sup>3</sup>, 54, 19.  
 630. Hoist (the flag), *v.*—shéng<sup>1</sup>, 118, 50.  
 631. Home, *n.*—chua<sup>1</sup>, 11, 7.  
 632. Home-guard, *n.*—t'uan<sup>2</sup>, 117, 38.  
 633. Home Minister, *n.*—nei<sup>4</sup>.wu<sup>4</sup>.pu<sup>4</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 116, 21.  
 634. Honest, *adj.*—ch'êng<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>0</sup>, 131, 22.  
 635. Honey, *n.*—fêng<sup>1</sup>.mi<sup>4</sup>, 93, 11.  
 636. Honorary, *adj.*—ming<sup>2</sup>.yü<sup>4</sup>, 143, 37.  
 637. Honorary degree (academic), *n.*—ming<sup>2</sup>.yü<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.wei<sup>4</sup>, 143, 37.  
 638. Honourable, *adj.*—kuei<sup>4</sup>, 41, 22.  
 639. Hope, *n.* *v.*—hsü<sup>1</sup>.wang<sup>4</sup>, 19, 32-33; hopeful, *adj.*—yu<sup>3</sup> (—to have)—hsü<sup>1</sup>.wang<sup>4</sup>; hopeless, *adj.*—mei<sup>3</sup> (—not)-hsü<sup>1</sup>.wang<sup>4</sup>.  
 640. Horse, *n.*—ma<sup>3</sup>, 88, 9.  
 641. Hospital, *n.*—i<sup>1</sup>.yuan<sup>4</sup>, 59, 8.  
 642. Host, *n.*—chu<sup>3</sup>, 85, 29.  
 643. Hot, *adj.*—jé<sup>4</sup>, 24, 20; 60, 26.  
 644. Hotel, *n.*—lù<sup>2</sup>.kuán<sup>3</sup>, 37, 47-48.  
 645. Hour—tien<sup>3</sup>.chung<sup>1</sup>, 27, 40.  
 646. House, *n.*—fang<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 38, 51.  
 647. How, *adv.*—tsén<sup>3</sup>.ma<sup>0</sup>, 6, 18; 30, 41-42; chi<sup>3</sup>, 40, 14.  
 648. How many, to<sup>1</sup> shao<sup>3</sup>, 6, 22.  
 649. Hundred, *n.*—pai<sup>3</sup>, 4, 12.  
 650. Hungry, *adj.*—o<sup>4</sup>, 38, 56; hunger, n.—o<sup>4</sup>.  
 651. Hurried, *adj.*—chi<sup>2</sup>, 126, 54.  
 652. Husband, *n.*—chang<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>0</sup>, 40, 1-2.  
 653. Hypocrisy, *n.*—chia<sup>3</sup>.mao<sup>4</sup>, 110, 17.

## I

654. I, *pron.*—wo<sup>3</sup>, 1, 1.  
 655. Ice, *n.*—ping<sup>1</sup>, 57, 10.  
 656. Idea, *n.*—i<sup>4</sup>, 80, 2.  
 657. Idle (lazy), *adj.*—lan<sup>3</sup>.to<sup>4</sup>, 75, 33.  
 658. If, *conj.*—chia<sup>2</sup>.shih<sup>3</sup>, 30, 36-37; yao<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 54, 31.  
 659. Illness, *n.*—ping<sup>4</sup>, 62, 14.  
 660. Illumine, *v.*—chao<sup>4</sup>, 83, 21.  
 661. Illustrated magazine, *n.*—hua<sup>4</sup>.pao<sup>4</sup>, 71, 25.  
 662. Impatient, *adj.*—chi<sup>2</sup>, 126, 54.  
 663. Implore, *v.*—ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, 12, 31.

664. Important, *adj.*—chi<sup>2</sup>, 75, 31; chin<sup>3</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>, 75, 32.  
 665. Impossible, *adj.*—pu<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>2</sup>, 106, 60.  
 666. In, *prep.*—tsai<sup>4</sup>, 6, 29.  
 667. Inaugurate, *v.*—k'ai<sup>1</sup>-mu<sup>4</sup>, 119, 60.  
 668. Inconvenient, *adj.*—pu<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>-pien<sup>4</sup>, 54, 30.  
 669. Increase, *n. v.*—tsêng<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, 112, 43.  
 670. In detail, *adv.*—hsiang<sup>2</sup>, 61, 63.  
 671. India, *n.*—yin<sup>4</sup>-tu<sup>0</sup>, 51, 1.  
 672. Infectious, *adj.*—ch'u'an<sup>2</sup>-jan<sup>3</sup>, 61, 47-48.  
 673. Influenza, *n.*—liu<sup>2</sup>-hsing<sup>2</sup>-ch'u'an<sup>2</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>-ping<sup>4</sup>, 60, 37-41.  
 674. Injection (medicine), *n.*—i<sup>1</sup>-chêñ<sup>1</sup>, 59, 12.  
 675. Ink, *n.*—mo<sup>4</sup>, 80, 4.  
 676. Inoculation, *n.*—chu<sup>4</sup>-shê<sup>4</sup>, 59, 13-14.  
 677. Inside, *n. adj. adv. prep.*—li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 6, 17; 29, 16; li<sup>3</sup>-mien<sup>0</sup>, 41, 37-38; li<sup>3</sup>, 107, 66.  
 678. Insist, *v.*—ch'iang<sup>3</sup>, 90, 52.  
 679. Inspect, *v.*—chien<sup>3</sup>-ch'a<sup>2</sup>, 67, 14; yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 120, 83.  
 680. Inspector of Police, *n.*—ching<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 66, 4.  
 681. Inspector of Schools, *n.*—shih<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, 102, 9.  
 682. Instruct (order, direction), *v.*—hsün<sup>4</sup>, 107, 73.  
 683. Intelligent, *adj.*—ts'ung<sup>1</sup>-ming<sup>0</sup>, 131, 29.  
 684. Interest (profit), *n.*—hsî<sup>2</sup>, 158, 55.  
 685. Interesting, *adj.*—ch'u<sup>4</sup>, 21, 34.  
 686. Introduce, *v.*—chieh<sup>4</sup>-shao<sup>4</sup>, 141, 6.  
 687. Introduction, *n.*—chieh<sup>4</sup>-shao<sup>4</sup>, 141, 6; (preface) hsü<sup>4</sup>; hsü<sup>4</sup>-yen<sup>2</sup>, 141, 7.  
 688. Invade, *v.*—fan<sup>4</sup>, 112, 49.  
 689. Invite, *v.*—ch'ing<sup>3</sup>, 9, 38.  
 690. Iron, *n.*—t'ieh<sup>3</sup>, 43, 3.  
 691. Island, *n.*—tao<sup>3</sup>; hai<sup>2</sup>-tao<sup>3</sup>, 99, 26.  
 692. It, *pron.*—t'a<sup>1</sup>, 1, 6.

### J

693. January, *n.*—chêng<sup>1</sup> yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 13.  
 694. Japan, *n.*—jih<sup>4</sup>-pén<sup>3</sup>, 51, 15.  
 695. Java, *n.*—chao<sup>3</sup>-wa<sup>1</sup>, 51, 16.  
 696. Journey, *n.*—liu<sup>3</sup>-hsing<sup>2</sup>, 74, 8.  
 697. Judge, *n.*—fa<sup>3</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, 125, 31.  
 698. Judgment (legal), *n.*—p'an<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>2</sup>, 125, 32.  
 699. July, *n.*—ch'i<sup>2</sup> yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 19.  
 700. Jump, *n. v.*—t'iao<sup>4</sup>, 61, 59.  
 701. June, *n.*—liu<sup>4</sup> yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 18.  
 702. Jury, *n.*—p'ei<sup>2</sup>-shêñ<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, 125, 33.  
 703. Just, *adj.*—kung<sup>1</sup>-p'ing<sup>0</sup>, 125, 35; *adv.*—(just now) ts'ai<sup>2</sup>, 125, 39; (exactly) kang<sup>1</sup>-kang<sup>1</sup>, 76, 43.

### K

704. Keep, *v.*—ts'u'n<sup>2</sup>, 148, 20.  
 705. Key, *n.*—yao<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, 81, 12.  
 706. Kick, *v.*—t'i<sup>1</sup>, 68, 47.  
 707. Kill, *v.*—sha<sup>1</sup>, 136, 26.

708. Kind, *n.*—(sort) chung<sup>3</sup>, 68, 36.  
 709. King, *n.*—kuo<sup>2</sup>-wang<sup>2</sup>, 115, 1.  
 710. Kingdom, *n.*—wang<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>2</sup>, 115, 3.  
 711. Kitchen, *n.*—ch'u<sup>2</sup>-fang<sup>2</sup>, 38, 50-51.  
 712. Kite (bird) *n.*—niao<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>1</sup>, 89, 36.  
 713. Knife, *n.*—tao<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 37, 38; 94, 34.  
 714. Knock, *v.*—ch'iao<sup>1</sup>, 32, 67.  
 715. Know, *v.*—chih<sup>1</sup>-tao<sup>0</sup>, 8, 27; jén<sup>4</sup>, 137, 44.  
 716. Knowledge, *n.*—(learning) hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 106, 58; hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-wén<sup>4</sup>, 126, 51; (general) chih<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup> 141, 5.

### L

717. Labour Party, *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 6.  
 718. Lake, *n.*—hu<sup>2</sup>, 48, 28.  
 719. Lamp, *n.*—têng<sup>1</sup>, 82, 7.  
 720. Land, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>, 74, 1.  
 721. Landscape, *n.*—shan<sup>1</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, 84, 11.  
 722. Language, *n.*—(spoken) huâ<sup>4</sup>, 47, 15; yü<sup>3</sup>-yen<sup>2</sup>, 105, 48; (written) wén<sup>2</sup>, 63, 6.  
 723. Large, *adj.*—ta<sup>4</sup>, 20, 3.  
 724. Last year, *n.*—ch'ü<sup>4</sup>-nien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 13.  
 725. Late, *adj. adv.*—wan<sup>3</sup>, 27, 42; chih<sup>2</sup>, 131, 30.  
 726. Laugh, *v.*—hsiao<sup>4</sup>, 8, 17.  
 727. Lavatory (latrine), *n.*—mao<sup>2</sup>-fang<sup>0</sup>, 135, 4.  
 728. Lavish, *adj.*—shê<sup>1</sup>-ch'ih<sup>0</sup>, 141, 3.  
 729. Law, *n.*—fa<sup>3</sup>, 54, 18.  
 730. Lead (metal), *n.*—ch'ien<sup>1</sup>, 11, 17; 43, 5; *v.*—yin<sup>2</sup>-ch'i<sup>3</sup>, 111, 28.  
 731. Leader, *n.*—ling<sup>3</sup>-hsiu<sup>4</sup>, 110, 16.  
 732. Lead pencil, *n.*—ch'ien<sup>1</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>, 11, 21.  
 733. Leaf (of a tree), *n.*—yeh<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 94, 32.  
 734. Leap, *v.*—t'iao<sup>4</sup>, 61, 59.  
 735. Leap year, *n.*—jun<sup>4</sup> nien<sup>2</sup>, 133, 21.  
 736. Learn, *v.*—hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 11, 4.  
 737. Learned, *adj.*—yu<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-wén<sup>4</sup>, 126, 52.  
 738. Learning, *n.*—hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-wén<sup>4</sup>, 126, 51.  
 739. Leather, *n.*—p'i<sup>2</sup>, 45, 36.  
 740. Leave (of absence), *n.*—chia<sup>4</sup>, 120, 84.  
 741. Leave (to go from an indicated place), *v.*—li<sup>2</sup>, 19, 34.  
 742. Lecture, *n. v.*—chiang<sup>2</sup>-yen<sup>3</sup>; yen<sup>3</sup>-shuo<sup>1</sup>, 103, 12.  
 743. Left, *adj.*—tso<sup>3</sup>, 61, 50.  
 744. Leftist party, *n.*—tso<sup>3</sup>-p'ai<sup>4</sup>, 110, 15.  
 745. Leg, *n.*—chia<sup>3</sup>, 34, 20.  
 746. Legislative assembly, *n.*—li<sup>4</sup>-fa<sup>2</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>, 123, 3.  
 747. Lemon, *n.*—hsiang<sup>1</sup>-t'ao<sup>2</sup>, 93, 8.  
 748. Lemonade, *n.*—hsiang<sup>1</sup>-t'ao<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, 93, 9.  
 749. Lend, *v.*—chieh<sup>4</sup> (tsieh<sup>4</sup>), 19, 35.  
 750. Lenient, *adj.*—k'u'an<sup>1</sup>, 135, 12.  
 751. Lens, *n.*—ching<sup>4</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 85, 19.  
 752. Leopard, *n.*—pao<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 88, 6.  
 753. Lessen, *v.*—chien<sup>3</sup>, 4, 18.  
 754. Lesson, *n.*—k'o<sup>4</sup>, 53, 7.  
 755. Lost, *conj.*—(for fear that) k'ung<sup>3</sup>-p'a<sup>4</sup>, 30, 38-39.  
 756. Let (to allow), *v.*—jang<sup>4</sup>, 76, 42.

757. Letter, *n.*—hsin<sup>4</sup>, 47, 6; (alphabet) tzü<sup>4</sup>, 11, 10.  
 758. Letter box, *n.*—hsin<sup>4</sup>-hsiang<sup>1</sup>, 47, 8.  
 759. Lettuce, *n.*—shêng<sup>1</sup>-ts'ai<sup>4</sup>, 36, 18.  
 760. Levy, *v.*—ch'ou<sup>1</sup>, 124, 23.  
 761. Liberal, *adj.*—k'uan<sup>1</sup>, 135, 12.  
 762. Liberty, *n.*—tzü<sup>4</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>, 111, 39.  
 763. Library, *n.*—t'u<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>, 63, 13.  
 764. Library card, *n.*—chieh<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-chêng<sup>1</sup>, 64, 21.  
 765. Lichi (fruit), *n.*—li<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>1</sup>, 93, 7.  
 766. Life, *n.*—shêng<sup>1</sup>, 19, 15; 23, 3; shêng<sup>1</sup>-ming<sup>4</sup>, 74, 11.  
 767. Light, *adj.*—(not heavy) juan<sup>3</sup>, 75, 24; (not dark) liang<sup>4</sup>, 83, 18.  
 768. Lightning, *n.*—shan<sup>3</sup>, 57, 7.  
 769. Like, *adj.*—ju<sup>2</sup>, 4, 19; shih<sup>4</sup>, 7, 12, 21, 35; *v.*—ai<sup>4</sup>, 19, 36; hsi<sup>3</sup>-huan<sup>0</sup>, 68, 46; 95, 52.  
 770. Lily, *n.*—pai<sup>3</sup>-ho<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, 94, 24.  
 771. Linguistics, *n.*—yü<sup>3</sup>-yen<sup>2</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 48.  
 772. Lion, *n.*—shih<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 88, 4.  
 773. Lip, *n.*—ch'un<sup>2</sup>, 34, 12.  
 774. Listen, *v.*—t'ing<sup>1</sup>, 8, 18.  
 775. Literature, *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 103, 15.  
 776. Little, *adj.*—(small in size) hsiao<sup>3</sup>, 6, 20; (small in quantity) shao<sup>3</sup>, 45, 57.  
 777. Live, *v.*—chu<sup>4</sup>, 144, 1.  
 778. Lock, *n.*—so<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 80, 11.  
 779. Logic, *n.*—lun<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 106, 52.  
 780. Long, *adj.*—ch'ang<sup>2</sup>, 20, 9; (time) chiu<sup>3</sup>, 41, 34; *adv.* (for a long time) chiu<sup>3</sup>, 41, 34.  
 781. Long live—wan<sup>4</sup>-sui<sup>4</sup>, 109, 2.  
 782. Look after, *v.*—kuan<sup>3</sup>, 131, 21.  
 783. Look for, *v.*—chao<sup>3</sup>, 18, 23.  
 784. Look up, *v.*—yang<sup>3</sup>, 41, 35.  
 785. Lose, *v.*—shih<sup>1</sup>, 118, 41.  
 786. Loss, *n.*—sun<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>1</sup>, 124, 17.  
 787. Lotus, *n.*—lien<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, 94, 25; ho<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, 94, 26.  
 788. Louse, *n.*—shih<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 89, 28.  
 789. Love, *n. v.*—ai<sup>4</sup>, 19, 36.  
 790. Lozenge, *n.*—chü<sup>3</sup>-p'ien<sup>4</sup>, 94, 22.  
 791. Lucid, *adj.*—ch'ing<sup>1</sup>, 20, 17.  
 792. Luck, *n.*—hsing<sup>4</sup>-yun<sup>4</sup>; yün<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>0</sup>, 144, 48.  
 793. Luggage, *n.*—hsing<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>0</sup>, 66, 12.  
 794. Lunch, *n.*—wu<sup>0</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>, 84, 14.

## M

795. Machine, *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>4</sup>, 48, 23.  
 796. Machine gun, *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, 67, 25.  
 797. Machinery, *n.*—chi<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>4</sup>, 48, 23.  
 798. Mad (insane), *adj.*—fêng<sup>1</sup>, 90, 46.  
 799. Madam, *n.*—t'ai<sup>4</sup>-t'ai<sup>0</sup>, 40, 10.  
 800. Magistrate, *n.*—(district) hsien<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>; hsien<sup>4</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, 125, 29.  
 801. Magnifying glass, *n.*—fang<sup>4</sup>-ta<sup>4</sup>-ching<sup>4</sup>, 85, 21.  
 802. Mail, *n.*—yu<sup>2</sup>-chien<sup>4</sup>, 47, 4.  
 803. Maintain, *v.*—shou<sup>3</sup>, 124, 26.  
 804. Make, *n.*—chih<sup>4</sup>, 148, 27.

805. Make, *v.*—tso<sup>4</sup>, 8, 6; 12, 32; (protest) t'i<sup>2</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup>, 113, 60; to make a speech, yen<sup>3</sup>-shuo<sup>1</sup>, 118, 46; to make an answer, (verbally) hui<sup>2</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, 118, 47; (by letter) hui<sup>2</sup>-hsin<sup>4</sup>.  
 806. Malaria, *n.*—yao<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>2</sup>, 60, 28.  
 807. Malay, *n.*—ma<sup>3</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>, 113, 66.  
 808. Man, *n.*—jén<sup>2</sup>, 3, 7.  
 809. Manage, *v.*—pan<sup>4</sup>, 44, 18.  
 810. Manager, *n.*—ching<sup>1</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>, 44, 22-23.  
 811. Mango, *n.*—mang<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>3</sup>, 93, 5.  
 812. Manifest, *v.*—fa<sup>1</sup>, 61, 54.  
 813. Manner, *n.*—yang<sup>4</sup>, 125, 34.  
 814. Manufacture, *v.*—chih<sup>1</sup>-tsao<sup>4</sup>, 95, 53.  
 815. Many, *adj.*—to<sup>1</sup>, 6, 19; 45, 57; hsü<sup>2</sup>-to<sup>1</sup>, 83, 19.  
 816. Map, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-t'u<sup>2</sup>, 106, 56.  
 817. March (month), *n.*—san<sup>1</sup> yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 15.  
 818. Market, *n.*—shih<sup>4</sup>, 43, 11.  
 819. Market rate, *n.*—hang<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 43, 11.  
 820. Marriage, *n.*—chia<sup>4</sup>-hun<sup>1</sup>, 40, 6-7.  
 821. Marry, *v.*—(to take a husband) chia<sup>4</sup>, 40, 6; (to take a wife) hun<sup>1</sup>, 40, 7.  
 822. Master of Arts (M.A.), *n.*—wén<sup>2</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 103, 24.  
 823. Master of Science (M.Sc.), *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>-k'o<sup>1</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 104, 29.  
 824. Match (for fire), *n.*—yang<sup>2</sup>-huo<sup>3</sup>, 37, 45.  
 825. Materialism, *n.*—wei<sup>2</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, 99, 31.  
 826. Maternal uncle, *n.*—chiu<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>0</sup>; chiu<sup>4</sup>-chiu<sup>0</sup>, 3, 25.  
 827. Maternal aunt, *n.*—chiu<sup>4</sup>-mu<sup>3</sup>, 3, 26.  
 828. Mathematics, *n.*—shu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 104, 35.  
 829. May, *n.*—(month) wu<sup>3</sup> yüeh<sup>4</sup>, 26, 17; *v.*—(indicating possibility) yeh<sup>2</sup>-hsü<sup>3</sup>, 13, 4; (indicating possibility) k'o<sup>1</sup>-i<sup>3</sup>, 131, 19.  
 830. Mayor, *n.*—shih<sup>1</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 117, 40.  
 831. Mean, *v.*—i<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>0</sup>, 110, 18.  
 832. Meaning, *n.*—i<sup>4</sup> (or i<sup>4</sup>-szü<sup>0</sup>), 80, 2.  
 833. Measles, *n.*—chén<sup>3</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 60, 35.  
 834. Meat, *n.*—ju<sup>4</sup> (jou<sup>4</sup>), 37, 25.  
 835. Medicine, *n.*—yao<sup>4</sup>, 59, 9.  
 836. Meet, *v.*—hui<sup>4</sup>, 41, 36; hsiang<sup>1</sup>-yü<sup>4</sup>, 86, 35; yü<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>0</sup>, 86, 36.  
 837. Meeting (conference), *n.*—hui<sup>4</sup>; hui<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>; t'an<sup>2</sup>-p'an<sup>4</sup>, 119, 59.  
 838. Melt, *v.*—hsiao<sup>1</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, 57, 19-20.  
 839. Member of the Parliament (M.P.), *n.*—kuo<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>-yuan<sup>2</sup>, 123, 2.  
 840. Memory, *n.*—chi<sup>4</sup>-hsing<sup>0</sup>, 106, 61.  
 841. Merchant, *n.*—shang<sup>1</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup>, 126, 50.  
 842. Metal, *n.*—chin<sup>1</sup>, 43, 1.  
 843. Method, *n.*—fa<sup>3</sup>, 54, 18.  
 844. Midday, *n.*—shang<sup>3</sup>, 27, 41.  
 845. Middle, *adj.*—chung<sup>1</sup>, 51, 2.  
 846. Milk, *n.*—(cow's) niu<sup>2</sup>-nai<sup>3</sup>, 36, 8.  
 847. Mill (factory), *n.*—chih<sup>4</sup>-tsao<sup>4</sup>-ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, 95, 41.  
 848. Mine (ores), *n.*—k'uang<sup>4</sup>, 43, 9.  
 849. Minister (cabinet post), *n.*—pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 116, 17.

850. Minister of Finance, *n.*—*ts'ni<sup>2</sup>*  
-ch'êng<sup>4</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 116, 22.  
851. Minister of Foreign Affairs, *n.*—  
wai<sup>4</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 116, 20.  
852. Ministry (office of cabinet official)  
*n.*—*pu<sup>4</sup>*, 116, 16.  
853. Ministry of Foreign Affairs, *n.*—  
wai<sup>4</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>-pm<sup>4</sup>, 116, 19.  
854. Mirror, *n.*—*ching<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>*, 71, 22.  
855. Miss, *n.*—(girl) *hsiao<sup>3</sup>-chich<sup>0</sup>*, 40,  
11-12.  
856. Mist, *n.*—*wu<sup>4</sup>*, 57, 11.  
857. Mister (Mr.), *n.*—*hsien<sup>1</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>*, 11,  
3; 40, 8-9.  
858. Mistress (Mrs.), *n.*—*t'ai<sup>4</sup>-t'ai<sup>0</sup>*, 40,  
10.  
859. Mixture (medical), *n.*—*yao<sup>4</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>*,  
59, 10.  
860. Modern, *adj.*—*hsin<sup>3</sup>*, 21, 33.  
861. Mohammedanism, *n.*—*hui<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>0</sup>*  
-chia<sup>4</sup> (hui<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>), 98, 3.  
862. Monday, *n.*—*li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>*; *hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>*  
-i<sup>1</sup>, 26, 7.  
863. Money, *n.*—*ch'i-en<sup>2</sup>*, 43, 12.  
864. Monkey, *n.*—*hou<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>*, 89, 22.  
865. Month, *n.*—*yüeh<sup>4</sup>*, 24, 18.  
866. Moon, *n.*—*yüeh<sup>4</sup>*, 24, 18.  
867. Moreover, *adv.*—*ping<sup>4</sup>-ch'ieh<sup>3</sup>*, 64,  
29; *yu<sup>4</sup>*, 107, 78.  
868. Morning, *n.*—*tsao<sup>3</sup>-shang<sup>0</sup>*, 31, 44.  
869. Mosquito, *n.*—*wén<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>*, 89, 30.  
870. Mosquito net, *n.*—*wén<sup>2</sup>-chang<sup>4</sup>*;  
chang<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 89, 31.  
871. Mother, *n.*—*mu<sup>3</sup>-ch'in<sup>0</sup>*, 3, 5.  
872. Motion (proposal), *n.*—*i<sup>4</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>*, 123, 9.  
873. Motion picture, *n.*—*ying<sup>3</sup>-hsí<sup>4</sup>*, 78, 5.  
874. Motorcar, *n.*—*ch'i<sup>4</sup>-ch'ê<sup>1</sup>*, 48, 19.  
875. Mount, *v.*—*ch'êng<sup>2</sup>*, 48, 35; (animal)  
*ch'i<sup>2</sup>*, 90, 49.  
876. Mountain, *n.*—*shan<sup>1</sup>*, 75, 14; hill,  
*n.*—*hsiao<sup>3</sup>* (= small) *shan<sup>1</sup>*.  
877. Mouse, *n.*—*hsiao<sup>2</sup>-lao<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>3</sup>*, 89, 20.  
878. Mouth, *n.*—*tsui<sup>3</sup>*, 34, 6; *k'ou<sup>3</sup>*, 70, 8.  
879. Move, *v.*—(a resolution) *t'i<sup>2</sup>*, 124, 11.  
880. Much, *adj.*—*to<sup>1</sup>*, 6, 19; 45, 57.  
881. Multiply, *v.*—*ch'êng<sup>2</sup>*, 143, 34.  
882. Municipal government, *n.*—*shih<sup>4</sup>*  
-ch'êng<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>3</sup>, 123, 5.  
883. Municipality, *n.*—*shih<sup>4</sup>-ch'u<sup>1</sup>*, 123,  
4.  
884. Must, *v.*—*pi<sup>4</sup>*, 18, 4; *yao<sup>4</sup>*, 18, 5;  
*pi<sup>4</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>*, 18, 4-5; *tei<sup>3</sup>*, 18, 6;  
must not, *pu<sup>4</sup> tei<sup>3</sup>*, 18, 8.  
885. Mutual, *adj.*—*hu<sup>4</sup>*, 112, 46.

## N

886. Name, *n.*—(surname) *hsing<sup>4</sup>*, 40, 19;  
(personal) *ming<sup>2</sup>*, 40, 17; (full  
name) *hsing<sup>4</sup>-ming<sup>2</sup>*, 40, 20.  
887. Named, *adj.*—*ming<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>*, 40, 18.  
888. Narrow, *adj.*—*hsia<sup>2</sup>*, 20, 13.  
889. Nation, *n.*—(country) *kuo<sup>2</sup>*, 51, 2.  
890. National, *adj.*—*kuo<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>*, 117, 34.  
891. National anthem, *n.*—*kuo<sup>2</sup>-ko<sup>1</sup>*,  
143, 29.  
892. National Cadet Corps (N.C.C.), *n.*—  
*kuo<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>* *lu<sup>4</sup>-chün<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>*  
-shêng<sup>0</sup>-tui<sup>4</sup>, 117, 34.  
893. National flag, *n.*—*kuo<sup>2</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>*, 118,  
51.

894. National language, *n.*—*kuo<sup>2</sup>-yü<sup>3</sup>*,  
143, 30.  
895. National library, *n.*—*kuo<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>-t'u<sup>2</sup>*  
-shu<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>, 63, 14.  
896. Nationalist Party, *n.*—*kuo<sup>2</sup>-min<sup>2</sup>*  
-tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 10.  
897. Native land, *n.*—*fu<sup>4</sup>-mu<sup>3</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>*,  
51, 17.  
898. Navy, *n.*—*hai<sup>3</sup>-chün<sup>1</sup>*, 67, 17.  
899. Near, *adv.*—*chin<sup>4</sup>*, 21, 37.  
900. Necessary, *adj.*—*hsü<sup>1</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>*, 75, 30.  
901. Needle, *n.*—*chén<sup>1</sup>*, 45, 48.  
902. Negligible, *adj.*—*pu<sup>2</sup>-chung<sup>4</sup>-yao<sup>4</sup>*,  
136, 28.  
903. Neigh, *v.*—*ming<sup>2</sup>*, 90, 55.  
904. Nephew, *n.*—(brother's son) *chih<sup>2</sup>*  
-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 130, 8; (sister's son) *wai<sup>4</sup>*  
-shêng<sup>0</sup>, 130, 6.  
905. Nest (of a bird), *n.*—*wo<sup>1</sup>*, 90, 43.  
906. Never, *adv.*—*ts'ung<sup>2</sup>-lai<sup>2</sup>-mei<sup>2</sup>*, 79,  
18; *yung<sup>2</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>*, 86, 40.  
907. New, *adj.*—*hsin<sup>1</sup>*, 21, 33.  
908. Newspaper, *n.*—*pao<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>*, 160, 1.  
909. Next year, *n.*—*ming<sup>2</sup>-nien<sup>0</sup>*, 24, 12.  
910. Niece, *n.*—(brother's daughter)  
*chih<sup>2</sup>-nü<sup>0</sup>*, 130, 9; (sister's daughter)  
*wai<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>-nü<sup>3</sup>*, 130, 7.  
911. Night, *n.*—*ye<sup>4</sup>*, 137, 41.  
912. Nine, *n. adj.*—*chiu<sup>3</sup>*, 4, 9.  
913. No, *adv.*—*pu<sup>4</sup>*, 2, 12.  
914. Noble, *adj.*—*kao<sup>1</sup>*, 20, 11.  
915. Nobody, *pron.*—*mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>0</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup>*,  
130, 10.  
916. Nom-de-plume—*pi<sup>3</sup>-ming<sup>2</sup>*, 41, 21.  
917. North, *n.*—*pei<sup>3</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>*, 84, 3.  
918. North-east, *n.*—*tung<sup>1</sup>-pei<sup>3</sup>*, 84, 5.  
919. North-west, *n.*—*hsí<sup>1</sup>-pei<sup>3</sup>*, 84, 7.  
920. Nose, *n.*—*pi<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>*, 34, 9.  
921. Not, *adv.*—(with 'to be' verb) *pu<sup>4</sup>*,  
2, 12; (with 'to have' verb) *mei<sup>2</sup>*,  
2, 13.  
922. Nothing, *n.*—*mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>-shén<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>*,  
130, 12.  
923. Novel, *n.*—*hsiao<sup>3</sup>-shuo<sup>1</sup>*, 64, 15.  
924. November, *n.*—*shih<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>2</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>*, 27,  
23.  
925. Now, *adv.*—*chin<sup>1</sup>*, 24, 1; *hsien<sup>4</sup>-tsai<sup>4</sup>*,  
27, 34-35; 45, 56.  
926. Nowhere, *adv.*—*mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>-fang<sup>0</sup>*,  
130, 15.  
927. Number, *n.*—*shu<sup>4</sup>*, 48, 30; *hao<sup>4</sup>-ma<sup>3</sup>*,  
54, 16.

## O

928. Ocean, *n.*—*yang<sup>2</sup>*, 48, 26.  
929. O'clock, *n.*—*tien<sup>3</sup>-chung<sup>1</sup>*, 27, 27,  
25.  
930. October, *n.*—*shih<sup>2</sup>-yüeh<sup>4</sup>*, 26, 22.  
931. Of course—*tzü<sup>4</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>*, 30, 26.  
932. Office, *n.*—(place where business is  
transacted) *pan<sup>4</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>-t'ing<sup>1</sup>*, 44,  
18-20.  
933. Officer (military), *n.*—*chün<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>*,  
67, 29.  
934. Oil, *n.*—*yu<sup>2</sup>*, 36, 15; 151, 9.  
935. Old, *adj.*—(aged) *lao<sup>3</sup>*, 20, 8; (not  
new) *chiu<sup>4</sup>*, 158, 54.  
936. One, *n. adj.*—*i<sup>1</sup>*, 4, 1.  
937. Onion, *n.*—*ts'ung<sup>1</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>*, 93, 15.  
938. Only, *adv.*—*chiu<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>*, 30, 35;  
*chih<sup>3</sup>*, 30, 40; 76, 44; *chin<sup>4</sup>-chin<sup>4</sup>*,  
76, 45.

939. On the contrary—hsiang<sup>1</sup>.fan<sup>3</sup>.ti<sup>0</sup>, 100, 46.  
 940. Open, *v.*—k'ai<sup>1</sup>, 19, 38.  
 941. Opinion, *n.*—i<sup>4</sup>, 80, 2; i<sup>4</sup>.chien<sup>4</sup>, 119, 68.  
 942. Opportunity, *n.*—chil<sup>1</sup>.hui<sup>0</sup>, 131, 25.  
 943. Oppose, *v.*—tui<sup>3</sup>, 41, 28; fan<sup>3</sup>.tui<sup>4</sup>, 109, 12.  
 944. Opposition, *n.*—fan<sup>3</sup>.tui<sup>4</sup>, 109, 12.  
 945. Opposition Party, *n.*—fan<sup>3</sup>.tui<sup>4</sup>—tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 12.  
 946. Oppression, *n.*—ya<sup>1</sup>.chih<sup>4</sup>, 111, 32.  
 947. Or, *conj.*—hai<sup>2</sup>, 29, 2; pu<sup>4</sup>.jan<sup>2</sup>, 30, 29; huo<sup>4</sup>, 30, 32; huo<sup>4</sup>.ch<sup>0</sup>, 30, 32-33; huo<sup>4</sup>.shih<sup>4</sup>, 54, 32.  
 948. Orange, *n.*—chu<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 93, 4.  
 949. Otherwise, *conj.*—pu<sup>4</sup>.jan<sup>2</sup>, 30, 29.  
 950. Ought, *v.*—ying<sup>1</sup>.kai<sup>1</sup>, 68, 43; ying<sup>1</sup>.tang<sup>1</sup>, 135, 13.  
 951. Out, *adv. prep.*—wai<sup>4</sup>.t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 29, 17; ch'u<sup>1</sup>, 31, 53.  
 952. Outside, *adj.*—wai<sup>4</sup>.t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 29, 17.

P

953. Pacify, *v.*—ching<sup>4</sup> (tsing<sup>4</sup>), 75, 29.  
 954. Pact, *n.*—hsieh<sup>2</sup>.ting<sup>4</sup>, 112, 50.  
 955. Pakistan, *n.*—pa<sup>1</sup>.chi<sup>1</sup>.su<sup>1</sup>.tan<sup>4</sup>, 51, 11.  
 956. Pants (trousers), *n.*—ch'én<sup>4</sup>.k'u<sup>4</sup>, 44, 29.  
 957. Paper, *n.*—chih<sup>3</sup>, 95, 42.  
 958. Paper mill, *n.*—tsao<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>2</sup>.ch'ang<sup>3</sup>, 95, 42.  
 959. Parents, *n.*—fu<sup>4</sup>.mu<sup>3</sup>.ch'in<sup>0</sup>, 3, 6.  
 960. Park, *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>.yüan<sup>2</sup>, 38, 53-54.  
 961. Parliament, *n.*—kuo<sup>2</sup>.hui<sup>4</sup>, 123, 1.  
 962. Participate, *v.*—ts'an<sup>1</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>, 119, 62.  
 963. Participation, *n.*—ts'an<sup>1</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>, 119, 62.  
 964. Pass (as an examination), *v.*—chi<sup>2</sup>.ko<sup>2</sup>, 64, 23.  
 965. Passenger, *n.*—ch'êng<sup>2</sup>.k'ê<sup>4</sup>, 85, 28.  
 966. Passport, *n.*—hu<sup>4</sup>.chao<sup>4</sup>, 67, 13.  
 967. Past, *adj.*—kuo<sup>4</sup>.ch'u<sup>4</sup>, 27, 36-37.  
 968. Patient, *n.*—ping<sup>4</sup>.jén<sup>2</sup>, 59, 3.  
 969. Pay, *v.*—fu<sup>4</sup>, 124, 24.  
 970. Peace, *n.*—ho<sup>2</sup>.p'ing<sup>2</sup>, 74, 6.  
 971. Peacock, *n.*—k'ung<sup>2</sup>.ch'iao<sup>3</sup>, 90, 41.  
 972. Pen, *n.*—pi<sup>3</sup>, 11, 20.  
 973. Pencil, *n.*—ch'ien<sup>1</sup>.pi<sup>3</sup>, 11, 21.  
 974. People, *n.*—jén<sup>2</sup>.chia<sup>0</sup>, 11, 8; jén<sup>2</sup>.min<sup>2</sup>, 100, 32.  
 975. People's Party, *n.*—min<sup>2</sup>.tang<sup>2</sup>, 109, 5.  
 976. Pepper, *n.*—hu<sup>2</sup>.chia<sup>1</sup>, 36, 22-23.  
 977. Perceive, *v.*—chüeh<sup>2</sup>, 120, 81.  
 978. Percentage (per cent), *n.*—ch'êng<sup>2</sup>, 143, 31.  
 979. Perfect, *adj.*—ch'u'an<sup>2</sup>, 54, 29.  
 980. Perhaps, *adv.*—yeh<sup>2</sup>.hsü<sup>3</sup>, 137, 42.  
 981. Persia, *n.*—po<sup>1</sup>.szü<sup>1</sup> (-kuo<sup>0</sup>), 51, 12.  
 982. Personal, *adj.*—szü<sup>1</sup>.jén<sup>2</sup>, 76, 41.  
 983. Philology, *n.*—yü<sup>3</sup>.yen<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 48.  
 984. Philosophy, *n.*—chê<sup>2</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 106, 53.  
 985. Photograph, *n.*—chao<sup>4</sup>.p'ien<sup>4</sup>; hsi-ang<sup>4</sup>.p'ien<sup>4</sup>, 84, 16.

986. Physician, *n.*—i<sup>1</sup>.shêng<sup>0</sup>, 59, 4-5; tai<sup>4</sup>.fu<sup>0</sup>, 59, 6-7.  
 987. Physics, *n.*—wu<sup>4</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 39.  
 988. Physiology, *n.*—shêng<sup>1</sup>.li<sup>3</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 42.  
 989. Pickpocket, *n.*—p'a<sup>2</sup>.shou<sup>0</sup>, 136, 23.  
 990. Pick up, *v.*—na<sup>2</sup>.ch'i<sup>3</sup>.lai<sup>0</sup>, 72, 37.  
 991. Picture (painting), *n.*—hua<sup>4</sup>, 71, 25.  
 992. Pig (hog), *n.*—chu<sup>1</sup>, 37, 33.  
 993. Pigeon, *n.*—chiu<sup>1</sup>, 37, 34.  
 994. Pill (tablet), *n.*—yao<sup>4</sup>.wan<sup>2</sup>, 59, 11.  
 995. Pineapple, *n.*—po<sup>1</sup>.lo<sup>2</sup>.kuo<sup>3</sup>, 93, 6.  
 996. Pious, *adj.*—ch'ien<sup>2</sup>.hsin<sup>1</sup>, 100, 38.  
 997. Pistol, *n.*—shou<sup>3</sup>.ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, 67, 24.  
 998. Place, *n.*—(region) ti<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>0</sup>, 74, 2; e.—ko<sup>1</sup>, 54, 24; 107, 70.  
 999. Plague, *n.*—wén<sup>1</sup>.i<sup>4</sup>, 61, 45.  
 1000. Plant (herb), *n.*—ts'a<sup>3</sup>, 24, 19.  
 1001. Plaster (medicated), *n.*—kao<sup>1</sup>.yao<sup>4</sup>, 60, 23.  
 1002. Plate (dish), *n.*—p'an<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 37, 37.  
 1003. Platform, *n.*—t'ai<sup>2</sup>, 78, 11.  
 1004. Platinum, *n.*—pai<sup>2</sup>.chin<sup>1</sup>, 43, 7.  
 1005. Play, *n.*—(drama) hsi<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>4</sup>, 78, 7; v.—wan<sup>2</sup>, 8, 13; (as cards, balls) ta<sup>2</sup>, 68, 45; with, nien<sup>2</sup>, 83, 22.  
 1006. Playing card, *n.*—chih<sup>3</sup>.p'ai<sup>2</sup>, 68, 38.  
 1007. Please, *v.*—ch'ing<sup>3</sup>, 9, 38.  
 1008. Pneumonia, *n.*—fei<sup>4</sup>.yen<sup>2</sup>, 60, 42.  
 1009. Pocket, *n.*—k'ou<sup>3</sup>.tai<sup>0</sup>, 81, 13.  
 1010. Poem, *n.*—shih<sup>1</sup>, 103, 18.  
 1011. Poet, *n.*—shih<sup>1</sup>.jén<sup>2</sup>, 103, 19.  
 1012. Poetess, *n.*—nü<sup>3</sup>.shih<sup>1</sup>.jén<sup>2</sup>, 103, 20.  
 1013. Poetry, *n.*—shih<sup>3</sup>, 103, 18.  
 1014. Police, *n.*—ching<sup>3</sup>.ch'a<sup>2</sup>, 66, 1.  
 1015. Police station, *n.*—ching<sup>3</sup>.ch'a<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>2</sup>, 66, 2.  
 1016. Politics, *n.*—chêng<sup>4</sup>.chih<sup>4</sup>.hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 50.  
 1017. Pond, *n.*—shui<sup>3</sup>.ch'ih<sup>2</sup>.tzü<sup>0</sup>, 94, 27.  
 1018. Poor, *adj.*—ch'iung<sup>2</sup>, 20, 16.  
 1019. Popular, *adj.*—tê<sup>2</sup>.jén<sup>2</sup>.hsin<sup>1</sup> (ti<sup>0</sup>), 118, 43.  
 1020. Post card, *n.*—hsin<sup>4</sup>.p'ien<sup>4</sup>, 47, 7.  
 1021. Post office, *n.*—yu<sup>2</sup>.chêng<sup>4</sup>.chu<sup>2</sup>, 47, 1.  
 1022. Post master, *n.*—yu<sup>2</sup>.chu<sup>2</sup>.chang<sup>3</sup>, 47, 2.  
 1023. Postal peon (postman), *n.*—yu<sup>2</sup>.ch'ail<sup>1</sup>, 43, 3.  
 1024. Pot, *n.*—hu<sup>2</sup>, 37, 35.  
 1025. Potato, *n.*—ma<sup>3</sup>.ling<sup>2</sup>.shu<sup>3</sup>, 94, 19.  
 1026. Poverty, *n.*—p'in<sup>2</sup>.k'u<sup>3</sup>; ch'iung<sup>2</sup>.k'u<sup>3</sup>, 111, 40.  
 1027. Powder, *n.*—fén<sup>3</sup>, 11, 19; 131, 36.  
 1028. Power, *n.*—li<sup>4</sup>, 18, 2; néng<sup>2</sup>.li<sup>4</sup>, 18, 1-2.  
 1029. Pray, *v.*—ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, 12, 31; tao<sup>3</sup>, 41, 27.  
 1030. Prayer, *n.*—tao<sup>3</sup>, 41, 27.  
 1031. Preach, *v.*—chiang<sup>3</sup>, 12, 36.  
 1032. Preface, *n.*—hsü<sup>4</sup>; hsü<sup>4</sup>.yen<sup>2</sup>, 141, 7.  
 1033. Prefer, *v.*—ning<sup>2</sup>, 138, 48.  
 1034. Prepare, *v.*—yu<sup>4</sup>.pei<sup>4</sup>, 148, 18.  
 1035. Prescription, *n.*—yao<sup>4</sup>.fang<sup>1</sup>, 60, 24.

1036. Present, *n.*—(present time) hsien<sup>4</sup>-tsai<sup>4</sup>, 27, 34-35; *v.*—(to submit) ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, 120, 77.

1037. Preserve, *v.*—pao<sup>3</sup>, 148, 19.

1038. Preside, *v.*—chu<sup>3</sup>-ch'ih<sup>2</sup>, 119, 61.

1039. President, *n.*—(of a country) tsung<sup>3</sup>-ts'ai<sup>2</sup>; ta<sup>4</sup>-tsung<sup>2</sup>-t'ung<sup>3</sup>, 115, 7; (of a college or university) ta<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-hsiao<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 115, 9; (of an association) hui<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 115, 10.

1040. Press, *v.*—(to extract juice, oil, etc.) cha<sup>4</sup>, 95, 54.

1041. Pretty, *adj.*—p'iao<sup>1</sup>-liang<sup>4</sup>, 20, 4-5.

1042. Price, *n.*—chia<sup>4</sup>-ch'ien<sup>9</sup>, 44, 17.

1043. Primary school, *n.*—hsiao<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 102, 8.

1044. Prime Minister, *n.*—shou<sup>3</sup>-hsiang<sup>4</sup>, 116, 18.

1045. Principal (of a college), *n.*—hsiao<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 102, 2.

1046. Print, *v.*—yin<sup>4</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>, 80, 8.

1047. Printing machine (press), *n.*—yin<sup>4</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>, 80, 9.

1048. Printed matter, *n.*—yin<sup>4</sup>-shua<sup>1</sup>-p'in<sup>3</sup>, 80, 10.

1049. Prison, *n.*—yü<sup>4</sup>, 66, 10.

1050. Private, *adj.*—szü<sup>1</sup>; szü<sup>1</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup>, 76, 41.

1051. Prize, *n.*—chiang<sup>2</sup>-p'in<sup>3</sup>, 135, 3.

1052. Professor, *n.*—chia<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>4</sup>, 102, 10.

1053. Profit, *n.*—i<sup>4</sup>-ch'u<sup>0</sup>, 124, 16.

1054. Prohibit, *v.*—chin<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>3</sup>, 135, 8.

1055. Propose, *v.*—t'i<sup>2</sup>, 124, 11.

1056. Prose, *n.*—san<sup>3</sup>-wén<sup>2</sup>, 103, 15.

1057. Prose writer, *n.*—san<sup>3</sup>-wén<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, 103, 17.

1058. Prosperity, *n.*—fan<sup>2</sup>-jung<sup>2</sup>, 111, 42.

1059. Protect, *v.*—pao<sup>3</sup>-hu<sup>0</sup>; pao<sup>3</sup>-chang<sup>4</sup>, 100, 40.

1060. Protection, *n.*—pao<sup>3</sup>-hu<sup>0</sup>; pao<sup>3</sup>-chang<sup>4</sup>, 100, 40.

1061. Protest, *n. v.*—k'ang<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, 113, 61.

1062. Province (administrative unit), *n.*—shêng<sup>3</sup>, 102, 1.

1063. Provincial government, *n.*—shêng<sup>3</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-fu<sup>3</sup>, 116, 15.

1064. Psychology, *n.*—hsin<sup>1</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 47.

1065. Public, *adj.*—kung<sup>1</sup>, 44, 19; 48, 21; kung<sup>1</sup>-kung<sup>4</sup>, 48, 21.

1066. Publish, *v.*—kung<sup>1</sup>-pu<sup>4</sup>, 106, 62.

1067. Pull, *v.*—kou<sup>4</sup>, 64, 27; la<sup>1</sup>, 83, 20.

1068. Pulse, *n.*—mai<sup>4</sup>, 59, 22.

1069. Pungent, *adj.*—la<sup>4</sup>, 95, 48.

1070. Punkha, *n.*—fêng<sup>1</sup>-shan<sup>4</sup>, 82, 13.

1071. Puppy, *n.*—hsiao<sup>2</sup>-kou<sup>3</sup>, 88, 17.

1072. Pure, *adj.*—ch'ing<sup>1</sup>, 20, 17.

1073. Purple, *adj.*—kan<sup>4</sup>, 31, 65.

1074. Purpose, *n.*—i<sup>4</sup>, 80, 2.

1075. Put, *v.*—fang<sup>4</sup>, 19, 40; ko<sup>1</sup>, 54, 24; 107, 70.

1076. Put off, *v.*—t'uol<sup>1</sup>, 45, 47; (the light), *v.*—kuan<sup>1</sup> (téng<sup>1</sup>), 82, 12.

1077. Put on, *v.*—ch'uán<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>0</sup>, 45, 45; ch'uán<sup>1</sup>, 45, 46; (the light), *v.*—k'ai<sup>1</sup> (téng<sup>1</sup>), 82, 11.

## Q

1078. Quarter (fifteen minutes), *n.*—k'o<sup>4</sup>, 27, 28.

1079. Queen, *n.*—wang<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>4</sup>, 115, 2.

1080. Question, *n.*—t'i<sup>2</sup>-mu<sup>4</sup>, 63, 4.

1081. Quickly, *adv.*—k'uai<sup>4</sup>, 61, 60.

1082. Quiet, *adj.*—ching<sup>4</sup> (tsing<sup>4</sup>), 75, 29.

1083. Qur'an, *n.*—k'o<sup>3</sup>-lan<sup>2</sup>, 98, 10.

## R

1084. Radical (portions of Chinese characters), *n.*—pu<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>, 53, 15.

1085. Radio, *n.*—wu<sup>2</sup>-hsien<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>4</sup>, 78, 3.

1086. Railway station, *n.*—huo<sup>3</sup>-ch'ü<sup>1</sup>-chan<sup>4</sup>, 48, 18.

1087. Rain, *n.*—yü<sup>3</sup>, 57, 5.

1088. Raise, *v.*—ch'i<sup>3</sup>, 41, 29; 54, 21; 72, 37.

1089. Rapidly, *adv.*—k'uai<sup>4</sup>, 61, 60.

1090. Rat, *n.*—lao<sup>2</sup>-shu<sup>3</sup>, 89, 19.

1091. Rather, *adv.*—ning<sup>2</sup>, 138, 48.

1092. Razor, *n.*—kua<sup>1</sup>-lien<sup>3</sup>-tao<sup>1</sup>, 71, 18.

1093. Reach, *v.*—tao<sup>4</sup>, 18, 17.

1094. Read, *v.*—tu<sup>2</sup>, 12, 25.

1095. Ready, *adj.*—chun<sup>3</sup>-pei<sup>4</sup>, 137, 39.

1096. Reason, *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>, 136, 16.

1097. Rebel, *v.*—ni<sup>4</sup>, 76, 38.

1098. Rebellion, *n.*—ni<sup>4</sup>, 76, 38.

1099. Receive, *v.*—chieh<sup>1</sup>, 48, 32; ling<sup>3</sup>, 118, 52.

1100. Recklessly, *adv.*—hu<sup>2</sup>, 41, 31.

1101. Reckon, *v.*—suan<sup>4</sup>, 45, 55.

1102. Recognize, *v.*—jén<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, 9, 31; jén<sup>4</sup>, 137, 44.

1103. Record (of gramophone), *n.*—p'ien<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 78, 2.

1104. Red, *adj.*—hung<sup>2</sup>, 31, 59.

1105. Reflect (to illumine), *v.*—chao<sup>4</sup>, 83, 21.

1106. Refuse, *v.*—chü<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>2</sup> (tsüeh<sup>2</sup>), 76, 37.

1107. Registrar (administrative officer of an educational institution), *n.*—chu<sup>4</sup>-ts'ê<sup>4</sup>-ch'u<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-jén<sup>4</sup>, 102, 4.

1108. Relative (relation), *n.*—ch'in<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>0</sup>, 144, 46.

1109. Religion, *n.*—tsung<sup>1</sup>-chia<sup>4</sup>, 98, 1.

1110. Remember, *v.*—chi<sup>4</sup>-tê<sup>0</sup>, 54, 27; 141, 4.

1111. Remind, *v.*—t'i<sup>2</sup>-hsing<sup>3</sup>, 143, 32.

1112. Remove, *v.*—hsiao<sup>1</sup>-mieh<sup>4</sup>, 112, 44.

1113. Repay, *v.*—huan<sup>2</sup>, 29, 2.

1114. Reply, *v.*—ta<sup>2</sup>-fu<sup>0</sup>, 18, 15-16.

1115. Report, *n.*—pao<sup>4</sup>-kao<sup>4</sup>, 66, 9.

1116. Republican party, *n.*—kung<sup>4</sup>-ho<sup>2</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 8.

1117. Reputation, *n.*—ming<sup>2</sup>-yü<sup>4</sup>, 118, 42.

1118. Request, *v.*—ch'ing<sup>3</sup>, 9, 38.

1119. Resign, *v.*—tz'ô<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>2</sup>, 125, 30.

1120. Resignation, *n.*—tz'ô<sup>2</sup>-chih<sup>2</sup>, 125, 30.

1121. Resist, *v.*—fan<sup>3</sup>-k'ang<sup>4</sup>, 76, 36.

1122. Resolution (formal adoption by vote), *n.*—i<sup>4</sup>-chüeh<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>4</sup>, 123, 8.

1123. Restaurant, *n.*—ts'an<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>3</sup>, 38, 49.

1124. Restore, *v.*—hui<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>0</sup>, 120, 90.

1125. Return, *v.*—hui<sup>2</sup>, 4, 20; 32, 66.

1126. Revolution, *n.*—ko<sup>2</sup>-ming<sup>4</sup>, 109, 1.  
 1127. Revolve, *v.*—lun<sup>2</sup>-chuan<sup>4</sup>, 75, 19.  
 1128. Revolver, *n.*—liu<sup>4</sup>-lun<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, 67, 26; chuan<sup>4</sup>-lun<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>, 67, 27; or shou<sup>3</sup>-ch'iang<sup>1</sup>.  
 1129. Rhinoceros, *n.*—hsı<sup>1</sup>-niu<sup>2</sup>, 88, 7.  
 1130. Rice, *n.*—(cooked) fan<sup>4</sup>, 36, 1; (uncooked) mi<sup>3</sup>, 36, 2.  
 1131. Rich, *adj.*—fu<sup>4</sup>, 20, 15.  
 1132. Rickshaw, *n.*—yang<sup>2</sup>-ch'el, 85, 25.  
 1133. Ride *v.*—(to mount upon, as an animal, a carriage, a boat, etc.) ch'eng<sup>2</sup>, 48, 35; (to be borne in a vehicle) tso<sup>4</sup>, 85, 32; (to mount upon, as an animal) ch'i<sup>2</sup>, 90, 49.  
 1134. Right, *adj.*—(yes) shih<sup>4</sup>, 21, 35; (toward the right hand) yu<sup>4</sup>, 61, 49; 95, 51; (correct) tui<sup>4</sup>, 119, 74.  
 1135. Rinse, *v.*—(as the mouth) shu<sup>4</sup>, 72, 39.  
 1136. Riot, *n.*—pao<sup>4</sup>-tung<sup>4</sup>; pao<sup>4</sup>-luan<sup>4</sup>, 110, 27.  
 1137. Ripe, *adj.*—shu<sup>2</sup>, 95, 49.  
 1138. Rise, *v.*—(to go up) chi<sup>1</sup>, 32, 70; (to get up) ch'i<sup>3</sup>, 41, 29; 54, 21, 72, 37; (as the temperature) fa<sup>1</sup>, 61, 54; (to come up from the horizon, as the sun) ch'u<sup>1</sup>, 85, 33.  
 1139. River, *n.*—ho<sup>2</sup>, 48, 29.  
 1140. Road, *n.*—tao<sup>4</sup>-érh<sup>0</sup>, 8, 28; tao<sup>4</sup>, 63, 12; lu<sup>4</sup>, 74, 7.  
 1141. Roam, *v.*—yu<sup>2</sup>, 72, 35; yu<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>0</sup>, 90, 50.  
 1142. Roar, *v.*—hou<sup>2</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, 90, 48.  
 1143. Robber, *n.*—ch'iang<sup>2</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>, 136, 22.  
 1144. Rock, *n.*—shih<sup>2</sup>, 11, 18; 75, 15.  
 1145. Room, *n.*—fang<sup>2</sup>-chien<sup>1</sup>, 38, 52; t'ing<sup>1</sup>, 44, 20; wu<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 82, 14.  
 1146. Root, *n.*—p'en<sup>3</sup>, 11, 15; (source) k'en<sup>1</sup>-p'en<sup>3</sup>, 99, 19.  
 1147. Rose, *n.*—mei<sup>2</sup>-kuei<sup>4</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, 94, 23.  
 1148. Rouge, *n.*—yen<sup>1</sup>-chih<sup>0</sup>, 131, 35.  
 1149. Rub, *v.*—ts'a<sup>1</sup>, 54, 22; 132, 43.  
 1150. Rub out (rub off), *v.*—ts'a<sup>1</sup>-ch'ü<sup>4</sup>, 54, 23.  
 1151. Rub over, *v.*—ts'o<sup>1</sup>-shang<sup>0</sup>, 72, 38.  
 1152. Rubber, *n.*—hsiang<sup>4</sup>-p'i<sup>2</sup>, 80, 6.  
 1153. Rule (regulation), *n.*—kuei<sup>1</sup>-chü<sup>0</sup>, 124, 19.  
 1154. Run, *v.*—p'ao<sup>2</sup>, 8, 24.  
 1155. Russia, *n.*—o<sup>2</sup>-kuo<sup>0</sup>, 51, 4.

## S

1156. Sacred, *adj.*—shêng<sup>4</sup>, 98, 11.  
 1157. Safe, *adj.*—p'ing<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>1</sup>, 75, 27.  
 1158. Safety, *n.*—p'ing<sup>2</sup>-an<sup>1</sup>, 75, 27.  
 1159. Sailor, *n.*—shui<sup>2</sup>-shou<sup>3</sup>, 85, 27.  
 1160. Salad, *n.*—shêng<sup>1</sup>-ts'a<sup>1</sup>, 36, 18.  
 1161. Salary, *n.*—hsin<sup>1</sup>-fêng<sup>4</sup>, 118, 54.  
 1162. Salt, *n.*—yen<sup>2</sup>, 36, 21.  
 1163. Same, *adj.*—i<sup>2</sup>-yang<sup>4</sup>, 6, 15; t'ung<sup>2</sup>, 29, 3.  
 1164. Sample, *n.*—yang<sup>4</sup>, 125, 34.  
 1165. Saturday, *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-liu<sup>4</sup>; hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-liu<sup>4</sup>, 26, 12.  
 1166. Sauce, *n.*—chiang<sup>4</sup>-yu<sup>2</sup>, 36, 15.  
 1167. Scenery, *n.*—shan<sup>1</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, 84, 11.  
 1168. School, *n.*—hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-t'ang<sup>2</sup>, 11, 12.

1169. School mate, *n.*—t'ung<sup>2</sup>-ch'uang<sup>1</sup>, 143, 45.  
 1170. Science, *n.*—k'o<sup>1</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 103, 14.  
 1171. Scissors, *n.*—chien<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 71, 20.  
 1172. Scold, *v.*—ma<sup>1</sup>, 137, 38.  
 1173. Scorpion, *n.*—hsieh<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 89, 32.  
 1174. Sea, *n.*—hai<sup>2</sup>, 48, 27.  
 1175. Sealed letter, *n.*—fêng<sup>1</sup>-hsin<sup>4</sup>, 47, 9.  
 1176. Search, *v.*—ch'a<sup>2</sup>, 54, 26.  
 1177. Second, *adj.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-érh<sup>4</sup>, 4; *v.* (a resolution) fu<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, 124, 12.  
 1178. Second class, *n.*—érh<sup>4</sup>-têng<sup>3</sup>, 78, 14.  
 1179. Second floor, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-érh<sup>4</sup>-ts'êng<sup>2</sup>-lou<sup>2</sup>, 82, 2.  
 1180. Second tone, *n.*—yang<sup>2</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup>, 53, 12.  
 1181. Secretariat, *n.*—mi<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-ch'u<sup>4</sup>, 125, 38.  
 1182. Secretary, *n.*—mi<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>, 125, 37.  
 1183. Section (chapter of a book), *n.*—chang<sup>1</sup>, 53, 6.  
 1184. Secular, *adj.*—fan<sup>2</sup>-su<sup>2</sup>, 120, 93.  
 1185. See, *v.*—chien<sup>4</sup>, 4, 21; k'an<sup>4</sup>-chien<sup>0</sup>, 8, 5.  
 1186. Seek, *v.*—chao<sup>3</sup>, 18, 23; 72, 42.  
 1187. Seize, *v.*—la<sup>1</sup>, 83, 20; chua<sup>1</sup>, 131, 27.  
 1188. Seldom, *adv.*—han<sup>2</sup>, 91, 65.  
 1189. Self, *n.*—tzü<sup>4</sup>-chi<sup>3</sup>, 1, 9.  
 1190. Sell, *v.*—mai<sup>4</sup>, 8, 19.  
 1191. Send, *v.*—(to dispatch by mail) chi<sup>4</sup>, 48, 34; (transmit, as telegram) ta<sup>3</sup>, 61, 57; sung<sup>4</sup>, 137, 31.  
 1192. Sense, *n.*—chüeh<sup>2</sup>, 120, 81.  
 1193. Sentence, *n.*—chü<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 135, 10.  
 1194. September, *n.*—chiu<sup>3</sup>-yüeh<sup>1</sup>, 26, 21.  
 1195. Set, *v.*—(as the sun) to<sup>4</sup>, 79, 17; (to go down) lao<sup>4</sup>, 85, 34.  
 1196. Settle, *v.*—ting<sup>4</sup>, 112, 47.  
 1197. Seven, *n. adj.*—ch'i<sup>1</sup>, 4, 7.  
 1198. Several, *adj.*—chi<sup>3</sup>, 6, 25; 27, 29.  
 1199. Sew, *v.*—fêng<sup>2</sup>, 45, 43.  
 1200. Sew up, *v.*—fêng<sup>2</sup>-shang<sup>0</sup>, 45, 44.  
 1201. Shampoo, *n.*—hsı<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>2</sup>, 71, 23.  
 1202. Sharp, *adj.*—k'uai<sup>4</sup>, 22, 5.  
 1203. Sharpen, *v.*—mo<sup>2</sup>, 72, 40.  
 1204. Shave, *v.*—kua<sup>1</sup>, 71, 18.  
 1205. She, *pron.*—t'a<sup>1</sup>, 1, 5.  
 1206. Sheep, *n.*—yang<sup>2</sup>, 37, 30.  
 1207. Shelf, *n.*—chia<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 64, 17.  
 1208. Shine, *v.*—chao<sup>4</sup>, 119, 67.  
 1209. Ship, *n.*—ch'u'an<sup>2</sup>, 48, 24.  
 1210. Shirt, *n.*—ch'én<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>, 44, 27-28.  
 1211. Shoe, *n.*—hsieh<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 45, 39.  
 1212. Shop, *n.*—p'u<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 44, 21.  
 1213. Short, *adj.*—(in length) tuan<sup>3</sup>, 20, 10.  
 1214. Should, *v.*—ying<sup>1</sup>-kai<sup>1</sup>, 68, 43; ying<sup>1</sup>-tang<sup>1</sup>, 135, 13.  
 1215. Shut, *v.*—ho<sup>2</sup>, 19, 37; 107, 69.  
 1216. Shy, *adj.*—hai<sup>4</sup>-hsiu<sup>1</sup>, 136, 18.  
 1217. Sick, *adj.*—ping<sup>4</sup>, 59, 2.  
 1218. Sign, *v.*—ch'ien<sup>1</sup>, 64, 28; 112, 54.  
 1219. Silver, *n.*—yin<sup>2</sup>, 43, 2.  
 1220. Since, *conj.*—chi<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 27, 45-46; chi<sup>4</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, 30, 28.  
 1221. Sing, *v.*—ch'ang<sup>4</sup>, 12, 34.  
 1222. Sink, *v.*—to<sup>4</sup>, 79, 17; 91, 62.  
 1223. Sir, *n.*—hsien<sup>1</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>, 11, 3.  
 1224. Sister, *n.*—chieh<sup>3</sup>-mei<sup>4</sup> (mo<sup>4</sup>), 3, 19.

1225. Sit, v.—tso<sup>4</sup>, 9, 35; 49, 36.  
 1226. Sit down, v.—tso<sup>4</sup>-hsiao<sup>0</sup>, 9, 36.  
 1227. Six, adj. n.—liu<sup>4</sup>, 4, 6.  
 1228. Size, n.—ta<sup>4</sup>-hsiao<sup>3</sup>, 84, 10.  
 1229. Sky, n.—t'ien<sup>1</sup>-k'ung<sup>1</sup>, 57, 3.  
 1230. Skylight, n.—t'ien<sup>1</sup>-ch'uang<sup>1</sup>, 83, 17.  
 1231. Slab, n.—pan<sup>3</sup>, 31, 55.  
 1232. Slate pencil, n.—abih<sup>2</sup>-pi<sup>3</sup>, 11, 22.  
 1233. Sleep, v.—shui<sup>4</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, 71, 28.  
 1234. Slow, adj.—man<sup>4</sup>, 22, 3.  
 1235. Slowly, adv.—man<sup>4</sup>-man<sup>1</sup>, 22, 4.  
 1236. Small, adj.—hsiao<sup>3</sup>, 6, 20.  
 1237. Smallpox, n.—t'ien<sup>1</sup>-hua<sup>1</sup>, 60, 36.  
 1238. Smell, v.—hsiu<sup>4</sup>, 137, 43.  
 1239. Smoke, n.—yen<sup>1</sup>, 68, 33; v.—ch'ou<sup>1</sup>, 68, 44; 135, 9.  
 1240. Snake, n.—shē<sup>2</sup>, 89, 25.  
 1241. Snow, n.—hsüeh<sup>3</sup>, 57, 9.  
 1242. Snuff, n.—pi<sup>2</sup>-yen<sup>1</sup>, 68, 35.  
 1243. So, conj.—so<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup> (yi<sup>3</sup>), 30, 30-31.  
 1244. Soap, n.—fei<sup>2</sup>-tsao<sup>1</sup>, 70, 3.  
 1245. Soar, v.—hsiang<sup>2</sup>, 90, 58.  
 1246. Social, adj.—shē<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>, 109, 11.  
 1247. Socialism, n.—shē<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, 110, 14, note.  
 1248. Socialist party, n.—shē<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>-tang<sup>3</sup>, 109, 11.  
 1249. Society, n.—shē<sup>4</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>, 109, 11; hsieh<sup>2</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>, 141, 1.  
 1250. Sock, n.—wa<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 45, 40.  
 1251. Soda water, n.—ch'i<sup>4</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, 37, 42-43.  
 1252. Soft, adj.—juan<sup>3</sup>, 75, 24.  
 1253. Soil, n.—ti<sup>4</sup>, 74, 1.  
 1254. Soldier, n.—ping<sup>1</sup>, 67, 15.  
 1255. Some, adj.—i<sup>4</sup>-hsieh<sup>1</sup> (sieh<sup>1</sup>), 6, 12; chi<sup>3</sup>, 6, 25; to<sup>1</sup>-shao<sup>3</sup>, 45, 57.  
 1256. Son, n.—érh<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 3, 12.  
 1257. Song, n.—ko<sup>1</sup>, 143, 29.  
 1258. Son-in-law, n.—nu<sup>3</sup>-hsü<sup>0</sup>, 111, 34.  
 1259. Soon, adv.—k'uai<sup>4</sup>, 22, 5.  
 1260. Sooner or later, adv.—tsao<sup>2</sup>-wan<sup>3</sup>, tsao<sup>2</sup>-wan<sup>3</sup>-hui<sup>4</sup>, 31, 44-46.  
 1261. Sound, n.—shēng<sup>1</sup>, 53, 10.  
 1262. Soup, n.—t'ang<sup>1</sup>, 36, 20.  
 1263. Sour, adj.—suan<sup>1</sup>, 95, 46.  
 1264. South, n. adj.—nan<sup>2</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>, 84, 4.  
 1265. South-east, n.—tung<sup>1</sup>-nan<sup>2</sup>, 84, 6.  
 1266. South-west, n.—hsü<sup>1</sup>-nan<sup>2</sup>, 84, 8.  
 1267. Soviet Russia, n.—su<sup>1</sup>-ngo<sup>2</sup> (o<sup>2</sup>), 120, 92.  
 1268. Speak, v.—shuo<sup>1</sup>, 12, 35; (by telephone) ta<sup>3</sup>, 61, 57.  
 1269. Speaker, n.—(of the parliament or assembly) i<sup>4</sup>-chang<sup>3</sup>, 123, 7.  
 1270. Spectacles, n.—yen<sup>3</sup>-ching<sup>4</sup>, 85, 22.  
 1271. Speech, n.—(language) hua<sup>4</sup>, 107, 72.  
 1272. Spend, v.—hua<sup>1</sup>; fei<sup>4</sup>, 141, 2.  
 1273. Spiritualism, n.—wei<sup>2</sup>-ling<sup>2</sup>-lun<sup>4</sup>, 100, 34.  
 1274. Sponge, n.—hai<sup>3</sup>-mien<sup>2</sup>, 70, 5.  
 1275. Spoon, n.—ch'ih<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 37, 39.  
 1276. Spring, n.—(season) ch'un<sup>1</sup>, 24, 8.  
 1277. Spring season, n.—ch'un<sup>1</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 8.  
 1278. Squeeze, v.—cha<sup>4</sup>, 95, 54.  
 1279. Stage, n.—(raised flooring of a theatre) hsi<sup>4</sup>-t'ai<sup>2</sup>; 78, 11; (platform) t'ai<sup>2</sup>, 78, 11.  
 1280. Staircase, n.—lou<sup>2</sup>-t'i<sup>1</sup>, 82, 6.

1281. Stamp, n.—(postage) yu<sup>2</sup>-p'iao<sup>4</sup>, 47, 5.  
 1282. Stand, v.—chan<sup>4</sup>, 32, 68.  
 1283. Star, n.—hsing<sup>1</sup>, 26, 3.  
 1284. Steal, v.—t'ou<sup>1</sup>, 136, 24.  
 1285. Steamer, n.—lun<sup>2</sup>-ch'uán<sup>2</sup>, 85, 26.  
 1286. Steel, n.—kang<sup>1</sup>, 136, 25.  
 1287. Stenographer, n.—su<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>1</sup>-yuan<sup>2</sup>, 126, 41.  
 1288. Stethoscope, n.—t'ing<sup>1</sup>-chén<sup>3</sup>-ch'i<sup>4</sup>, 50, 19-21.  
 1289. Still, adv.—(yet) hai<sup>2</sup>, 29, 2; érh<sup>2</sup>, 119, 65.  
 1290. Stone, n.—shih<sup>2</sup>, 11, 18; 75, 15.  
 1291. Stop, v.—chan<sup>4</sup>-chu<sup>0</sup>, 32, 68-69.  
 1292. Storey, n.—ts'eng<sup>2</sup>, 82, 1.  
 1293. Story, n.—(tale) ku<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>0</sup>, 80, 1.  
 1294. Stove, n.—lu<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 130, 17.  
 1295. Strange, adj.—ch'i<sup>2</sup>-kuai<sup>4</sup>, 75, 26; i<sup>4</sup>, 142, 17.  
 1296. Strength, n.—li<sup>4</sup>, 18, 2.  
 1297. Strike, v.—ch'iao<sup>1</sup>, 32, 67; ta<sup>3</sup>, 54, 19.  
 1298. Strong, adj.—ch'iang<sup>2</sup>-chuang<sup>1</sup>, 20, 24-25; ch'iang<sup>2</sup>, 111, 37.  
 1299. Student, n.—hsüeh<sup>2</sup>-shéng<sup>0</sup>, 11, 5.  
 1300. Study, n.—(a room to study in) shu<sup>1</sup>-fang<sup>2</sup>, 82, 15; v.—hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 11, 4; tu<sup>2</sup>, 12, 25.  
 1301. Stupid, adj.—ch'un<sup>3</sup>, 75, 20.  
 1302. Submit, v.—ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-ti<sup>4</sup>, 120, 77.  
 1303. Substantial, adj.—hou<sup>4</sup>, 118, 53.  
 1304. Subtract, v.—chien<sup>3</sup>, 4, 18.  
 1305. Succeed, v.—ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>, 76, 35; 132, 42.  
 1306. Success, n.—ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>, 76, 35.  
 1307. Successful, adj.—ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-kung<sup>1</sup>, 76, 35.  
 1308. Such, adj.—chē<sup>4</sup>-yang<sup>4</sup>, 6, 14.  
 1309. Such as—hsiang<sup>2</sup>, 61, 63.  
 1310. Suck, v.—ch'ou<sup>1</sup>, 135, 9.  
 1311. Suddenly, adv.—hu<sup>1</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, 30, 27.  
 1312. Suffer, v.—lao<sup>2</sup>, 41, 32; nao<sup>4</sup>, 61, 51.  
 1313. Suffering, n.—(pain) k'u<sup>3</sup>; t'ung<sup>4</sup>-k'u<sup>3</sup>, 118, 57.  
 1314. Sugar, n.—t'ang<sup>2</sup>, 36, 13.  
 1315. Sugar-cane, n.—kan<sup>1</sup>-chē<sup>0</sup>, 95, 44.  
 1316. Summer, n.—hsia<sup>4</sup>, 24, 9.  
 1317. Summer season, n.—hsia<sup>4</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 9.  
 1318. Summer vacation, n.—shu<sup>3</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup>, 107, 65.  
 1319. Sun, n.—jih<sup>4</sup>, 24, 16.  
 1320. Sunday, n.—li<sup>3</sup>-pai<sup>4</sup>-jih<sup>4</sup>; hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-jih<sup>4</sup>, 26, 6.  
 1321. Superintendent, n.—kuan<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>; chien<sup>1</sup>-tu<sup>1</sup>, 126, 47.  
 1322. Supper (dinner), n.—wan<sup>3</sup>-fan<sup>4</sup>, 84, 15.  
 1323. Supply, n. v.—kung<sup>1</sup>-chi<sup>0</sup>, 142, 18.  
 1324. Support, v.—(a resolution) fu<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, 124, 12.  
 1325. Suppress, v.—p'ing<sup>2</sup>-ting<sup>4</sup>; chén<sup>4</sup>-ya<sup>1</sup>, 111, 31.  
 1326. Supreme court, n.—ta<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>-yüan<sup>4</sup>, 125, 36.  
 1327. Surname, n.—hsing<sup>4</sup>, 40, 19.  
 1328. Swan, n.—t'ien<sup>1</sup>-ngo<sup>2</sup>, 89, 38.  
 1329. Sweat, n.—han<sup>4</sup>, 44, 31.  
 1330. Sweden, n.—juí<sup>4</sup>-tien<sup>3</sup>, 113, 64.  
 1331. Sweet, adj.—t'ien<sup>2</sup>, 95, 45.

1332. Swim, *v.*—yu<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>; fu<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup>, 90, 59.  
 1333. Swindler, *n.*—p'ien<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 143, 42.  
 1334. Switch, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>-mén<sup>2</sup>; k'ai<sup>1</sup>-kuan<sup>1</sup>, 82, 8.  
 1335. Swoop down, *v.*—tieh<sup>4</sup>, 91, 61.  
 1336. Sword, *n.*—chien<sup>4</sup>, 67, 20.  
 1337. Syrup, *n.*—hsing<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>2</sup>-lu<sup>4</sup>, 93, 10.

T

1338. Table, *n.*—cho<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 71, 24.  
 1339. Tailor, *n.*—ts'ai<sup>2</sup>-fēng<sup>0</sup>, 45, 42-43.  
 1340. Take, *v.*—na<sup>2</sup>, 8, 7; 72, 36; pa<sup>3</sup>, 12, 37; chiu<sup>4</sup>-pa<sup>3</sup>, 57, 18; (as medicine) fu<sup>2</sup>, 61, 58.  
 1341. Take hold of, *v.*—pa<sup>3</sup>, 12, 37.  
 1342. Take off, *v.*—t'uō<sup>1</sup>, 45, 47.  
 1343. Take up, *v.*—na<sup>2</sup>-ch'i<sup>0</sup>-lai<sup>0</sup>, 72, 37.  
 1344. Talk, *n.*—hua<sup>4</sup>, 107, 22.  
 1345. Tall, *adj.*—kao<sup>1</sup>, 20, 11.  
 1346. Tank (water), *n.*—shui<sup>3</sup>-ch'ih<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 94, 27.  
 1347. Taoism, *n.*—tao<sup>4</sup>-chiao<sup>4</sup>, 98, 8.  
 1348. Tax, *n.*—shui<sup>4</sup>, 124, 22.  
 1349. Tea, *n.*—ch'a<sup>2</sup>, 36, 12.  
 1350. Teach, *v.*—chiao<sup>1</sup>, 12, 24.  
 1351. Teacher, *n.*—hsien<sup>1</sup>-shêng<sup>0</sup>, 11, 3; chiao<sup>4</sup>-yuan<sup>2</sup>, 102, 11.  
 1352. Tear, *v.*—ssü<sup>1</sup>, 45, 50.  
 1353. Telegram, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>-pao<sup>4</sup>, 47, 13.  
 1354. Telegraph office, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>-pao<sup>4</sup>-chü<sup>2</sup>, 47, 14.  
 1355. Telephone, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>-hua<sup>4</sup>, 47, 15.  
 1356. Tell, *v.*—kao<sup>4</sup>-su<sup>0</sup>, 8, 23.  
 1357. Temperature, *n.*—wēn<sup>1</sup>-tu<sup>4</sup>, 59, 15-16; (of body) t'i<sup>3</sup>-wēn<sup>1</sup>, 59, 17-18.  
 1358. Temple, *n.*—(building for worship) miao<sup>4</sup>, 98, 12.  
 1359. Ten, *n. adj.*—shih<sup>2</sup>, 4, 10.  
 1360. Tender, *adj.*—juan<sup>3</sup>, 75, 24.  
 1361. Tennis, *n.*—wang<sup>3</sup>-ch'iu<sup>2</sup>, 68, 39.  
 1362. Thank, *v.*—hsieh<sup>4</sup>, 41, 24.  
 1363. That, *adj.*—na<sup>4</sup>, 6, 5.  
 1364. Theatre, *n.*—(place where plays are staged) hsi<sup>4</sup>-yüan<sup>2</sup>, 78, 6.  
 1365. Theme, *n.*—(topic) t'i<sup>2</sup>-mu<sup>0</sup>, 63, 4.  
 1366. Then, *adv.*—yü<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 31, 49-50; 72, 43; jan<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>4</sup>, 72, 44.  
 1367. There, *adv.*—na<sup>4</sup>-li<sup>0</sup>, 6, 8.  
 1368. Therefore, *adv.*—so<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>3</sup> (yi<sup>3</sup>), 30, 30-31.  
 1369. Thermometer, *n.*—t'i<sup>3</sup>-wēn<sup>1</sup>-piao<sup>3</sup>, 59, 17-18.  
 1370. These, *pron. adj.*—chē<sup>4</sup>-sieh<sup>0</sup> (hsieh<sup>0</sup>), 6, 10.  
 1371. Thick, *adj.*—hou<sup>4</sup>, 118, 53; 138, 47.  
 1372. Thief, *n.*—tsei<sup>2</sup>, 136, 21.  
 1373. Thing, *n.*—tung<sup>1</sup>-hsí<sup>0</sup>, 84, 9.  
 1374. Think, *v.*—hsiang<sup>3</sup>, 8, 14.  
 1375. Third class, *n.*—san<sup>1</sup>-tēng<sup>3</sup>, 78, 15.  
 1376. Third floor, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-san<sup>1</sup>-ts'ēng<sup>2</sup>-lou<sup>2</sup>, 82, 3.  
 1377. Third tone, *n.*—shang<sup>4</sup>-shêng<sup>1</sup>, 53, 13.  
 1378. Thirst, *n.*—k'o<sup>3</sup>, 38, 57.  
 1379. Thirsty, *adj.*—k'o<sup>3</sup>, 38, 57.  
 1380. This, *adj.*—chē<sup>4</sup>, 6, 4; tz'u<sup>2</sup>, 142, 16.

1381. This year—chin<sup>1</sup>-nien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 2.  
 1382. Thoroughly, *adv.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-tao<sup>4</sup>, 54, 28.  
 1383. Those, *pron. adj.*—na<sup>4</sup>-sieh<sup>0</sup> (hsieh<sup>0</sup>), 6, 11.  
 1384. Though, *conj.*—sui<sup>1</sup>-jan<sup>2</sup>, 30, 25.  
 1385. Thousand, *n. adj.*—ch'ien<sup>1</sup>, 4, 13.  
 1386. Thread, *n.*—hsien<sup>4</sup>, 45, 49.  
 1387. Three, *n. adj.*—san<sup>1</sup>, 4, 3.  
 1388. Throat, *n.*—hou<sup>2</sup>, 34, 16.  
 1389. Thunder, *n.*—lei<sup>2</sup>, 57, 6.  
 1390. Thursday, *n.*—li<sup>3</sup>-pa<sup>4</sup>-ssü<sup>4</sup>; hsing<sup>1</sup>-ch'i<sup>2</sup>-ssü<sup>4</sup>, 26, 10.  
 1391. Tibet, *n.*—hsil-tsang<sup>4</sup>, 120, 91.  
 1392. Ticket, *n.*—p'iao<sup>4</sup>, 78, 12.  
 1393. Tiger, *n.*—lao<sup>2</sup>-hu<sup>3</sup>, 88, 5.  
 1394. Tight, *adj.*—chin<sup>3</sup>, 41, 30; 45, 54.  
 1395. Till, *conj.*—tao<sup>4</sup>, 31, 48.  
 1396. Time, *n.*—(measurable duration) shih<sup>2</sup>-hou<sup>0</sup>, 27, 32-33; shih<sup>2</sup>-chiep<sup>1</sup>, 61, 46; (recurring occasion) pien<sup>4</sup>, 53, 4; 107, 67; tz'u<sup>4</sup>, 53, 5.  
 1397. Tin, *n.*—(metal) hsi<sup>2</sup>, 43, 6.  
 1398. To, *prep.*—ho<sup>2</sup>, 29, 4; tui<sup>4</sup>, 29, 5; (toward) hsiang<sup>4</sup>, 113, 59.  
 1399. Tobacco, *n.*—yen<sup>1</sup>, 68, 33.  
 1400. Today, *n. adv.*—chin<sup>1</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 3.  
 1401. Together, *adv.*—t'ung<sup>2</sup>, 107, 75; i<sup>1</sup>-t'ung<sup>2</sup>, 76, 46; 143, 33.  
 1402. Toil, *n. v.*—lao<sup>2</sup>, 41, 32.  
 1403. Tomorrow, *n. adv.*—ming<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 4.  
 1404. Tone, *n.*—(sound) shêng<sup>1</sup>, 53, 10.  
 1405. Tongue, *n.*—shé<sup>2</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 34, 15.  
 1406. Too, *adv.*—yeh<sup>3</sup>, 25, 23; érh<sup>2</sup>-ch'ieh<sup>3</sup>, 137, 46.  
 1407. Tooth, *n.*—ya<sup>2</sup>, 34, 13.  
 1408. Tooth paste, *n.*—ya<sup>2</sup>-kao<sup>1</sup>, 70, 12.  
 1409. Tooth powder, *n.*—ya<sup>2</sup>-fén<sup>3</sup>, 70, 11.  
 1410. Torch, *n.*—huo<sup>3</sup>-pa<sup>0</sup>, 130, 16.  
 1411. Tortoise, *n.*—kuei<sup>1</sup>, 89, 33.  
 1412. Towel, *n.*—shou<sup>3</sup>-chin<sup>0</sup>, 70, 14.  
 1413. Town, *n.*—ch'eng<sup>2</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 51, 19.  
 1414. Trade, *n.*—mao<sup>4</sup>-i<sup>4</sup>, 120, 78.  
 1415. Train, *n.*—(railroad cars) huo<sup>3</sup>-ch'i<sup>1</sup>, 48, 17.  
 1416. Tram, *n.*—tien<sup>4</sup>-ch'i<sup>1</sup>, 48, 16.  
 1417. Transform, *v.*—pien<sup>4</sup>, 18, 18.  
 1418. Transgress, *v.*—fan<sup>4</sup>, 112, 49.  
 1419. Translate, *v.*—fan<sup>1</sup>-i<sup>0</sup>, 64, 25.  
 1420. Translation, *n.*—fan<sup>1</sup>-i<sup>0</sup>, 64, 25.  
 1421. Transparent, *adj.*—liang<sup>4</sup>, 83, 18.  
 1422. Travel, *n. v.*—yu<sup>2</sup>, 72, 35; 10<sup>2</sup>-hsing<sup>2</sup>, 74, 8; yu<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>0</sup>, 90, 50.  
 1423. Travel by—tso<sup>4</sup>, 49, 36.  
 1424. Tray, *n.*—t'o<sup>1</sup>-p'an<sup>2</sup>, 37, 40.  
 1425. Treacherous, *adj.*—kuei<sup>3</sup>-cha<sup>4</sup> (ti<sup>0</sup>), 110, 24.  
 1426. Treat, *v.*—(to act toward) tai<sup>4</sup>, 86, 37; 118, 48.  
 1427. Treatment, *n.*—(cure) i<sup>1</sup>-ping<sup>4</sup>, 120, 87.  
 1428. Treaty of friendship, *n.*—yu<sup>2</sup>-hao<sup>3</sup>-t'iao<sup>2</sup>-yieh<sup>1</sup>, 112, 52.  
 1429. Treaty of peace, *n.*—ho<sup>2</sup>-yüeh<sup>1</sup>, 112, 51.  
 1430. Tree, *n.*—shu<sup>4</sup>, 94, 29.  
 1431. Trousers, *n.*—k'u<sup>4</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 44, 30.  
 1432. True, *adj.*—chêng<sup>4</sup>, 125, 27.  
 1433. Trunk (of a tree), *n.*—kan<sup>4</sup>, 94, 30.

1434. Truth, *n.*—(principle) *tao*<sup>4</sup>, 63, 12; (honest words) *shih*<sup>2</sup>-*hua*<sup>4</sup>, 137, 36.  
 1435. Try, *v.*—*shih*<sup>4</sup>-*shih*<sup>9</sup>, 8, 15.  
 1436. Tuberculosis, *n.*—*fei*<sup>4</sup>-*ping*<sup>1</sup>, 60, 43.  
 1437. Tuesday, *n.*—*li*<sup>3</sup>-*pai*<sup>4</sup>-*érh*<sup>4</sup>; *hsing*<sup>1</sup>-*ch*'<sup>2</sup>-*érh*<sup>4</sup>, 26, 8.  
 1438. Turban, *n.*—*t'ou*<sup>2</sup>-*chin*<sup>0</sup>, 70, 15.  
 1439. Turn, *v.*—*chuan*<sup>4</sup>, 75, 19.  
 1440. Turn around, *v.*—*lun*<sup>2</sup>-*chuan*<sup>4</sup>, 75, 19.  
 1441. Tusk (of an elephant), *n.*—*hsiang*<sup>4</sup>-*ya*<sup>2</sup>, 90, 44.  
 1442. Twist, *v.*—*nien*<sup>3</sup>, 83, 22.  
 1443. Two, *adj.*—*érh*<sup>4</sup>, 4, 2; *liang*<sup>3</sup>, 4, 14; *n.*—*érh*<sup>4</sup>, 4, 2.  
 1444. Typewriter, *n.*—*ta*<sup>3</sup>-*tzü*<sup>4</sup>-*chi*<sup>1</sup>, 126, 43.  
 1445. Typist, *n.*—*ta*<sup>3</sup>-*tzü*<sup>4</sup>-*yüan*<sup>2</sup>, 126, 42.  
 1446. Tyre (tire), *n.*—*ch*'<sup>6</sup>-*t'ai*<sup>1</sup>, 85, 24.

### U

1447. Ultimately, *adv.*—*tsui*<sup>4</sup>-*hou*<sup>4</sup>; *tao*<sup>4</sup>-*ti*<sup>2</sup>, 111, 29.  
 1448. Ultimatum, *n.*—*tsui*<sup>4</sup>-*hou*<sup>4</sup>-*t'ung*<sup>1</sup>-*tieh*<sup>2</sup>, 113, 62.  
 1449. Ultramodern, *adj.*—*kuo*<sup>4</sup>-*yü*<sup>2</sup>-*shih*<sup>2</sup>-*mao*<sup>2</sup>, 131, 34.  
 1450. Umbrella, *n.*—*san*<sup>3</sup>, 45, 41.  
 1451. Umpire, *n.*—*p'ing*<sup>2</sup>-*p'an*<sup>4</sup>-*yüan*<sup>2</sup>, 126, 49.  
 1452. Uncle, *n.*—*shu*<sup>2</sup>-*shu*<sup>0</sup>; *shu*<sup>2</sup>-*fu*<sup>0</sup>, 3, 23.  
 1453. Unclean, *adj.*—*tsang*<sup>1</sup>, 135, 5.  
 1454. Understand, *v.*—*hsiao*<sup>3</sup>-*té*<sup>0</sup>, 51, 21; *ming*<sup>2</sup>-*pai*<sup>0</sup>, 126, 45; *tung*<sup>3</sup>, 126, 46.  
 1455. Universal, *adj.*—(general) *p'u*<sup>3</sup>-*t'ung*<sup>1</sup>, 99, 30.  
 1456. Universal love, *n.*—*chien*<sup>1</sup>-*ai*<sup>4</sup>, 99, 29.  
 1457. Universe, *n.*—*yü*<sup>3</sup>-*chou*<sup>4</sup>, 99, 18.  
 1458. University, *n.*—*ta*<sup>4</sup>-*hsüeh*<sup>2</sup>-*t'ang*<sup>0</sup>, 11, 13; *ta*<sup>4</sup>-*hsüeh*<sup>2</sup>, 102, 6.  
 1459. University student, *n.*—*ta*<sup>4</sup>-*hsüeh*<sup>2</sup>-*shéng*<sup>0</sup>, 103, 13.  
 1460. Unless, *conj.*—*ch'u*<sup>2</sup>-*fei*<sup>1</sup>, 29, 20.  
 1461. Unreal, *adj.*—*hsü*<sup>1</sup>, 143, 38.  
 1462. Until, *conj.*—*tao*<sup>4</sup>, 31, 48.  
 1463. Upon, *prep.*—*shang*<sup>4</sup>, 9, 33.  
 1464. Upright, *adj.*—*chéng*<sup>4</sup>, 125, 27.  
 1465. Urgent, *adj.*—*chi*<sup>2</sup>, 75, 31; *chin*<sup>3</sup>-*yao*<sup>4</sup> (*yao*<sup>4</sup>-*chin*<sup>3</sup>), 75, 32.  
 1466. Use, *n. v.*—*yung*<sup>4</sup>, 48, 33; 61, 56.  
 1467. Useful, *adj.*—*yu*<sup>3</sup>-*yung*<sup>4</sup>, 75, 25.  
 1468. Usurp, *v.*—*ch*'<sup>im</sup><sup>1</sup>, 112, 48.

### V

1469. Vacation, *n.*—*chia*<sup>4</sup>-*ch*'<sup>2</sup>, 107, 64.  
 1470. Vast, *adj.*—*kuang*<sup>3</sup>-*ta*<sup>4</sup>, 118, 45.  
 1471. Veda, *n.*—*wei*<sup>2</sup>-*t'ou*<sup>2</sup>, 98, 9.  
 1472. Vegetable, *n.*—*ts'ai*<sup>4</sup>, 36, 17.  
 1473. Venture, *v.*—*kan*<sup>3</sup>, 138, 50.  
 1474. Verdict, *n.*—*p'an*<sup>4</sup>-*chüeh*<sup>2</sup>, 125, 32.  
 1475. Very, *adv.*—*hén*<sup>3</sup>, 22, 1.  
 1476. Vest, *n.*—*han*<sup>4</sup>-*shan*<sup>1</sup>, 44, 31.

1477. Vice-Chancellor, *n.*—*fu*<sup>4</sup>-*hsiao*<sup>4</sup>-*chang*<sup>3</sup>, 102, 3.  
 1478. Vice-Consul, *n.*—*fu*<sup>4</sup>-*ling*<sup>3</sup>-*shih*<sup>4</sup>, 117, 29.  
 1479. Vice-President, *n.*—(of a country or a republic) *fu*<sup>4</sup>-*tsung*<sup>2</sup>-*t'ung*<sup>3</sup>, 115, 8; (of a college or university) *ta*<sup>4</sup>-*hsüeh*<sup>2</sup>-*fu*<sup>4</sup>-*hsiao*<sup>4</sup>-*chang*<sup>3</sup>, 115, 11; (of an association) *fu*<sup>4</sup>-*hui*<sup>4</sup>-*chang*<sup>3</sup>, 115, 12.  
 1480. Viceroy, *n.*—*tsung*<sup>3</sup>-*tu*<sup>1</sup>, 117, 37.  
 1481. Viewpoint, *n.*—*k'an*<sup>4</sup>-*lai*<sup>0</sup>, 119, 70.  
 1482. Village, *n.*—*hsiang*<sup>1</sup>-*hsia*<sup>0</sup>, 51, 20.  
 1483. Vinegar, *n.*—*ts'u*<sup>4</sup>, 94, 18.  
 1484. Violate, *v.*—*fan*<sup>4</sup>, 112, 49.  
 1485. Violence, *n.*—*pao*<sup>4</sup>-*tung*<sup>1</sup>; *pao*<sup>4</sup>-*luan*<sup>4</sup>, 110, 27.  
 1486. Violet, *n. adj.*—*kan*<sup>4</sup>, 31, 65.  
 1487. Virtue, *n.*—*té*<sup>2</sup>; *tao*<sup>4</sup>-*té*<sup>2</sup>, 100, 36.  
 1488. Virtuous, *adj.*—*yu*<sup>3</sup>-*tao*<sup>4</sup>-*té*<sup>2</sup>, 100, 36.  
 1489. Voice, *n.*—(sound) *shéng*<sup>1</sup>-*yin*<sup>0</sup>, 135, 1.  
 1490. Volleyball, *n.*—*p'ai*<sup>2</sup>-*ch'iu*<sup>2</sup>, 68, 41.  
 1491. Vote, *v.*—*t'ou*<sup>2</sup>-*p'iao*<sup>4</sup>, 110, 22; (for a person) *hsüan*<sup>3</sup>, 110, 19.  
 1492. Voter, *n.*—*hsüan*<sup>2</sup>-*chü*<sup>3</sup>-*jén*<sup>2</sup>, 110, 21; *t'ou*<sup>2</sup>-*p'iao*<sup>4</sup>-*jén*<sup>2</sup>, 110, 22.  
 1493. Voting paper, *n.*—*hsüan*<sup>2</sup>-*chü*<sup>3</sup>-*p'iao*<sup>4</sup>, 110, 20.  
 1494. Voyage, *n.*—*hang*<sup>2</sup>-*hai*<sup>3</sup>, 74, 9.  
 1495. Vulture, *n.*—*chih*<sup>4</sup>-*niao*<sup>3</sup>, 90, 42.

### W

1496. Waistcoat, *n.*—*k'an*<sup>3</sup>-*chien*<sup>1</sup>, 44, 33-34.  
 1497. Wait, *v.*—*téng*<sup>3</sup>, 8, 12; 31, 47; *tai*<sup>4</sup>, 86, 37; 118, 48.  
 1498. Wake, *v.*—*hsing*<sup>3</sup>, 71, 32.  
 1499. Walk, *v.*—*tsou*<sup>3</sup>, 8, 11.  
 1500. Want, *n.*—(poverty) *ch'iung*<sup>2</sup>-*fa*<sup>2</sup>, 111, 41; *v.*—(to wish) *yao*<sup>4</sup>, 9, 40.  
 1501. War, *n.*—*chan*<sup>4</sup>-*chéng*<sup>1</sup>, 74, 12; *chan*<sup>4</sup>, 111, 30.  
 1502. Wash, *v.*—*hsí*<sup>3</sup> (*si*<sup>3</sup>), 12, 27.  
 1503. Watch, *n.*—(small timepiece) *piao*<sup>3</sup>, 27, 26.  
 1504. Water, *n.*—*shui*<sup>3</sup>, 37, 43.  
 1505. Water-tap, *n.*—*shui*<sup>3</sup>-*kuan*<sup>1</sup>-*tzü*<sup>0</sup>, 70, 6.  
 1506. Way, *n.*—(path) *lu*<sup>4</sup>, 74, 7; (manner) *yang*<sup>4</sup>, 125, 34.  
 1507. We, *pron.*—*wo*<sup>3</sup>-*mén*<sup>0</sup>, 1, 7.  
 1508. Weak, *adj.*—*jo*<sup>4</sup>, 20, 26.  
 1509. Wealth, *n.*—*ts'ai*<sup>2</sup>, 110, 25.  
 1510. Wealthy, *adj.*—*fu*<sup>4</sup>, 20, 15.  
 1511. Wear, *v.*—(to put on) *ch'uan*<sup>1</sup>, 45, 46.  
 1512. Weary, *adj.*—(tired) *lao*<sup>2</sup>, 41, 32.  
 1513. Weather, *n.*—*ch'i*<sup>4</sup>-*hou*<sup>4</sup>, 24, 14-15.  
 1514. Wednesday, *n.*—*li*<sup>3</sup>-*pai*<sup>4</sup>-*san*<sup>1</sup>; *hsing*<sup>1</sup>-*ch'i*<sup>2</sup>-*san*<sup>1</sup>, 26, 9.  
 1515. Week, *n.*—*li*<sup>3</sup>-*pai*<sup>4</sup>; *hsing*<sup>1</sup>-*ch'i*<sup>2</sup>, 26, 5.  
 1516. Weep, *v.*—*k'u*<sup>1</sup>; *k'u*<sup>1</sup>-*ch'i*<sup>4</sup>, 90, 56.  
 1517. Weighty, *adj.*—*chung*<sup>4</sup>, 124, 21.  
 1518. Welcome, *n. v.*—*huan*<sup>1</sup>-*ying*<sup>2</sup>, 74, 10.

•1519. Well, *adj.*—hao<sup>3</sup>, 20, 1; *n.*—(hole dug in ground to get water) ching<sup>3</sup>, 90, 45.

1520. West, *n.* *adj.*—hsil<sup>1</sup>; hsi<sup>1</sup>-fang<sup>1</sup>, 84, 2.

1521. What, *adj.*—shēn<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>, 6, 3; *pron.*—(that which) so<sup>3</sup> (suo<sup>3</sup>), 137, 35.

1522. Wheel, *n.*—lun<sup>2</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 75, 18.

1523. When, *adv.*—chi<sup>3</sup>-shih<sup>2</sup>, 6, 27; chih<sup>4</sup>, 27, 45; chih<sup>4</sup>-shih<sup>4</sup>, 27, 45-46; i<sup>3</sup>, 61, 61; tang<sup>1</sup>, 131, 26.

1524. Where, *adv.*—na<sup>3</sup>-li<sup>0</sup> (or na<sup>2</sup>-li<sup>3</sup>), 6, 8.

1525. Whereabouts, *n.*—hsia<sup>4</sup>-lo<sup>4</sup>, 130, 18.

1526. Whereas, *adv.* *conj.*—hsiang<sup>1</sup>-fan<sup>3</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>, 100, 46.

1527. Which, *pron.* *adj.*—na<sup>3</sup>, 6, 5; (what one) na<sup>3</sup>-i<sup>1</sup>.

1528. White, *adj.*—pai<sup>2</sup>, 31, 61; 131, 38.

1529. White-ant, *n.*—pai<sup>2</sup>-i<sup>0</sup>, 89, 27.

1530. Who, *pron.*—shui<sup>2</sup>, 6, 1.

1531. Whole, *adj.*—man<sup>3</sup>, 57, 15; ch'an<sup>2</sup>, 91, 30.

1532. Whose, *pron.*—shui<sup>2</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>, 6, 2.

1533. Why, *adv.*—wéi<sup>4</sup>-shēn<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>, 6, 24; 29, 23.

1534. Widow, *n.*—kua<sup>3</sup>-fu<sup>0</sup>, 95, 37.

1535. Widower, *n.*—kuan<sup>1</sup>-fu<sup>1</sup>, 95, 38; kuan<sup>1</sup>-kun<sup>4</sup>, 95, 39.

1536. Wife, *n.*—lao<sup>3</sup>-p'o<sup>2</sup>, 40, 3-4; ch'i<sup>1</sup>-tzü<sup>0</sup>, 40, 5.

1537. Will, *n.*—(mental decision) chih<sup>4</sup>, 151, 7.

1538. Win, *v.*—ying<sup>2</sup>, 75, 34.

1539. Wind, *n.*—fēng<sup>1</sup> (fung<sup>1</sup>), 57, 1.

1540. Window, *n.*—ch'uang<sup>1</sup>-hu<sup>0</sup>, 83, 16; 136, 20.

1541. Wine, *n.*—chiu<sup>3</sup>, 68, 37.

1542. Winter, *n.*—tung<sup>1</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 11.

1543. Wipe, *v.*—ts'a<sup>1</sup>, 54, 22.

1544. Wipe out, *v.*—ts'a<sup>1</sup> ch'u<sup>0</sup>, 54, 23.

1545. Wise, *adj.*—ts'ung<sup>1</sup>-ming<sup>2</sup>, 75, 21.

1546. Wish, *v.*—yao<sup>4</sup>, 9, 40; (a good luck) chu<sup>4</sup>, 132, 41.

1547. With, *prep.*—kēn<sup>1</sup>, 18, 25; t'ung<sup>2</sup>, 29, 3; ho<sup>2</sup>, 29, 4.

1548. Withdraw, *v.*—(a motion) shou<sup>1</sup>-hui<sup>2</sup>, 124, 13.

1549. Within, *prep.*—(inside) li<sup>3</sup>-t'ou<sup>0</sup>, 29, 16; li<sup>3</sup>, 107, 66.

1550. Without, *prep.*—(not having) mei<sup>2</sup>-yu<sup>3</sup>, 106, 59.

1551. Woman, *n.*—nū<sup>3</sup>-jēn<sup>0</sup>, 3, 9; fu<sup>4</sup>-jēn<sup>0</sup>, 100, 33.

1552. Wool, *n.*—jung<sup>2</sup>, 90, 47.

1553. Word, *n.*—(written) tzü<sup>4</sup>, 54, 17.

1554. Work, *n.*—kung<sup>1</sup>-tso<sup>4</sup>, 74, 5.

1555. World, *n.*—shih<sup>4</sup>-chih<sup>0</sup>, 74, 3; 99, 17.

1556. Worship, *v.*—pai<sup>4</sup>, 26, 2.

1557. Worth, *n.* *adj.*—chih<sup>2</sup>-tō<sup>0</sup>, 136, 29.

1558. Worthless, *adj.*—(useless) pu<sup>4</sup>-chung<sup>1</sup>-yung<sup>4</sup>, 136, 27.

1559. Wrist watch, *n.*—shou<sup>2</sup>-piao<sup>3</sup>, 45, 38.

1560. Write, *v.*—hsieh<sup>3</sup>, 12, 26; (prescription) k'ai<sup>1</sup>, 61, 52; (to compose) tso<sup>4</sup>, 64, 16.

1561. Wrong, *adj.*—fei<sup>1</sup>, 21, 36; ts'o<sup>4</sup>, 119, 75.

## Y

1562. Year, *n.*—nien<sup>2</sup>, 24, 2; (age) sui<sup>4</sup>, 40, 13.

1563. Yellow, *adj.*—huang<sup>2</sup>, 31, 63.

1564. Yes, *adv.*—shih<sup>4</sup>, 21, 35.

1565. Yesterday, *n.*—tso<sup>2</sup>-t'ien<sup>0</sup>, 24, 6.

1566. Yet, *adv.*—hai<sup>2</sup>, 29, 2.

1567. You, *pron.*—(singular) ni<sup>3</sup>, 1, 2; (plural) ni<sup>3</sup>-mēn<sup>0</sup>; (polite, singular and plural) nin<sup>2</sup>, 1, 3.

1568. Young, *adj.*—nien<sup>2</sup>-ch'ing<sup>1</sup>, 20, 6-7.

1569. Younger brother, *n.*—ti<sup>4</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>, 3, 21.

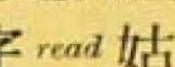
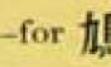
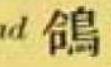
1570. Younger sister, *n.*—mo<sup>4</sup> (mei<sup>4</sup>)-mo<sup>0</sup> (mei<sup>0</sup>), 3, 22.

## Z

1571. Zero, *n.*—ling<sup>2</sup>, 4, 11.

1572. Zoology, *n.*—tung<sup>4</sup>-wu<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, 105, 45.

## ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS

p. 2. 1, 3, 8—for yü<sup>3</sup> *read* yu<sup>3</sup>.  
 .. 3. 18—for hsiung<sup>1</sup> -ti<sup>4</sup> *read* ti<sup>4</sup> -hsiung<sup>1</sup>.  
 .. 3. 19—for chie<sup>3</sup> -mo<sup>4</sup> *read* chieh<sup>3</sup> -mei<sup>4</sup>.  
 .. 3. 22—for mo<sup>4</sup>-mo<sup>4</sup> *read* mei<sup>4</sup> -mei<sup>0</sup>.  
 .. 3. 24—for 字 *read* .  
 .. 3. 25 and 26—for chiu<sup>3</sup> *read* chiu<sup>4</sup>.  
 .. 3. Ex. 8—for 'he' *read* 'she'.  
 .. 6. 3, 18, 24—for mo<sup>3</sup> *read* ma<sup>0</sup>.  
 .. 6. 28—for chi<sup>1</sup> *read* chi<sup>3</sup>.  
 .. 6. 29—for 'on' *read* 'in'.  
 .. 11. 8—for jén<sup>2</sup>-chia<sup>1</sup> *read* chia<sup>1</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup>.  
 .. 12. 27—for 'to battle' *read* 'to bathe'.  
 .. 20. 7—for ching<sup>1</sup> *read* ch'ing<sup>1</sup>.  
 .. 21. 39—for ko *read* ko<sup>4</sup>.  
 .. 22. 12—for jén *read* jén<sup>2</sup>.  
 .. 22. 13—for tzu<sup>4</sup> *read* tzü<sup>4</sup>.  
 .. 25. 23—for yēh<sup>3</sup> *read* yeh<sup>3</sup>.  
 .. 27. 37—for ch'ü *read* ch'ü<sup>4</sup>.  
 .. 31. 53—for ch'ü<sup>1</sup> *read* ch'u<sup>1</sup>.  
 .. 34. 18—for shou<sup>2</sup> *read* shou<sup>3</sup>.  
 .. 37. 34—for  chiu<sup>1</sup> *read*  ko<sup>1</sup>-(tzü<sup>0</sup>), a pigeon.  
 .. 41. Ex. 9. What is your name?—kuei<sup>4</sup> hsing<sup>4</sup>.  
 .. 44. 16—for ku'ai<sup>4</sup> ch'ien<sup>2</sup> *read* yang<sup>2</sup> (洋) ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, dollar; i<sup>2</sup> k'uai<sup>4</sup> ch'ien<sup>2</sup>, one dollar.  
 .. 49. 16—for 'number (shu<sup>4</sup>) many (to<sup>1</sup>)' *read* 'a group of number (hsü<sup>3</sup> to<sup>1</sup>)'.  
 .. 54. 19—for 'to bit' *read* 'to beat'.  
 .. 54. 23—for 'to rub out', 'to wipe out' *read* 'to rub off', 'to wipe off'.  
 .. 57. 5—for yü<sup>2</sup> *read* yü<sup>3</sup>.  
 .. 59. 6—for 太 t'ai<sup>4</sup>, very, much *read* 大 tai<sup>4</sup>, a physician.  
 .. 60. 29—for k'ê<sup>2</sup> *read* k'o<sup>2</sup>.  
 .. 60. 42—for yén<sup>2</sup> *read* yen<sup>2</sup>.  
 .. 64. 16—add also tso<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup> and chu<sup>4</sup>-shu<sup>1</sup>-ti<sup>0</sup>-jén<sup>2</sup>, an author.

p. 64, 25—for 繙 *read* 翻

.. 67, 14—for 監 chien<sup>1</sup> *read* 檢 chien<sup>2</sup>.

.. 72, 38—for 搓 ts'o<sup>1</sup> *read* 擦 ts'a<sup>1</sup>.

.. 72, 39—for 嘰 *read* 漑.

.. 74, 6—for ho<sup>2</sup>-ping<sup>2</sup> *read* ho<sup>2</sup>-p'ing<sup>2</sup>.

.. 78, 6—for 園 yüan<sup>2</sup> *read* 院 yüan<sup>4</sup>, a hall.

.. 82, 1—add also i<sup>1</sup>-lou<sup>2</sup>, first floor.

.. 82, 4—add also lou<sup>2</sup>-hsia<sup>4</sup>, ground floor.

.. 84, 16 and 17—for 相 *read* 像 hsiang<sup>4</sup>, appearance, an image.

.. 89, 24—for 蝦 ha<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>2</sup> *read* 蛤蟆 ha<sup>2</sup>-ma<sup>0</sup>, a frog.

.. 90, 59—for ' or yu<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>2</sup> ' *read* ' yu<sup>2</sup>-shui<sup>3</sup> or '.

.. 106, 53—for che<sup>4</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup> *read* ché<sup>2</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>.

.. 106, 55—for t'ien<sup>1</sup>-wén<sup>2</sup> *read* t'ien<sup>1</sup>-wén<sup>2</sup>-hsüeh<sup>2</sup>, astronomy.

.. 112, 51—for 和 .. *read* 和 約

.. 124, 15—for tein<sup>3</sup> *read* tien<sup>3</sup>.

.. 126, 49—add also 公證人 kung<sup>1</sup>-chêng<sup>4</sup>-jên<sup>2</sup>, an umpire.

24-11-58